THE SILLY ALCHEMIST

BOOK 01

Blue-collar Xiao Xiao Sheng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Silly Alchemist

(炼金狂潮)

by

Blue-Collar Xiao Xiao Sheng

(蓝领笑笑生)

Synopsis

In my previous life, I had been ordinary all my life. When I reincarnate, this time, I want to find a family which has authority, power and money!

I want to become a prodigal son! A prodigal who has authority, power and money! Yep, it would be great if there were some lackeys who followed behind me too.

I want to squander money, I want to be a prodigal son!

[I want to let the world confront a surging tide – an Alchemist Surging Tide!]

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by magpie, H0RR1BL3CPU, Axuline, Castigliano, imakeussmile @ lesyt.xyz

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1 – 'Will'

My name is Ye Lang, a very ordinary member of society, who also has a very ordinary family and has lived a very ordinary life. If no accident had happened, I would have probably been able to marry a very ordinary woman, who it would have been very easy to provide for. In fact, there is also a very important point, which is that my woman must be easy to satisfy and does not demand many luxuries. Of course, sometimes I would still provide a bit of luxury, to give her a little surprise.

Following that, I would have continued to live my life as an ordinary person, my wife would have given birth to a child, and then I would start to groom my child into someone who would make something great out of himself. While I, like every other ordinary parent would have hoped their child would succeed in life.

In such a life, maybe there would be one or two extraordinary events, but to sum it all up, I would have precisely have been an ordinary person, who would have lived a very ordinary life.

However, I myself feel that this type of life isn't that bad and maybe, it could be because I am just an ordinary person. Nonetheless, an unexpected accident had descended upon an ordinary person like myself, and my heart which was originally ordinary, was not able to withstand it at all.

On that day, I was suddenly prompted by a sudden impulse to go and donate blood. Of which the end result was that someone found that there was a problem with my blood, so I went to the hospital

to get a detailed check-up. At that time when I was looking at the laboratory test results, I was not sure how to describe my feelings, perhaps it was because my brain was simply drawing a blank.

What was the disease called? I can't remember. All I knew was that the name of the disease was very long and it was a very rarely seen disease, that resided in the blood of only around one thousand people in the world. This type of disease should have absolutely not been something that an ordinary person like me should have gotten. An ordinary person like me should instead have caught some ordinary small diseases like a cold or a fever.

God, you have truly thought too highly of me.

Catching this kind of disease did not mean that one would immediately die. When the disease does not get triggered, one would simply be the same as an ordinary person. It's just that, once the disease is triggered, one's life would be in immediate danger and due to the fact that this disease is very rare, there was very little in the way of treating it, furthermore, the medical fees alone were not something an ordinary person, like me, would ever be able to bear.

Leaving all that aside, would my parents be able to bear this kind of news?

Thus, I made a decision to change myself and let others feel that I had a mind that wanted to roam around the world.

At that time, I started thinking, if I am able to travel all around

the world during the few years I have left to live, it might actually be a wonderful thing.

...

Three years later, I think? It should be three years I presume, even I don't know exactly how many years had passed between finding out and now. During this time, I was prompted by a sudden impulse again and this time I bought tools that were needed to survive in the wild alone. I traveled deep into a nearby mountain region, which had no sign of human habitation at all.

Though, both unfortunate and fortunate, I slipped and fell from a cliff.

It was naturally unfortunate that I slipped and fell down the cliff, what was fortunate was that there was a deep pond below the cliff from which I fell. But what was still unfortunate was that, below this cliff there was also a valley and it was a valley with no exit at all.

Luckily, there was still a fortunate event that followed and it was that, within this valley, there was actually a martial arts treasury. That's right, you didn't hear me wrong and I also didn't say it wrong, it was indeed a martial arts treasury.

This martial arts treasury could be said to be all-inclusive. Not only were there secret martial arts books, there were also many other types of books and items, such as: traditional Chinese medicinal teachings, mechanic studies, weapon makings and so on.

Any technique or skill which you ever thought of or that was ever mentioned in a wuxia novel, everything could be found here.

Another thing, I felt that the person who left behind this martial arts treasury was definitely an outstanding educationalist, because there was an introduction book which had a very detailed knowledge base for each and every martial arts techniques and skills here.

Thus, even if I was an ordinary person who did not understand a single thing about martial arts or traditional Chinese medicine, I could slowly learn the basics from which I would be able to gain a greater understanding of such martial arts and traditional Chinese medicine, I would slowly be able to become more proficient in it, learning with no obstacles at all.

Of course, at first I also didn't believe that all these things were real and felt rather that it was a prank that someone made up. But being someone who was suffering from a terminal illness, I of course tried curing myself with the same idea of curing a dead horse while treating it as a living horse and maybe perhaps this way I would be able to find a true cure. Thus, I started cultivating qi gong and learning things like acupuncture and moxibustion (Ed. burning of moxa on or near a person's skin as a counterirritant. What he means with the metaphor is: He's doomed anyway, he might as well try).

After all of this happened, I was completely engrossed with cultivating. Not knowing how much time had passed or how many years had gone by, I finally finished learning half of the content in the martial arts treasury.

Yep, I am just an ordinary person, so of course I did not learn the things which I lacked an interest in and only learned the techniques and skills which would be able to let me act cool and flashy. So that after I leave this valley, I would be able to show off in society.

Sigh, if only the meteor didn't suddenly appear in the sky, and accurately and precisely smashed on me, I believe that I, myself who is now unequalled under the heavens, would have had a very wonderful future. Want money, get money; want women, get women. In any case, no matter what I want, I could easily get it.

You all want to know, if I am actually cured from my disease? About this, I am not really sure, since I would need to go to the hospital to get examined to confirm. But in any case, during these few years I didn't drop dead and according to my pulse, I am definitely a strong and healthy male.

Up to here, my last words are also more or less finished.

Lastly, I would just like to say, big brother, take good care of our parents and also of seventh uncle and grandfather. Your little brother is about to go to another world.

My last and final words that I would still like to say, is that, if heaven would let me live one more time, I would definitely not learn Wang Chong Yang shouting phrases like, 'I am unequalled under the heavens!'. This is seriously just too fucking unlucky.

Just after finishing closed-door cultivation, Wang Chong Yang was pounded to death by a shoe, but at least he was able to leave an intact corpse. Instead, just after leaving closed-door cultivation and finally being able to be unequalled under the heavens, I was smashed into the ground to a meat pulp by a meteor, which had suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

Alright, the words above were said by me, Ye Lang, someone who was actually able to not be ordinary and become extremely powerful, but in the end was still a very ordinary person who leaves behind his last words.

The most most most last and final words I would just like to say, are about my wish. Yep, my wish for my next life. I am used to being ordinary in this life, in my next life, I want to find myself in a family which has authority, power and money.

I want to squander money; I want to be a prodigal son!

……

Within this continent, the Soaring Sky Empire, which was located at the east, occupied the continent's most fertile land. In the south there is Vermilion Bird Empire, and in the west there is Ai La Empire. These three empires stood like the three legs of a tripod within this continent, and the majority of the kingdoms had no other choice but to exists within the cracks of the three empires. These kingdoms' only option was to depend on the three empires, the only say they had was in which empire they depended on.

Within the imperial capital of Soaring Sky Empire, a very strange thing happened today, or perhaps it could be said to have been a very strange phenomenon. To say it more accurately, it was a weather phenomenon and furthermore, it was an incredibly beautiful weather phenomenon, beautiful to the point that it would make one forget about everything else.

In the sky, the clouds were a golden color. The multicolored sunlight, which was both beautiful and peculiar, gave people a very strange feeling, because the matter was, the timing where the multicolored sunlight appeared, the place where it appeared and the conditions that were required for it to appear, all made no sense.

Some specialists, which were also the scholars of this world, all fiddled with their glasses and solemnly said that it was a type of god's sign.

Within this world, anything that mortals could not explain, was assumed to be a miracle or god's sign. Also, the people of this world all believed in the existence of god, which was actually a great thing, as this prevented the people from wasting time on an unsolvable problem. As for whether if god really exists, who knows?

This multicolored sunlight, which was assumed to be god's sign, not only turned the clouds into a golden color, it also turned the Soaring Sky Empire into a golden colored world, making it look like a solemn golden empire.

According to the common sense in the empire, the incident would surely be crowned as a mysterious event and would surely have its cause coupled together with god. If there were people who were to go and exaggerate it, they would surely say three words – god has descended.

Also, on this day, a little life descended upon this world, descended upon this empire which therefore was destined to be the focus of everyone's attention.

He would be called the godchild! (Ed. MC has arrived)

Also known as the child of god, short form, godchild.

.....

Within the imperial capital, within the district where influential officials lived, a family's extremely grand and huge residence was located. Within the entire imperial capital, nay, the empire, even so much as to say within the entire continent, this 'huge residence' occupied the biggest space.

Majority of the kingdoms' imperial palaces weren't even as big or as luxurious as this 'huge residence'. If this 'huge residence' was not situated within the imperial capital, in the influential official's district, people would surely suspect that this 'huge residence' was an imperial palace, even though this 'huge residence' did not have the style a palace should have.

Because of the fact that the imperial palace of Soaring Sky Empire was similarly larger than the more general imperial palaces, more glorious and splendorous than the usual imperial palaces, this ‘huge residence’ was considered like a beginner magician meeting a great magician. Adding on to the fact that most of the influential officials’ residences in the empire were also very big, it thus made the ‘huge residence’ seem slightly less eye-catching. But of course, it was just slightly less eye-catching.

After saying this much, it should be time to introduce everyone to the name of this ‘huge residence’. This ‘huge residence’ has a very ordinary name which is not matched with it’s grand image — Ye Residence.

Because of this, in this district, no one named their grand residence with a very luxurious name. Even such a huge residence was only named Ye Residence, if someone were to name their residence with a very luxurious name, wouldn’t it be the same as courting shame on oneself?

Ye Residence, as the name implied, it is a residence which belongs to a family with the surname Ye. To be able to have a residence which was considered as huge as an imperial palace, needless to say, the Ye Family is a huge family. If not, how would they be able to have such a huge residence as their home?

Within this continent, as long as someone said that their surname is Ye, everyone would first think of the Ye Family from the Soaring Sky Empire which had been called the world’s number one legendary family for thousands of years.

Today, the Ye Family was once again welcoming a new member into the family. Why say once again? This is very simple, because within the Ye Family, practically every month, a new baby would be born within the family.

The Ye Family was truly the world's number one family, not just in name but also in reality. Not only was the Ye Family the top in authority, power and wealth, the number of family members within the Ye Family was already in several tens of thousands. Of course, it goes without saying, this is only counting the members who are currently alive in this world, not including those members who had already passed away.

Perhaps, this could be the very reason why Ye Residence was so huge. More so, those living in the Ye Residence were only members of the main family. If one were to count in all the members of the branch families, once could reckon that even the imperial palace of Soaring Sky Empire would also not be big enough.

However, this new member had a very special aspect, which was also the very reason he had so many people's attention. He is the grandson of the present Patriarch of the Ye Family and also the son of one of the candidates for the next generation Patriarch. Also very likely, this new member himself would be one of the candidate as the next, next generation Patriarch.

As for why although he was still not born yet, but was already a son and not a daughter? This question will shortly be answered by someone.

"Father, say, isn't your grandson's ostentation a bit too big? Not

even born yet and a multicolored sunlight has already appeared in the whole sky, just like a god descending into the world.”

Chapter 2 – Reincarnate & Rebirth

Within one of the courtyards of Ye Residence, a group of people was currently standing there, and the person who spoke just now was one of the people in the group. With an handsome and confident appearance. This person was a youth whose age was slightly bigger than the usual youth or as others would say, a young man.

“This is natural. After all, my grandson would for sure not be like any other ordinary person. In the future, he would for sure be a major character who would be able to shake the world with just the flip of his hand!” Beside the young man, a very imposing looking middle-aged man spoke. As he was speaking, he was looking at the multi-colored sunlight in the sky, with a kind of puzzled expression filled within his eyes.

“Both you father and son just only know how to wrangle here. My daughter-in-law is currently inside suffering and both of you are still making useless remarks. Also, who says that my grandchild will surely be a boy? Who knows, it may even be an adorable granddaughter. Lastly, what does this multi-colored sunlight have to do with my grandchild? This multi-colored sunlight is probably just an unusual occurrence only.” At the side, a beautiful and noble madam spoke unhappily towards both this father and son.

“I said that it will be a grandson, so it will surely be a grandson! Even if I say that the heaven is made by your grandsons, it means that the heaven is indeed made by your grandsons! What does a woman like you even know?” The middle-aged man said dignifiedly.

“That’s right, that’s right…Ah! No, I mean wrong…” The young man just nodded his head in agreement, but quickly realized that there was a little problem here…and that was—

“You little brat, I your mother have truly regretted giving birth to you. How great would it have been if I had birthed you as a girl instead of a boy. Just look at how considerate your older and younger sisters are, where are they even similar to you, all day long joining together with this old fart to try and anger me.” The noble madam said loudly as she pinched the young man’s ear while giving a harsh glare at the middle-aged man.

“What are you even saying? What giving birth to a granddaughter is better? Just give me this old man a grandchild with a handle. If my grandchild has no handle on him, I will break off with you and marry another one!” The middle-aged man quickly said.

“You dare!! Humph, you said that you will only have me for your entire lifetime. Are you disliking me now that I am old, and thus want to find a new lover for yourself?!” The noble madam glared at the middle-aged man and said angrily.

“My respected wife, my feeling towards you is just like the sun and moon in the sky, not changing eternally and loving only you. I will only love you alone forever.” The middle-aged man immediately held onto the noble madam’s hand and said with deep emotions.

“Husband…”

“Wife…”

Under the multi-colored sunlight, the two of them began showing their affections for one another, saying sweet talks and honeyed words to one another at the side.

“Lian’er, my love for you is just like the multi-colored sunlight which fills the entire sky, forever unending…” When the middle-aged man was looking at the multi-colored sunlight and using the multi-colored sunlight as a pretext to show off his love towards the noble madam, an exceptional situation suddenly appeared.

The multi-colored sunlight in the sky became brighter and brighter and became more and more beautiful, making people unable to forget this kind of beautiful scenery for the rest of their life. But there was a point that was slightly strange about the multi-colored sunlight, which was that a lot of people felt that the multi-colored sunlight was seemingly appearing to be rushing towards a certain place in the imperial capital and what was even more strange was that after this, the multi-colored sunlight suddenly vanished, just like how it suddenly appeared out of nowhere at the start.

At this moment, the whole sky returned to normal and this made everyone wonder whether what had happened just now was all just a dream.

Just at this moment, the people who were in the courtyard had

no time to care about this sudden change because at this moment, they heard the crying sound of an infant.

“Congratulations Ye patriarch, congratulations Ye patriarch...” At this moment, a sentence that they have heard a lot was spoken out by a granny who had a smile plastered all over her face.

“How is it, is young madam in good health?” Asked the young man.

“Both mother and son are safe and sound...” Just after the granny finished saying these few words, she had already discovered that the young man had already disappeared from in front of her and had swept past her just like a gust.

“Look, both mother and son are safe and sound, I said it right, it is indeed a grandson.” The middle-aged man who was still outside said complacently, and the noble madam who was still in the middle-aged man’s embrace unhappily pinched him.

“Then what about past several times when you said it was a grandson? What was the result?” The noble madam questioned.

“Little brother, it’s a little brother! Sister, we have a younger brother!” At the side, a girl who was holding hands with a girl which was somewhat bigger than her, shouted and quickly ran into the house. Behind, there was also an older boy following along with them.

The existence of the two sisters was a very good proof to discredit the boast of the middle-aged man.

“About this...the previous several times, I did say it correct once... Weird, how did the multi-colored sunlight disappeared?” The middle-aged man changed the subject and said while looking at the sky.

“That’s right, it seems like just when our little grandson was born, the multi-colored sunlight had just disappeared. It is indeed somewhat strange.” The noble madam slightly knit her brow and said while feeling somewhat puzzled.

But not waiting for the middle-aged man to start boasting again about guessing it correct that it was a grandson, the noble madam suddenly thought of a matter.

“Didn’t you just say that your love towards me was forever unending like the multi-colored sunlight? Now that the multi-colored sunlight is gone...”

“Cough, cough...About this...”

“Humph!”

.....

Outside the house, while the old husband and wife were playing out their love drama, inside the house, there was a pair of people who were currently looking at each other with deep love, and one of the person was the young man while the other person was a woman who had just finished giving birth to a child and was currently resting on the bed.

Although the woman seemed to be quite weak currently, it was still not able to cover up her moving temperament.

“My respected wife, it has been hard on you.” The young man said towards the slightly weak woman who was lying on the bed, and held onto the woman’s hands as he gazed steadily into her eyes, as if he did not see that there was an infant beside the woman’s pillow.

This scene was as if saying that he is different from other men, and at this time the person he still cared most about was still his own wife and not his son.

“Stop pretending, I know that the thing you most want to do right now is to hold your son.” The woman slightly laughed and said very tenderly. She of course knew about her husband’s current mood. It didn’t mean that the young man was faking, but just that he cared about both,and being the wife, she must naturally know how to be considerate.

Also, she was already very satisfied, satisfied about her husband’s concern and consideration for her.

“He he, I will first carry my precious son then…” The young man was also very straightforward and after laughing a few times, he was already holding the swaddled infant into his embrace.

“Black eyes and only a few strands of hair, can’t differentiate out the color at all…” The young man carried the infant while examining up the infant.

“Father, father, I want to carry little brother too.” At the side, the active young girl called out, but with her little body, who would even let her hug the baby.

“Don’t make a scene. You can forget about carrying, but I can let you take a look at him.” The young man refused immediately.

“Humph, let me look at him then.” The little girl snorted and subsequently happily stretched forward to look at her little brother. As for the two little children at the side, they too went to look at their little brother.

“Wah, little brother is so cute…”

“Yea…”

“That’s right…”

The three little children all in turn spoke out while the two adults at the side looked at them. Immediately, the whole house was filled with an atmosphere of comfort and happiness, the

atmosphere of family.

As for the infant who was just born, seemingly not understanding this atmosphere, was loudly crying within the swaddling clothes.

……

After a night passed, a rumor had started spreading around the city. Concerning the miracle that happened yesterday, it was all due to a person, and that person was an infant which was just born and this this freshly arrived infant was the Ye Family's thirteenth son.

Thirteenth son did not indicate that his father had so many children, but it was instead according to the seniority of his generation of the Ye Family, which meant that within his cousins, he was ranked as number thirteen.

Of course, this was only the the ranking in the main family and not the whole Ye Family. If it was the whole Ye Family, to estimate, he would probably be the thousand and first son, perhaps even higher.

A miracle, and adding on that it involved a prominent family, in an instant, the thirteenth son was already the focus point of everyone's attention in the whole city, and also at the same time deemed by others as a godchild. No one doubted or opposed this, at least currently, there was no one who doubted or opposed this.

Therefore, this kid who was just born and currently wrapped within swaddling clothes became world-famous just like this.

Also, many people had already started to make conclusions, saying that this child will surely not be ordinary in the future, there were even people who wrote out what this child's future experiences will be.

To be able to run and jump at one year old, first sign of his budding talent;

At the age of two, able to read and write, reading every type of book extensively, once again showing his potential;

After the test at the age of three, he starts to practice douqi or magic, showing his true genius;

Able to enter the imperial capital's Royal Institute of Education at the age of five, strength surpassing all his peers;

At the age of ten he goes out to experience the world, expanding his influence and becoming a legend;

At twenty years old he becomes an area's lord and develops his power, becoming many regions' overlord.

In this lifetime, it would be hard for him to be ordinary even if he wanted to be, as he would become the focus point of everyone's attention. Also, within his life, he would get to know some capable people and start businesses and stuffs with them, direct countries, meet different types and styles of woman and have some romance.

Chapter 3 – God-Abandoned Child

Three days later, the Soaring Sky Empire's emperor summoned the Ye Family's patriarch and his son for a meeting, and also specially told them to bring the Ye Family's thirteenth son along as well.

After the emperor's summon, there was an additional news regarding the Ye Family's thirteenth son, and the contents of the news was that the thirteenth son was to have a fiancée. This fiancée was precisely the empire's little princess, who had just recently been born on the same day as the thirteenth son. It's just that the little princess was born slightly earlier than the thirteenth son.

What was interesting was that this little princess was also born under the multi-colored sunlight, and therefore their relationship was pulled together with the miracle. Because of this, the emperor felt even more that the thirteenth son and little princess was a couple, match made in heaven.

Originally, the matter regarding the Soaring Sky Empire's princess marrying into the Ye Family also occurred from time to time. Things like a marriage engagement that got decided for them from a young age, even if it wasn't 10 times, it was discussed at least 8 times already. Therefore, regarding this matter, there was of course no one who opposed it or felt anything unpleasant about it.

A month later, the thirteenth son was one month old and naturally, the Ye Family would arrange a feast to celebrate this

occasion. At this time, practically all of the civilian and military officials were invited to the feast, and the emperor showed up aswell, bringing along the little princess who was already a month old.

At the time, the emperor's opinion was to let the two little ones celebrate their birthdays together, this way, it would help both sides avoid inviting guests and splitting up everyone. As for why the emperor didn't choose the imperial palace and instead came to the Ye Residence, he of course had his own reason.

No matter what was said, everyone was able to see that the emperor had given the Ye Family ample face and this matter let the thirteenth son's limelight ascend to a higher level.

One year later, the little prince was now one year old.... (See editor's note)

Apparently, some matters where occurring in ways that people never predicted. The thirteenth son's growth was pretty good but it was only that, it wasn't the same as what everyone thought was going to happen. According to certain people's' guesses, the thirteenth son should already be able to run, jump and speak. But —

"Cheng Tian, why is our child like this?" A noble and tender woman of the Ye Family looked at their one year old child and said while feeling somewhat worried.

This woman is precisely the thirteenth son's mother – Long An

Qi, and the ‘Cheng Tian’ who she was speaking to, was precisely her husband, Ye Cheng Tian, who was currently frowning.

Why frowning? Is it because the thirteenth son who was called as god’s child was already too outstanding, in a way that they couldn’t endure?

Wrong, it wasn’t that he was too outstanding but it was the contrary, and currently it seemed like the thirteenth son was even a little inferior to other children who were normal.

Generally, a one year old child would normally be able to at least start walking, and should also be able to speak some simple words. But this thirteenth son, not only did he not know how to walk, he was also not able to speak.

“It’s nothing, some children walk and speak relatively late but when they grow up, they are equally very outstanding. This matter doesn’t mean anything.” Cheng Tian wrinkled his brows and comforted his wife. At the same time, seemingly comforted himself as well.

“En……” Long An Qi carried the thirteenth son and slightly smiled, seemingly accepting the explanation.

That’s right, some children were indeed like this, and this didn’t mean anything. In the end, whether or not the thirteenth son would continue to be like this, the only way to know was to continue to look at how things went.

One year later, the little prince was now two years old....

The thirteenth son finally learned how to walk and was also now able to open his mouth to call others. However, the thirteenth son's standard was still only at a beginner level and this caused many people to feel a slight disappointment and thought of a grim possibility, but it was just that no one was willing to think too much about it.

At that time, there were people who were happy and those who were worried in the Ye Family. Those who were worried were of course those who cared about the thirteenth son, and those who were happy were naturally the people in the family who were not on good terms with Ye Cheng Tian.

However, within those who cared about the thirteenth son, there was actually an exception. Or, it could be said that she was still currently too young and regarded the thirteenth son's situation as a happy one. She was absolutely happy about it, she was the thirteenth son's big sister. The sister who was hyperactive and wanted to hug him at that time when he was just born.

All day long, she would happily carry the thirteenth son, as if wanting to accomplish a previous regret. Although she had already grown up quite a bit, she was still very small and as a result, the scene of her carrying her little brother was somewhat strange.

Just think for a bit. A little girl who was just five years old carrying a little boy who was two years old. Just what kind of scene is this? To be able to carry him and walk was already an event that felt like it was a miracle.

However, this scene also gave everyone a comfortable feeling, letting them feel that the relationship between older sister and younger brother was quite interesting.

One year later, the little prince was now three years old....

By now, basically everyone knows one thing, which was that the thirteenth son wasn't really a genius and was instead a fool. Wrong, it should actually be said that he was very stupid.

Up until now, he was only able to speak a few simple words. His intellectual growth caused everyone to feel disappointment, from god's child he changed into a little stupid fellow, just like this. This contrast made everyone feel somewhat bewildered.

But, today's results would cause everyone to completely give up on the thirteenth son, and no one would think that he had any hope at all. Of course, this was only mentioning the opinions of outsiders and not his own family.

Within the Holy Continent, there was a tradition that when a child turns three, he or she would need to be tested for his or her innate skill attribute.

The innate skill attribute is something which everyone in this world possesses. The average person only possesses one type of attribute, and only an extremely small amount of the population

would have two or more attributes.

The most seen innate skill attributes are the four main types; wind, fire, earth and water. As for the innate skill attributes which are rarely seen, there is light, dark, spatial and so on. There are also some variation attributes, but those attributes are extremely rarely seen, if at all, to the point that only one or two would appear every hundred thousand years.

The type of innate skill attribute a person possesses, determines the type of magic or douqi that they can use. This is most commonly referred to as having a supplement and this supplement was definitely not a small amount as it could definitely affect one's strength.

Putting it simply, a water attribute user using a water attribute technique means that he would be able to display his maximum strength. But if the water attribute user was to use any other attribute type's technique, it would be very hard for him to reach even half the might of if he was using a water attribute technique.

As for why the children are tested for their innate skill attribute when they becomes three years old, but not older or younger? There was apparently a saying which went something like...three years old determine one's lifetime...cough cough, more or less something like that. Anyway, it has that kind of reasoning. (Ed. ... sure)

It is said that, when one is three years old, one's lifetimes innate skill attribute has basically already been determined and would never change, regardless of age.

The thirteenth son's test result caused everyone to be shocked. His innate skill attribute was actually a no-attribute. This was an attribute that had not been seen in ten thousand years. No matter how bad or how weird one's attribute was, the person would still at the least have some kind of attribute.

The thirteenth son was indeed god's child. Just that now, there was a slight change to the previous saying of god's child. Previously, he was a child which was cared for by god and now, he was a child abandoned by god, which also means –

God-abandoned child!

A waste individual who was even inferior to ordinary people. In this world where the strong are honored, for a highly intelligent person who doesn't have strength, to get the highest respect of others was nearly impossible.

What's more, his intelligence was also falling behind when compared to others, therefore he was a hundred percent stupid child and also the ultimate waste individual of all waste individuals.

Of course, everyone were of this opinion in their mind, but no one dared to say it out loud. Even if this thirteenth son was an idiot, no one would dare to say anything. At least, they would not dare to say it out openly.

After all, with the power and authority which the Ye Family

possessed, they would easily be able to take care of the thirteenth son for his entire life, letting him live a carefree life, without worries. If anyone wanted to humiliate him, it would the equivalent as humiliating the Ye Family and this was not something that anyone could undertake.

Perhaps, this may be a type of fortune. Being born into the Ye Family allowed the thirteenth son to live his life with no worries, and as he is a foolish child, and a waste individual, this also allowed him to step away from the struggles for power and authority.

This also could be counted as a type of blessing and good fortune from god, right?

ED/N: Son, and prince are spoken similarly (Gong zi), the novel also switches often from son to prince and vice versa.

Chapter 4 – Exceedingly Strong Memory

After discovering the thirteenth prince's below stellar aptitude, it gave his parents an obvious and considerable shock. However, they were able to comfort themselves thinking that if their child was safe, and had no worries in life, his aptitude really didn't matter.

Of course, they would not give up on nurturing their son, as they still believed that, by putting in great effort, he would be able to make up for his poor innate talent. Even if the thirteenth prince couldn't become an outstanding individual, at the very least, he should be proficient and skilled in a particular field.

Fortunately, their three other children had excellent innate talent, especially Ye Hui who was the oldest child in the family and also the only other male. Ye Hui's growth let others feel ecstatic and he could be considered the complete opposite of his little brother, the thirteenth prince. He, with no doubt was 100% a genius.

Because of Ye Hui's existence, Ye Cheng Tian and his wife's hearts were at least a bit at ease, and focused mainly on Ye Hui's nurturing, and secondarily their two daughters. As for the thirteenth son, they would not give up on him and would equally love and dote on him, but with regards to nurturing him, it would be much more casual.

If the thirteenth prince were to stay like this, then he would live the rest of his life peacefully. With the Ye Family's power, even if he was not able to marry the empire's little princess, they would still be able to find a very good wife for him, who would love him

and he would live happily with no worries.

Why couldn't he marry the empire's little princess, even though they're engaged? What a pointless question. Due to the current situation, both sides would cancel the engagement between the thirteenth prince and the little princess. No matter if it was the Ye Family or the Imperial Household, both parties would definitely not let the thirteenth prince marry the empire's little princess.

There were many matters which were implicated within the engagement. If the Ye Family was to not care about anything, and let the thirteenth prince marry with the empire's little princess, then they would not be able to stand tall within the Soaring Sky Empire and fall.

Also, no matter what, being a courtier, the Ye Family would not let the imperial household lose face. Even if the imperial household was to give the Ye Family face and insist on the marriage, the Ye Family would still decline.

What's more, as long as there was a way to dissolve the marriage engagement, the imperial household would immediately agree and wouldn't continue insisting on the matter.

Of course, while the thirteenth prince and the little princess were still young, this matter would temporarily be put aside and no one would, for the time being, mention it. In other words, the thirteenth prince and the empire's little princess were still regarded as unmarried husband and wife.

Returning back to the main topic, the thirteenth prince did possess an aspect which makes him stand out from the rest of the masses. Naturally, this wasn't about his intellectual growth, which was already known by everyone. It was instead something else.

Some very strange things would occur, and no none would be able to explain them at all. It was just like the multicolored sunlight which appeared when the thirteenth prince was born, where no one was able to understand the reason for it appearing.

Bringing us to the subject at hand, the first to discover the thirteenth prince's strangeness weren't other people but was instead the thirteenth prince's active big sister, Ye Lan Yu. There was a day when she was carrying the thirteenth prince around to play and at that time, she discovered that the thirteenth prince's memory was the complete opposite of his intelligence.

At that time, the thirteenth prince was already barely able enough to be able to communicate with others. Although this growth was still a bit slow, it was still at least to an extent still acceptable by everyone. Right now, no one had very high expectations of him and they just wished that he would be able to live the rest of his life both peacefully and happily.

Even if he did not know how to take care of himself, it didn't matter at all, as the Ye Family could take good care of him for his entire life. Furthermore, some people had already had this intention.

Just that, at this time, little Lan Yu had discovered the thirteenth prince's strangeness. At that time, she was playing with a kind of

jigsaw puzzle game, which tested one's memory skill and ability to judge. Originally, the jigsaw puzzle which she played with would be relatively easy, a suitable brain racking game for children.

However, little Lan Yu herself felt that she was smarter than the typical child, and this was also the shared opinion by the majority of people. Therefore, she chose a jigsaw puzzle which was relatively harder. The difficulty of the jigsaw puzzle game was definitely exceedingly hard for children, and even the typical adult would find it somewhat challenging as well.

That's right, little Lan Yu was definitely exceptionally intelligent, but she was still a child after all, and there was a limit for a child's intelligence. Therefore, even after trying to solve it for half a day, she still wasn't able to solve it, and in the end, being annoyed, she threw the jigsaw puzzle onto the floor and sat down at a side while panting with anger.

During this time when little Lan Yu was angry, the thirteenth prince who was at one side started to move. Looking at the jigsaw puzzle on the floor and then looking towards his big sister who was currently angry, his expression appeared to be somewhat muddle-headed.

He somewhat understood that his big sister was angry because she wasn't able finish the jigsaw puzzle, and thus he extended out his tiny hand and started picking up the pieces that were scattered on the floor, placed them onto the picture, and then attempted to try piecing it all together.

"Little brother, stop playing already, it is not fun at all. Big sis

will bring you……” After getting over being angry, little Lan Yu discovered that thirteenth prince was crawling on the floor and playing with the jigsaw puzzle. At the start, she thought that he was just casually playing around with the jigsaw puzzle, but very quickly, she discovered that something was off.

At the corner of the picture frame, where her eyes swept past, it seemed like there was the appearance of a complete jigsaw puzzle, and this made her feel very shocked. Looking at it carefully, she discovered that half of the jigsaw puzzle was already completed.

“This…this…” Little Lan Yu’s expression was as if she had just discovered a new continent. She was able to confirm that this was definitely done by thirteenth prince as there were currently only the two of them there.

Just that, she wasn’t able to piece together this jigsaw puzzle even after spending half a day on it, and right now, her silly little brother was instead able to complete half of it. This was just too unbelievable already.

Little Lan Yu was stupefied. She was looking at the thirteenth prince with a dazed look.

“Look big sis, it’s finished already. Don’t be angry anymore.” The thirteenth prince spoke very slowly. Every single word that he would want to say, he would have to think for a while, trying hard to express his own opinion.

At this, little Lan Yu was already used to it, as he had always been speaking like this.

A coincidence, this must have been a coincidence, is what she thought.

Little Lan Yu looked at the complete jigsaw puzzle, somewhat not being able to believe it. Firstly, she was not able to believe that her silly little brother was able to complete this jigsaw puzzle. Secondly, she was not able to believe that she was worse than her own little brother. This let her as the big sister, not know how to show her face.

“I’m not angry. Little brother, let’s play one more time together.” Little Lan Yu smiled and then once again scattered apart the jigsaw puzzles, wanting to see whether it was a mere coincidence or not.

The thirteenth prince looked at little Lan Yu and then squatted down to continue fiddling with the jigsaw puzzle. As the jigsaw puzzle slowly started to come together, little Lan Yu’s mouth began opening wider and wider.

“Mom, mom! There’s something serious, little brother he……” At this time, little Lan Yu quickly ran to report what had just happened to Long An Qi.

As a result, this matter caused a sensation in the whole Ye Family, albeit a very small one. Everyone discovered that the thirteenth prince’s memory was not comparable to an ordinary

person’s and could be said, that with just one look, he would be able to remember it all.

This final conclusion, which made others feel that it was somewhat unbelievable, was determined after trying out many kinds of test on the thirteenth prince.

The thirteenth prince’s standard of intelligence was still not up to their expectations, as he still did not have the standard which he should have at his age, however his ability to memorize caused even adults to feel inferior and ashamed.

So was this a case of being both a genius and an idiot which was said to have occurred in the legends?

Perhaps this was the case, or perhaps it was that the thirteenth prince was lacking something which prevented him from being able to fully use and showcase his abilities.

Chapter 5 – The Earth Is Round!

Very quickly, the sensation surrounding the thirteenth prince's memory started to fade away. After all, the strength or weakness of one's memory cannot make up for the other shortcomings that he had.

At the moment, another matter was currently occurring.

Right now, the thirteenth prince was at an important stage of his life, where he had to decide what he would in the future. About the type of person he would want to become, or what kind of job, at least in name, he would want to do, for example: being a scholar, a civil official and so on.

As for why is it a job just in name? The reason is actually very simple, and it is that no one felt that the thirteenth prince would be able to take charge of the matters needed in any job. Also, they would not let him work in the actual job, rather it would be a job just for the title. To put it simply, it would be so that it would be pleasant to hear that the thirteenth prince had a job. And to put it even more simply, it was a matter regarding reputation.

Of course, this choice was decided by the thirteenth prince's parents, and this choice is the cause of Ye Cheng Tian's and his wife's headaches, since they did not know how to handle it properly.

This was because, with such a strong memory, the thirteenth prince could easily become a scholar, who would have access to an

abundant array of knowledge, and required a strong ability to memorize, with regards to this aspect, it wouldn't be a problem at all, but even with this knowledge he may not be able to tell others about what he knows.

However, as far as this was concerned, Ye Cheng Tian and his wife, did not need the thirteenth prince to lecture others on any scholarly matters, and therefore, they hired a famous scholar to come and teach the thirteenth prince.

Soon after, a strange event started to happen. After the famous scholar taught the prince for a short period of time, he immediately gave in his resignation to Ye Cheng Tian and his wife, as well as telling them to find someone more qualified than him to teach the thirteenth prince. As for the reason given for his resignation, it was that he said that he was not qualified enough and didn't possess the capability to teach the thirteenth prince at all.

At the start, both husband and wife were under the impression that it was because the thirteenth prince was too slow-witted, a rotten wood that would not be able to be carved, and that the scholar was unable to put his hand to it at all. Thus, they had no choice but to hire another famous scholar to teach the thirteenth prince.

Yet, this time it was even faster. Not even three days since the scholar was hired, he similarly handed in his resignation and also requested the Ye Family to find someone more qualified than him to teach the thirteenth prince.

Following this, the Ye Family continuously hired a few more famous scholars to teach the thirteenth prince, and yet again, none of them were able to persevere on, and the duration of their employment time got shorter and shorter. The final scholar was only able to persevere for half a day before he said a sentence to the married husband and wife ,with a frightened face and a look that said that he was about to crumble any moment.

“Your noble prince is a genius unparalleled under the heaven. I am not able to teach him. Perhaps, in this world, only god would be able to teach him.”

This situation caused Ye Cheng Tian and his wife to feel that something was fishy. No matter how stupid the thirteenth prince was, before coming here to teach him, all of these scholars knew about the thirteenth prince’s situation and thus would have definitely prepared themselves to deal with him and should not have resigned after teaching him for less than half a day.

Moreover, according to the situation, the scholars that were hired later on were getting more and more qualified, the time those scholars persevered should have gotten longer and longer. But why was it getting shorter and shorter instead?

Therefore, after being puzzled with this question, Ye Cheng Tian and his wife went to ask the thirteenth prince himself, desiring to know what happened between him and the scholars, that made the scholars behave in such a strange manner.

Don’t ask, you do not know. When asked, you get startled. After Ye Cheng Tian and his wife found out the answer to their puzzled

question, they immediately severed the idea of hiring scholars to teach the thirteenth prince. Similarly, they no longer requested the thirteenth prince to become a scholar anymore.

.....

“Thirteenth prince, today we will first understand about the origin of the continent. Long ago, before the god’s age, there were no living creatures on the ground during that time. Until when, god descended upon this world, giving life to the earth, and at the same time created us humans, elves, dwarfs, beastmen and many other intellectual creatures. “

“But within all the numerous races, us, the human race is the race that is closest to god, because god created the human race according to his own image. Therefore, within all the races, we the human race are the most intellectual.....”

During the time when the scholar was proudly talking about the human race’s superiority, the thirteenth prince who was listening at the side stared blankly for a while, then expressed his own opinion on the matter.

“The human race is actually not the creation of god. That is merely a mythology. The human race is due to the evolution of apes. This is what was written on the theory of evolution.” (GK Ed. my inner biologist is crying!!! We didn’t evolve from Apes...)

What is the theory of evolution? The scholar already did not want to know about it. He was only shocked about the thirteenth

prince's opinion. That was a type of questioning towards god, and therefore he immediately began to correct the thirteenth prince.

Just that, during the time when the scholar was correcting the thirteenth prince and explaining to him that he must not question the existence of god, the thirteenth prince once again raised a question.

"Why can't I question it? Did you all before ever see god? Are you all sure that god really exists?"

This caused the scholar to immediately start packing his stuff and left, he was afraid that if he was to stay here and teach the thirteenth prince, he would get pulled into an enormous mess.

The following scholars were also met with a similar situation. For example, the prince saying that the Earth is actually not flat but instead round. Just that this round Earth was just too big and that no one was able to feel it or see it.

In addition, the thirteenth prince also said that the sun was actually a kind of huge fireball star and that the Earth was encircling and spinning around the sun, and that the sun was not encircling and spinning around the Earth, as it was believed.

With regards to the people in this world, everything that the thirteenth prince said, was simply going against the existence of god. If this was to be known by the church, they would definitely send punitive forces against the thirteenth prince. Even if a child's

words carried no harm, there would still be a reaction to some extent.

Therefore, after knowing this situation, all of those scholars immediately got away from the thirteenth prince. After all, they would definitely not want to invite disaster onto themselves.

After Ye Cheng Tian and his wife knew about this, their complexion also changed. They unanimously decided to not hire anymore scholars to teach the thirteen prince. If this little thirteenth prince was to once again say out some astonishing theory, what kind of disaster would happen then?

Just that, they were very baffled about one point – “Cheng Tian, where do you think he learnt all of these messy thing? From the time he was born, he hasn’t even taken a step out of the house.” Long An Qi was very baffled. Because of the specialness of her own son, up till now, he still hadn’t left the Ye Residence, and absolutely should not have been able to come into contact with such issues.

“That’s right, from small till now, apart from us and those few servant girls looking after him, there was only……” Ye Cheng Tian was very baffled and just as he was speaking, he suddenly thought of a possibility.

“Ye Lan Yu!!”

“What is it?” Little Lan Yu looked at her own parents puzzled. She felt that her parents seemed to be a bit angry, and therefore

started thinking of what she had done wrong today.

"You little troublemaker! Forget about you usually being mischievous, how could you tell your little brother about those kinds of messy things? You know perfectly well that he does not know how to judge what is true or false, and no matter what you said, he would just believe it."

"What?" Little Lan Yu did not understand, and what she did not understand was which matter they were talking about?

Obviously, this was already not the first time that she had deceived her own little brother.

However, after she knew the whole entire matter, she affirmably said in one sentence –

"Dad, mom, I really didn't do it this time!!"

The crisis this time made Ye Cheng Tian and his wife temporary give up on the plan to raise the thirteenth prince into a scholar. In the future, they would just let the thirteenth prince read books alone, to prevent his astonishing opinions from appearing once again.

For this, they specially gathered quite a few books which consists of various kinds of content. Of course, within all these, there was not a single 'argumentative' book.

Since being a scholar was out of the question, why not go and try for others types of careers, for example attempting to be the empire's feudal lord, since this was something that the thirteenth prince would have to do sooner or later. Although, when the time comes, it may not necessarily be the thirteenth prince himself that would personally take over, but rather there would be people in the Ye Family helping him out.

Chapter 6 – Missing

After the previous experience they became more careful, and thus this time they were just glad that their decision to keep watch on the thirteenth prince seemed to be the right one.

To study on how to become a feudal lord, there was no other choice or option but to learn the laws of the Empire and understand the situation of the Empire. Just after the thirteenth prince finished looking through all the materials, he straightforwardly stated his opinions, which caused the Ye Family's hearts to become alarmed.

"This kind of law is unfair. Why are the criterion differences between the nobles and the commoners so huge? The law should be equal for everyone. Even if the emperor breaks the law, he must be convicted too and have his head chopped off!"

"This slavery system should be abolished……"

"The nation's leaders should be chosen by the people……"

……

About the matter pertaining to the thirteenth prince's occupation-in-name, after countless times of effort and failure, Ye Cheng Tian and his wife were starting to get a headache, and were even at a point that their minds were in a such a confused state, that they actually directly wanted to ask what kind of person the thirteenth prince would want to be in the future and what he

would want to do in the future.

The thirteenth prince thought for a while, then smiled saying: “I want to be a prodigal son!”

“……” Ye Cheng Tian and his wife looked at each other and after a good while, then asked: “What? Can you say it again?”

“I want to be a prodigal son.” The thirteenth prince repeated what he said a moment ago and even furthermore added on another sentence –

“A prodigal who has authority, power, money and beautiful woman! Yep, best if there were some lackeys who followed behind me too!!”

“Why do you want to be this?” At that time, Ye Cheng Tian and his wife did not know what they should say and asked a question while looking foolish.

“I want to squander money, I want to be prodigal!!”

“……”

“Ye Lan Yu!!!” Ye Cheng Tian and his wife roared towards a place, or more specifically, roaring towards a certain person, and that person was the thirteenth prince’s bigger sister, Ye Lan Yu.

From what they believed, for the thirteenth prince to have such a strange thought, the only possibility was that it was Little Lan Yu who indoctrinated the thirteenth prince with the idea to be a prodigal son. Thus right now, they were about to properly give a lesson to Little Lan Yu.

Poor Little Lan Yu, to have to once again become the thirteenth prince's sacrificial lamb for no good reason. Similarly, the thirteenth prince also looked at his own parents while feeling somewhat baffled, as he did not understand what him wanting to be a prodigal son had to do with his own bigger sister.

Also, at this time, the thirteenth prince was merely five years old. To have such huge ambitions at this age, the thirteenth prince was worthy of being called a genius unparalleled under the heaven indeed.

In-between all of these matters, there was also another matter, which was about the thirteenth prince's name.

Regarding this matter, the people of the Ye Family also felt something strange. Originally, they helped pick a name for the thirteenth prince, which was 'Ye Tian You'. The idea behind the name, was that they wished that heaven would protect and look after the thirteenth prince. (In the name Ye Tian You, Tian means heaven and You means assist/protect.)

However, a point that was very strange was that after the prince had learned how to read and write, he kept on writing his own name as Ye Lang and when others called him Ye Tian You, he would not respond and only when they called him Ye Lang, would

he have some sort of reaction.

Although it was very strange, but after being accustomed to it, everyone just forgot about the name Ye Tian You, and replaced it with the two words, Ye Lang. Thus, the name ‘Ye Lang’ became both the thirteenth prince’s lifetime code name and also his own name.

Ye Lang? Was this a coincidence or was there another root cause?

Whatever it was, no one currently knew and what everyone did know was that, since the little Ye prince had decided on being a prodigal son, he would need to go and spend money. And the first fact before spending money was that one needed to have money. If one doesn’t have money, how would one be able to spend it? How would he be able to squander money, and how would he be able to be prodigal?

However, this matter was very easy to solve. The little Ye prince had never left the house before and did not need to spend money, he still had his yearly allowance money, and who knows how much money he received every year? Probably, the little Ye prince’s wealth would be compared with that of a small wealthy family.

This was just merely his allowance money. If he was to open his mouth to ask for money, he would easily receive much more.

After having such an economic foundation, it was time to go and fix the second matter. This matter was the problem’s crucial point

and the problem was, he would have to leave the house!

As far as most people were concerned, leaving the house was an ordinary occurrence. But, for our thirteenth prince, it was a somewhat relatively troublesome matter. In the whole Ye Family, no one would allow him to leave the house, or at the least, currently they would not allow him to leave the house.

However, a strange matter once again happened surrounding the thirteenth prince.

“Master, madam, not good, young master has disappeared!”

Following the anxious and scared voice of the servant girl, the people of the Ye Family suddenly discovered that the thirteenth prince who rarely showed himself in front of everyone had mysteriously disappeared, and even after searching the entire Ye Residence, the thirteenth prince was still not found.

At the beginning, everyone thought that Little Lan Yu was playing some sort of game with the thirteenth prince. Though very quickly, this thought was eliminated because Little Lan Yu was in the middle of a lesson and was separated from the thirteenth prince, making it impossible for her and the little Ye prince to have any sort of contact with one and another.

As a matter of fact, during that time, Little Lan Yu was in the middle of meditating and cultivating magic, and after hearing that the thirteenth prince had disappeared, she immediately stopped cultivating and urgently went to look for her little brother.

All of a sudden, the entire Ye Family erupted into a huge commotion. It not only caused a huge commotion, but it got to the point that the Ye Family's patriarch almost mobilized the entire Ye Family's power to search for the thirteenth prince.

At the time, even though everyone was very curious about how the thirteenth prince had disappeared, no one went to investigate it, as they were all focused on searching. After all, how could a five year old child, not to mention one that was a such an idiot, disappear with completely no trace. This point was just too strange.

At the present moment, the most important thing was to first find the thirteenth prince. No matter if the thirteenth prince was a waste individual or not, he was still the current Ye Family patriarch's grandson and also Ye Cheng Tian's son.

Very quickly, the people of the Ye Family appeared within all the big streets and small alleys across the imperial city. Of course, other than the people of the Ye Family, the city guard military that received the news was actually also searching for traces of the thirteenth prince as well.

This scene caused many others who did not know the truth of the matter of thirteenth prince's disappearance to be endlessly baffled. They weren't able to guess what had happened to cause such a huge commotion.

Thus, those people that did not know what occurred, started to

go and make inquires. Although they could not find out who exactly the person being searched for was, they still found that the person being searched for was a five year old noble prince who had black hair and black eyes and the reaction of the noble prince could be somewhat sluggish.

Some people who were able to think deeply, had already guessed who this noble prince might be. After all, in the imperial capital, the amount of people who can cause such a dispersion of forces was not that many, and there were just a few individuals that corresponded with the mentioned conditions.

Right now, they were all curious as to why this little prince would have disappeared. Wasn't he always at home?

Some people brought this question with them as they searched for the little prince, while others went to search for the little prince with some other purpose. Very quickly, the amount of people searching for the thirteenth prince in the entire imperial capital started to increase more and more.

Right now, unless the thirteenth prince was already outside of the imperial capital, he would certainly be able to be found, and it should also be very soon. Yep, very soon, at least, this was what everyone thought.

However, things weren't as simple as how everyone thought it would be. After searching for three days straight and practically rummaging through the entire imperial capital, the thirteenth prince was still not found. Which place could the thirteenth prince have gone to? How was he able to avoid all the search parties?

Could it be that he was kidnapped? All of these questions were rolling around In people’s minds.

Chapter 7 – Best Quality Female Slave

The disappearance of Ye Lang caused the Ye Family to feel as if they were ants on a hot pan, as they were all feeling extremely anxious. Especially Ye Cheng Tian and his wife, as it could be said that for the past three days, they were not able to sleep or have a moment's rest.

As for little Lan Yu, she too was very anxious and had no appetite during these last few days. After all, within the four siblings, the feelings between her and the thirteenth prince was the best, since all day long they were always together. Perhaps, it was because the thirteenth prince was younger than her, this allowed her to exhibit her position as a big sister.

This matter also affected the emperor, as the emperor himself was similarly paying attention to any developments regarding this matter and had dispatched quite a few amount of people to help search for the whereabouts of the thirteenth prince.

"Continue searching! Search attentively for me! So many of you had already searched for three days and all of you actually couldn't even find a five year old child?!" the Ye Family's patriarch said angrily.

"It has already been three days...Could it be that Ye Lang has already left the city?" The patriarch's wife, Ruan Lian Er said while frowning. With the current situation as it is right now, it was very hard for others to not think of this aspect.

“He is just a little child, how could he have left the city? That is unless, someone purposely took him out of the city.” Ye Yi knitted his brows. Actually, he had already ordered others to search in the vicinity outside of the city. it was just that he was not willing to think about this possibility any more.

In the case that little Ye Lang was actually brought out of the city by someone, that person definitely would not have any good intentions and this outcome would give everyone an even bigger headache.

“Whoever dares cause harm to my son, I will definitely bury his whole family with them!” Ye Cheng Tian snorted and said very softly, he was not sure if he was talking to himself but his tone was resolute for sure.

“Cheng Tian……” Long An Qi held onto Ye Cheng Tian’s hand, her tone sounding very complicated, as if she had just accepted something.

And it was just at this moment, an unexpected matter occurred which bewildered them. It was definitely a matter which, caused everyone to feel surprised.

“House master, little thirteenth prince, little thirteenth prince he……” A family retainer hurriedly ran into the house, with a flustered face, as he himself was not able to believe what he was about to say was actually true.

“What happened? Is there finally some news?” Ye Yi said calmly.

The expression of this family retainer made him feel somewhat worried.

“Little thirteenth prince, he, he……” The family retainer appeared to still have not caught his breath.

“What about him, could you just quickly say it!!” Long An Qi said urgently.

“Little thirteenth prince has just come back.” The family retainer finally finished saying the rest of the sentence.

“…!! What did you say? Where is he right now?” After remaining silent for a while, all of the people in the house erupted, and all of them grabbed onto the family retainer’s clothes and asked, causing the family retainer to feel as if he was overwhelmed by favor from his superiors.

“The little thirteenth prince has come back, and he had brought along a little girl with him too. Right now, they have already entered the residence.” The family retainer said. Very obviously, he had rushed to inform about the matter of the little thirteenth prince coming back, having a hint of somewhat wanting to take credit.

But at this time, who would even bother to think about him, as all of them immediately left him behind and quickly went out to find the thirteenth prince. And at the same time, they had not paid attention to an important matter that the family retainer’s had said, that the little thirteenth prince had brought along a little girl

with him.

When Ye Yi and the others ran to the front courtyard, they immediately saw the little thirteenth prince walking in and not far behind him, there was a little girl which appeared to about the same age as the little thirteenth prince, although this little girl was somewhat different from any normal human. But at this time, they did not care or regard it, as they only wanted to hug the little thirteenth prince and see whether he had any kind of injuries on him.

And the person who hugged the little thirteenth prince first was the person who appeared to be the weakest, Long An Qi. At this moment, she had actually displayed 200% of her normal speed, no, it should be even more than 200% of her usual speed and she appeared in front of little thirteenth prince and hugged him.

“Little darling, where in the world did you run to? Do you have any injuries? Have you been hungry these past few days……” Long An Qi asked. On one hand, she examined the little thirteenth prince’s body over, and on the other hand, she asked about his well-being, also at the same time, temporarily pushing aside all the other people who had wanted to hug the little thirteenth prince .

The little thirteenth prince shook his head and then slowly said “Don’t have, there were tasty foods and tasty drinks. Also, there were fun things too.”

“Tasty foods, tasty drinks and fun things?” After confirming that the little thirteenth prince was fine, Long An Qi continued asking: “What type of place is that? Who brought you there and who is

this little lady? Ehhh, this little lady……”

Only at this moment, had Long An Qi appeared to have discovered that the little girl standing at the side, was different than humans. Yep, that’s right, she was not of the human race.

The little girl’s eyes were huge and when she smiled, the corner of her mouth would reveal a pair of little canine teeth. Also, on her head, there were a pair of ‘cat’ ears and on the back of her body, there appeared to be a little tail. All of these points very clearly told everyone that she was a beastman.

The question lies in whether she belonged to the cat race or the tiger race as these two races’ distinctive features were somewhat alike, especially when they were still young.

And very quickly, the little thirteenth prince gave everyone the answer to their question: “She is bought by me. They said that she is the tiger race’s best quality female slave.” (GK Ed. Damn boy, wow look at him 5 years old!!! Prodigal son for sure!)

“……”

Silence. Pure silence. For a little while, no one let out any kind of sound and just looked at the little thirteenth prince quietly, with an expression in their eyes showing a kind of strangeness.

“You are the one who bought her? Where in the world did you

actually run off to during these past three days? Also, how did you go out? Slowly and attentively tell your mom right now.” Long An Qi asked curiously. She was very curious towards what her own son had gone through, and the experiences he had over these past three day, and wanted to know what had happened intensely.

The people at the side were also curious about all of these things, and all of them fixed their attention on the little thirteenth prince, awaiting his answers.

Not waiting for the little thirteenth prince to speak, Long An Qi spoke once again: “Let’s first go into the house. The wind here is strong.” She certainly did not want her own son to get blown away by the wind and immediately carried her son into the house.

This was good, since everyone could sit down and slowly talk as they drank tea.

After everything and everyone was ready and in place, the little thirteenth prince started to slowly narrate his experiences during the past three days. Of course, many of the narrated parts were very vague and needed everyone to guess on their own, as after all, there was a limit to the thirteenth prince’s ability to express what he wanted to say.

Fortunately, the people here were not ordinary people and were still able to understand what had basically happened. And from the start to the end, their mouths were hanging wide open, obviously they were thoroughly shocked by the thirteenth prince’s experience.

First, the thirteenth prince spoke about how he was able to leave the Ye Residence, and the answer given caused everyone's expression to change, as the method the thirteenth prince had used to leave the Ye Residence was not complicated at all, and was instead just too simple.

"Eh? I just walked out of the residence like this. There was no one blocking me and they didn't pay attention to me at all." This was the little thirteenth prince's original answer.

That's right, not one person in the Ye Residence noticed him at all, and just like that, under everyone's so called watchful eyes, he had walked out of the big gate.

Within all of this, there were a few reasons why this happened. First of all was that, there were just too many people in the Ye Residence, and the number of children the same age as the little thirteenth prince were not few at all. Also, other than a few select members of the Ye Residence, the other members had actually never met the little thirteenth prince before. (GK Ed. Wow they are smart...)

Secondly, although the Ye Residence does conduct background checks of people who enter the residence; and for people outside who want to sneak inside the residence, it could be said to be as difficult as trying to sneak into the empire's imperial palace. It was just that, there was a blind spot that existed and this so called blind spot was that, they were much more relaxed when people inside the Ye Residence were going out.

Moreover, as a child who was at the age of five, of course this would not alarm others.

Of course, there were a lot of coincidences, which allowed the little thirteenth prince to be able to leave the big gate under the situation where no one knew about it. Just simply walking out of the big gate, this answer made everyone feel totally surprised!

(Gintokikatsura Ed. I'm surprised the Ye family has survived up till now... it would be so easy kidnap and ransom their little master's... no guards posted around the thirteenth prince to watch over and protect him just in case. Wow just wow, rant end/)

(Ilesyt: Actually, they didn't monitor people leaving, but they do heavily monitor people entering, they are one of the best in fact.

Chapter 8 – Purchasing A Playmate

No matter, even if there were many coincidences which allowed the little thirteenth prince to be able to leave the residence, it caused the backs of all of these Ye Family members to turn cold and be covered in sweat, because it had clearly shown that there was a huge loophole within their defenses and guards.

Because of this, the Ye Family started to immediately implement security measures within the Ye Residence's defenses and guards. And some events that happened afterwards also caused this matter to become very interesting.

And with regards to this event, it wasn't that interesting, what was interesting was the place where the little thirteenth prince went to and stayed at for the past three days.

During that time, right after the little thirteenth prince left the residence, upon seeing the fresh scenery on both sides, in that moment of time, he forgot about what he was going to do and instead just wandered aimlessly within the city.

After all, this was the first time he had ever left the Ye Residence, so of course everything was new and fresh to him.

Fortunately, this place was in the imperial capital, in the influential official district, therefore law and order here was quite good. Even if the little thirteenth prince, who wore luxurious clothes, strolled around the streets alone, no one would have any bad intentions towards him. Or perhaps it was because there were

so many noble little master and little misses like him wandering around the streets.

Except that the noble little master and little misses all had people accompanying them, and perhaps because of this, some people thought that the little thirteenth prince had people accompanying him as well, and mistook other people as people who were accompanying him.

Later on, the little thirteenth prince suddenly recalled his own purpose and started to find people. What purpose? Don't you know? The reason he came out was to squander money and be prodigal.

The little thirteenth prince casually asked a person that he saw and got an answer that if he wanted to be prodigal, within the city, there was a very good money squandering establishment where many prodigal sons always went to squander money.

The little thirteenth prince had already forgotten who the person who told him that was, and if he was to still remember, that person would definitely become very miserable, because right now, everyone present all had the urge to slap him to death.

Why have this urge? If you knew what kind of place the person recommend to the little thirteenth prince to was, perhaps, you may also have this urge.

"Romantic Floor!" At that time, the little thirteenth prince slowly said out the name of the place.

“Pfff……” Ye Yi and Ye Cheng Tian immediately spurt out the tea which they just drank.

“What?! What did you say? Romantic Floor?” Ye Yi and Ye Cheng Tian both asked shockingly with some tea still on their mouth.

“Yep!” The little thirteenth prince nodded his head.

“Cheng Tian, what kind of place is Romantic Floorv?” Long An Qi asked while looking very puzzled. Looking at the situation, she did not know this place at all, but she could still see that her own husband and father in-law both knew about this place.

“About this……that place is the imperial capital’s most high grade……brothel……” Ye Cheng Tian said, sounding somewhat embarrassed.

“Oh, so it is a brothel. No wonder you would be embarrassed to say what place it was. All of you men……What?! Brothel?!” At the start, Long An Qi still had not reacted over what was said and only suddenly came to realize.

Brothel was a somewhat more elegant way of saying it, and if one was to say it more simply, it was a prostitution house. A five year old child going to this kind of place, how could anyone be able to accept this?

No wonder no one was able to find him even after searching for

three days straight. So it turns out, this kid was actually at this kind of place. To ask, who would even be able to think of it, who would even go to this kind of place to search for a five year old child?

“Son, tell your mom, what does the person who told you about this place look like? I want to kill him!!” Long An Qi’s face shone with green light, that murderous-looking appearance let others know with no doubt what she just said was her true feeling.

It was no wonder she would be like this. No matter what, how could one even introduce a child to go to that kind of place to squander money and be a prodigal son?

“He had a pair of eyes, a nose……” The little thirteenth prince slowly thought back bit by bit. Just that, those features which he said, other than proving that the person was a human, other facts could be confirmed at all.

“……”

“Forget it. It is good that he came back. Isn’t it just spending a bit of money? In any case, even if he would want to do ‘that’, he still could not do it right now.” Ye Cheng Tian said, with his expression looking very eccentric.

“Humph, best if he didn’t do any weird stuff. If not, I will go and tear apart that what, Romance is in the air Building.” Long An Qi bit her teeth and said, “Little darling, what did you do there, tell it to me accurately.”

“At that place, I had good food to eat and good drink to drink. Also, there were many big sisters to play games with me. Next time, I want to go there and play again.” The little thirteenth prince said.

Long An Qi’s charming face sunk and chided softly: “You are not allowed to go there anymore! In the future, you are not allowed to go to this kind of place anymore. No matter if you want to squander money, want to be prodigal, you are not allowed to go to that kind of place.”

“Why? That place is very fun, more fun than this place.” The little thirteenth prince asked while feeling puzzled, and towards this sentence of his, I believe that two certain people present here would surely agree that that place was indeed much more fun than home.

Cough cough, of course, that was their thinking back when they were still young.

“No why, because this is mom’s order and you must listen.” Long An Qi really did not know how to explain all these to the little thirteenth prince, and instead just put down a compulsory order for the little thirteenth prince.

“Oh, then I will not go there anymore. Next time, I will go to other places to squander money.” The little thirteenth prince said while tilting his head to one side.

Still next time? We would definitely not let you have a next time. Definitely will not let you leave home alone again.

Following, there was still another problem. What was going on with this little tiger race girl. As to why Romantic Floor would receive the little thirteenth prince as a customer and not have any problem? Everyone was already well aware to the answer to this question.

As far as Romantic Floor was concerned, as long as it was a male who had money, no matter if you were too old or a child, you were the emperor or a slave, they would treat and serve upon you as an esteemed customer.

This little tiger race girl was just as what the little thirteenth prince said, a female slave which he had bought.

At that time, Romantic Floor just happened to have a female slave auction, and this little girl was one of the female slaves. Of course, this auction was targeted to some people who had a special hobby and as for what this special hobby was, I believe that not much is needed to be said about it.

Anyway, ultimately, just to squander money and be a prodigal son for a while, the little thirteenth prince bought the little tiger race girl. Purely just to squander money and to be prodigal only, and there wasn’t any kind compassion or sympathy involved in the purchase.

As for the reason why he picked the little tiger race girl within all of those female slave, it was of course due to their age being similar. After all, a little child would of course pick another little child, right?

Lastly, there was still a point which was needed to be said and it was that the amount of money that the little thirteenth prince had spent in Romantic Floor, including the amount of money spent to buy the little tiger race girl, the thirteenth prince had straight up finished spending almost all of his allowance money. The total amount spent was 68,100 gold coins.

This amount of money, if others were to try and earn this much by working their entire lifetime, they would still not be able to do so. Also, as this amount of money was actually spent by the little thirteenth prince in just three days, he indeed had the potential to become a prodigal son.

This was also the reason why Romantic Floor did not release any information about the little thirteenth prince and let him squander his money here instead. After all, such a big customer like the thirteenth prince was rarely seen, even to them.

Among the expenses, the little tiger race girl he had bought for 50,000 gold coins, which constituted for the majority of his expenses. It was said that, during this time, there was a big shot who had the aforementioned special hobby, and was raising the price against the little thirteenth prince. Thus causing the price of the little tiger race girl to reach 50,000 gold coins. At this time, this was the highest price reached in the auction and the second highest price was merely just 20,000 gold coins for a very beautiful

half elf.

It could be said that, as before, at this time, the big shot was very angry and wanted to look at just who in the hell was going against him, and the result obviously caused him to be stunned. No matter who it was, they would have the same expression as him, because this was just too unexpected.

How was this even buying a female companion? This should instead be called buying a playmate.

Forget about it, don't try to argue with a child. If word was to spread, it wouldn't be good for my reputation, the big shot comforted himself. To speak the truth, if he were to continue fighting against a little child for a little female slave, this matter would surely be spread around by others and at that time, his reputation would surely go down the drain.

It's just that, he did not know that the identity of this little child was that of the little thirteenth prince and for the past few days, his disappearance had caused the whole city to be in an uproar. Therefore, the matter of him fighting against the little thirteenth prince for a little female slave was still known by everyone in the end.

And many people said to him, I did not think that you were this type of person...

There was also another matter which was that, even if this big shot was to continue increasing the price, the little thirteenth

prince would still match it, as his sole motive was to squander money. He could care less about how much money he had brought, and in fact, he really didn't know how much he actually had on him.

At this point, the disappearance incident had concluded and what was left behind was a restless aftermath.

Chapter 9 – Legend

“Pfff……What?! Your son was at a brothel for the past three days? Hey hey, he’s just five years old right? Isn’t his speed of growth a bit too fast?” These words came from the mouth of the country’s ruler. When the emperor found out of this matter, even he himself was not able to resist from bursting out in laughter.

Even the country’s ruler was like this, let alone others. Right now, the whole imperial capital must of found out about the little thirteenth prince’s glorious accomplishment. Visiting a brothel at the age of five, this was definitely something that no one had ever accomplished before.

Right now, the whole imperial capital, and even people across the empire, were talking about how the little thirteenth prince went to the Romantic Floor to have a drinking party with female entertainers and how the little thirteenth prince raised the price against another person to buy a female slave.

……

After this happened, there was one more little girl at the side of the little thirteenth prince, and it was precisely the little tiger girl which the little thirteenth prince had bought. Originally, Long An Qi had wanted to find a servant girl whose age was similar to the little thirteenth prince, so that while taking care of the little thirteenth prince, the servant girl could also play with the little thirteenth prince.

The little tiger girl seemed to understand reason and she knew that her being able to avoid suffering and humiliation was all thanks to this somewhat silly little thirteenth prince. Though she also knew that the little thirteenth prince did not sincerely help her, but the fact was still that it was indeed that the little thirteenth prince had saved her out from the pit of fire

As someone who belonged to the tiger race, it was tradition to repay kindness with kindness. Even if it was just a tiny bit of kindness, they would still repay it back in a larger manner. Of course, if someone was to offend them, they would definitely seek revenge against that person.

Therefore, the little tiger girl was really fond of taking care of the little thirteenth prince, but towards the other people of the human race she did not have any favorable impression at all, as after all, it was the humans that had captured her.

Henceforth, there was an additional little tiger servant girl in the Ye Family, and the little thirteenth prince himself would also have a childhood friend, who was both his servant girl and playmate.

Many years later, Long An Qi kept flaunting about how wise her own decision was.

However, at that time, the little thirteenth prince did not agree with this point at all, and said that he wanted to send the little tiger girl back home, since only this way would he be able to be called a thoroughly prodigal son. Thus, Long An Qi unhappily gave him a good lesson.

It was not that Long An Qi was unwilling to part with 50,000 gold coins. For her, this amount wasn't anything much and the money was also originally the little thirteenth prince's pocket money. It was just that, she felt that the little tiger girl was perhaps an arrangement by god to accompany her son.

Regarding this, the little thirteenth prince did not say anything, after all, he did not really have any objections and had very little knowledge about most matter. To suddenly have one more playmate to play with him, he was of course very happy about it.

That's right, the little tiger girl hasn't been introduced yet. Her name was Tai Ya and as for which branch she belonged too, she did not say anything and no one went to probe around. Actually, even if she had said her own name, as far as the little thirteenth prince was concerned, it was all the same because the only way he would address Tai Ya was – Tigress.

There was also another point which was that tigress' age was approximately a year older than the little thirteenth prince. It was just that, her body shape was somewhat petite and thus it looked as if she was more or less the same age as the little thirteenth prince. After growing up, she may even be much smaller than the little thirteenth prince.

Don't think that the people of the tiger race would all have a tough and stocky build, there was still a group of the female tigers who were very petite. Of course, this group belonged to a exceedingly rare portion and it just so happens that this tigress was one them.

……

“Little brother, is it true that Romanic Floor is really that fun? Let’s go together next time.” Little Lan Yu excitedly and quietly said to the little thirteenth prince.

“Yep, very fun. Cannot go, mom said that I cannot go.” Little thirteenth prince nodded his face and then shook head.

“We will go secretly. It will be alright as long as mom doesn’t know about it.” Little Lan Yu said softly.

“? ? Is it really alright? I will go and ask mom about it.” Little thirteenth prince brought along his doubts and ran to ask Long An Qi about it. As for little Lan Yu, upon seeing this situation and seeing that she could not stop him, she decided to run away.

“Ye Lan Yu! Stop right where you are!!” Long An Qi’s roaring voice resonated through the entire heaven and earth.

“Mom, I was only joking about it. Ye Lang, you little scoundrel, next time I won’t bring you around to play.”

……

In the next few months, the little thirteenth prince was still going out every few days to be prodigal. Of course, before going

out, he would always ask Long An Qi for a bit of pocket money and Long An Qi would always say that there would be no next time but she would still give him pocket money every time.

Originally, the little thirteenth prince was prohibited from going out, but later on, Long An Qi decided to just let him go out and not stop him anymore. The reason for suddenly letting the little thirteenth prince leave was not because Long An Qi had suddenly became convinced to let him go, but it was instead that she had no choice.

Ever since the first disappearance, although the little thirteenth prince had been prohibited from going out, and the entire Ye Residence had been on high alert to prevent the same matter from happening, and therefore according to logic, the little thirteenth prince should not have been able to go out anymore.

But what was strange was that, the little thirteenth prince still nonetheless suddenly disappeared while playing, and it was also under the situation that the entire family knew that he was going to disappear. The methods which he exploited to go out were also very interesting.

All of these methods were ones that normal people would usually overlook and perhaps, only from the little thirteenth prince's perspective would one be able to think of such methods. After the little thirteenth prince told Long An Qi about it, it only made Long An Qi open her mouth wide, as she was extremely astonished.

Afterwards, Long An Qi was no longer astonished and was only curious as to why the little thirteenth prince had so many methods. Even if a person was exceptionally intelligent, it was very hard to have such an ability to strategize. So, how was a child whose intelligence was so low able to come up with such methods?

Regarding this matter, not only did it make Long An Qi feel strange, even the entire Ye Family felt it was too strange. They even suspected that this little thirteenth prince was acting like a fool but the fact was that it was also not possible.

As he was like this since he was very young. If one were to say that he was acting, it also meant that he was acting like this since he was small. Was this even possible? Was there a need for it?

Also, some things can simply not be acted out, and it may only be possible for a short period of time. Even if he had exceptional acting skills, even if he had exceptional shrewdness, it was also not possible for there to be such a loophole, such that even his own parents would not be aware of it.

The only explanation was that the little thirteenth prince's intelligence was only low in some places and in other places, he was better than normal people. If he would have been able to grow up like a normal person, then he would be just like the previous rumors, he would have truly become god's child and a legend.

This matter made the bodyguards of the Ye Residence to grumble, and in their heart, they were also beginning to resent the little thirteenth prince because he caused them to be reprimanded every few days.

However, this matter also made them become elite bodyguards, as their vigilance had reached a very high degree which was unprecedented. It was to the extent that afterwards, the Ye Residence's defense capability exceeded everyone's imagination, and when compared even the imperial palace was somewhat lacking.

Once, there was a secret agent, a very legendary secret agent. A secret agent who was able to go into every country with ease and his traces had never been discovered by others. Even going into the imperial palace of the three big empires was just as simple as going back home. He could be said to be a legend in the world of secret agents.

However in the end, he fell into the hands of the Ye Family. During the time, he was carrying out a mission to spy on the Ye Family, when he was caught by a bodyguard. At the time, he thought that the guard who caught him was definitely an elite of all the elites, if not, how would a normal guard be able to catch him. It was just that, the outcome made him feet very depressed as the guard was just a very ordinary guard in the Ye Residence.

What made him even more depressed was that, when he asked the guard how he was able to discover him, the guard's answer was: "This method of yours had already been used by the thirteenth prince when he was young. You are too inexperienced."

"..."

Chapter 10 – Fish Ball Thick Noodles

Time quickly flowed and with a glance, five years had already passed.

On an afternoon where the sun shined brightly. There was a street which seemed to be very tranquil, and the people on this street walked with all kinds of different postures.

Right at that moment a voice rang out, causing the scene which had appeared to be very common to turn into something completely different. Everyone's eyes started to shine and afterwards started to flare up.

"The Ye Family's thirteenth prince is here. He is going to be prodigal and squander money at the Elegant Smile Pavilion. The seats are limited, those who want to go, quickly go now!"

"Ah, the thirteenth prince is going to be prodigal again."

"Elegant Smile Pavilion, I have never been to such a high grade place before."

"Hahaha, I want to eat and drink well today……"

"……"

In a very short period of time, everyone on the entire street

began to throw aside anything that they had to do and ran towards the spot where the most luxurious restaurant, Elegant Smile Pavilion, was located, and at the same time letting out all kinds of different cheers.

At this time, all of them knew one thing, and it was that although the Ye Family's thirteenth prince would squander money, he would not specially squander money for others. If you were not able to grab a seat, he would not specially ask someone to arrange more seats.

Thus, right now, if one wants to enjoy this free lunch, they would have to snatch a seat for oneself. This caused everyone to run with perhaps the fastest speed they had ever reached in their entire life. Some even wished that they could grow 2 more legs to run faster with.

About the matters regarding the Ye Family's thirteenth prince, everyone in the imperial capital already clearly knew about them. They knew that the thirteenth prince was only squandering money because he wants to be a prodigal son, and towards these actions, the Ye Family didn't restrict him at all, allowing him to squander money in any which way he wanted.

Someone roughly estimated that the amount of money that the thirteenth prince had already spent in the past few years, was at least around a million gold coins. This amount was already enough to allow a family to be prosperous for a few generations. Only the Ye Family would have the financial ability to allow the thirteenth prince to squander this much money in such a reckless manner.

It was just that it was very strange as to why the Ye Family would indulge the thirteenth prince in his goal of squandering money to become a prodigal son. Was it merely because of his specialness? Everyone was very curious about this matter but as time passed, they started to slowly become accustomed to the thirteenth prince's practices, and forgot to ponder over this matter.

"Apologies, our store currently has no more seats available." As someone rushed toward the Elegant Smile Pavilion, they were blocked outside by the restaurant's assistant. It's not that the Elegant Smile Pavilion didn't want to earn more money, it's just that they had no choice as there was simply no empty seats left in the restaurant.

"Fuck! Why don't you guys expand your place a bit, so quick and there is already no space!!" Some people who were unwilling to resign to fate started to curse loudly.

"Buddy, our place is already big enough. In the imperial capital, amongst all the restaurants in the east city district, our place is already the biggest. It's just that, no matter how big our restaurant is, it still isn't big enough for all of you people. Our restaurant is not the public square." Said the assistant.

At this time, within the restaurant, at a seat near the railing of the second floor, where one would be able to view the entire restaurant, there was a little noble child who was about ten years old, along with a very cute tiger race girl.

"Tigress, what are they doing?" The noble little child looked at the lively scene downstairs while holding the restaurant's menu

and asked while feeling somewhat puzzled.

“Humph, what they are doing is that they want to take advantage of you. Young master, can’t you just not squander money, and not be a prodigal son?” the little tiger girl said somewhat helplessly. Regarding this question, she had already asked it more times than she could remember, and the answer she got was basically always the same.

“Cannot. My occupation is to be prodigal. I want to squander money, I want to be a prodigal son.” The noble little boy said very seriously and solemnly. Perhaps, the most serious and solemn words he had said in his entire life would be those words.

“I really don’t know what to do with you.” the little tiger girl shook her head, and afterwards started to think about how to help cut down on the amount of money her own young master squanders. Although she could not prevent him from squandering money and be a prodigal son, she could still at the very least help him squander less money.

These past few years, it has always been this little tiger girl at the side controlling the noble little prince’s money squandering. If not, the amount of money he squandered would have been much more, and it could be said to be several times more than the amount he had already spent.

“Time to order the dishes already. Waiter, give me a bowl of fish ball thick noodles.” The noble little boy straightforwardly ordered a type of noodle which he liked a lot. This was also a dish which the little tiger girl would often make for him to eat.

The little tiger girl seemed to really like to eat fish, and those who didn't know, may have even thought that she was from the cat race.

The waiter remained silent for a while and then said: "There are no thick noodles."

This was a high grade place, and food considered to be ordinary couldn't be found here. At the same time, the waiter didn't want to let this noble little prince eat any ordinary food, since if they did, it would be hard for them to make a large profit.

This waiter's decision was also supported by the restaurant's boss. The boss wanted to ruthlessly devour this fat goat which was the Ye Family's thirteenth prince. It was just that, no matter what, he would never have thought that just because of his moment of greed, he would have actually brought forth a consequence which would lead to his downfall.

Of course, within all of this, there was also a good reason, which was that the boss had felt that such a high grade place like this should not offer such low grade goods to the thirteenth prince.

The little prince looked at the menu and said: "Er, give me a bowl of fish ball congee then."

The waiter remained silent for a while again and said: "There is

no fish ball.”

The little prince said: “Er, give me cow belly thick noodles then.”

“……, don’t have thick noodles.”

“Give me a bowl of fish ball oil noodles then.”

“……, don’t have fish ball.”

“Why does this place have nothing at all? Still saying they are a high grade restaurant……Give me cuttlefish ball thick noodles then.”

Everyone was blushing with shame, how could this place be called a place with nothing at all? This was your own problem. This Ye Family’s thirteenth prince’s brain indeed was a bit different.

“Don’t have Thick noodles!!” The waiter already felt like crying.

“Don’t have again? Give me a bowl of fish ball rice-flour noodles then.”

“Don’t have fish ball!!” Just kill me.

The little tiger girl was unable to bear it anymore and said:

“Young master, their fish ball and thick noodles are out of stock already. This means that, they don’t have any combination that includes either fish ball or thick noodles.”

The thirteenth prince said: “Oh, don’t have any combinations……Then give me just fish ball only.”

“Boom!”, everyone fell down……

“Don’t have fish ball!!!”

“What about thick noodles then?”

The waiter immediately jumped down from the second floor and landed on the ground below, not moving at all.

“What happened to him? The staircase is at that side, there is no staircase here.” the Ye Family thirteenth prince looked at the waiter on the ground and said very slowly.

“Young master……” the little tiger girl shook her head and smiled helplessly.

“Tigress, there is nothing here at all. Let’s change place instead, let’s not come to this type of place anymore.” the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince stood up and casually threw a few gold coins for tea money and walked downstairs.

Of course, from the little tiger girl's perspective, this amount of tea money was just too much. She quickly took out a copper coin and replaced it with the gold coins on the table. This was something which she often needed to do.

"Going already???"

Seeing that the little prince was preparing to leave, everyone who was prepared to eat for free was dumbfounded. If this little prince were to leave, then does it mean that we have to pay for our meals with our own money?

"Thirteenth prince……" Someone let out a voice for a reminder, hoping that the little prince would stay or at least leave some money.

"You guys eat slowly, you don't have to send me off." The little prince said with manners.

"Young master, let's go." Seeing this situation, the little tiger girl immediately pulled the little prince and left quickly, because she knew what those people wanted. She also knew that her own young master was obtuse and would definitely not think, and he would actually squander money to pay for the meals of others.

Chapter 11 – Me And Wife's Birthday

Seeing the tiger girl pulling the little prince along and disappearing from the doorway, everyone was dumbfounded for a moment before starting to miserably shriek one by one, because the amount of dishes that they had just ordered already greatly exceeded what they could afford. Eating this meal would for sure cause them to become poor.

Some were instead rejoicing that they had still not ordered any food and thus quickly stood up and left the restaurant. In just a short while, a stream of people started to crowd towards the doorway. Just in the same manner as when they first came into the restaurant, entering hurriedly and leaving hurriedly.

As for the people who had already ordered their dishes, upon seeing the hurried stream of people, they suddenly thought of an idea, which was to just leave directly. After all, in any case, the dishes were still not served.

After one person left, another would leave, and very quickly the Elegant Smile Pavilion, which a moment ago was just full of people, became completely empty. Even some people who were originally eating in the restaurant did not pay the bill and took advantage of the stream of people to run away. (GK: Dine and Dash!!)

All those people leaving without paying and adding to those individuals who had already ordered food, although the food was still not served, the kitchen was already making the food, who knows how much money was lost within all this.

For this reason, the boss of the Elegant Smile Pavilion fainted on the floor. He was regretting as to why he had been greedy for those little gains, throwing away a watermelon for a sesame seed.

Regarding these matters, the Ye Family's little thirteenth prince who was the cause of all of it, was completely unaware, and right now he was strolling around with the little tiger girl, seeing if there was anything to buy, anything that could let him squander money. Of course, before this, he randomly looked for a street vendor to eat what he wanted to eat, fish ball thick noodles.

Although he was an extreme money squandering prodigal son, he didn't have even a bit of a noble's arrogance, and so for him eating from a street vendor was something that happened from time to time.

Perhaps it was because he didn't know what arrogance was and didn't understand what the difference between himself and other ordinary people was.

The people at his side would always protect him, not letting him suffer from any harm. Just like the little tiger girl at his side right now, which was also known from his mouth as Tigress. Every time her young master came out to squander, not only did she need to prevent him from being swindled, she also needed to protect his personal safety, not leaving more than half a step away from him at all times.

It has always been like this since they were small, this also helped

make up for the few flaws that the Ye Family's thirteenth prince has, no matter if it was on the aspect of intelligence or on the aspect of martial strength. Over the past five years, Tigress had always been accompanying the little thirteenth prince. At the same time as she needed to play the role of a servant girl, she had also needed to undertake the role of a bodyguard and sometimes, she also needed to play the role of a close relative.

Perhaps, most of the time she existed under the role of a childhood friend, who grew up together, the type of role as an innocent playmate.

On the street, the little thirteenth prince slowly walked in the direction ahead while looking at the great amount of store fronts on both sides, wondering which store to go into to play. And at this exact moment, a signboard above his head suddenly became loose and fell downwards, rushing towards the little thirteenth prince's head.

"Bang!" Tigress suddenly jumped up and with a tornado kick, she kicked away the signboard, following which, she acted like nothing happened and continued talking and walking with the little thirteenth prince.

Similarly, the little thirteenth prince did not know about what had just happened, and in high spirits continued to go and squander money.

Similar situations had already occurred countless times. Of course, it wasn't that anyone was plotting to harm the thirteenth prince on purpose, but it was instead merely coincidental, and

every time something similar occurred, it was always resolved by Tigress, while the little thirteenth prince would never know that something had just occurred. Tigress had also never shouted or said any words, such as be careful or anything, because she felt that there was no need for such things.

“Young master, we have to go back home earlier today. We still have to go to the imperial palace tonight.” Tigress opened her mouth and reminded him.

“I know. Today we have to go to my wife’s place to celebrate our birthday.” The little thirteenth prince said. Right now, when the little thirteenth prince spoke, he seemed to be able to speak in a much better manner than he had previously been able to, not like when in the past he had to think for quite a while before organizing what he wanted to say.

“It’s fine as long as you remember it. Then let’s stroll for another hour before heading back home.” Tigress gave the little thirteenth prince a time limit, and this was also the largest time limit she was able to provide him with.

Wife……

This form of addressing caused Tigress to feel somewhat strange, because she understood the little thirteenth prince the most and she knew that he really didn’t understand what the term wife was.

As for the little thirteenth prince’s wife, it was the empire’s ‘little princess’ which he had an engagement with. Oh, not right, she

wasn't 'little princess' anymore now, because she wasn't the youngest female child, as she already had a younger sister, and it wasn't just one either.

Right now, she was called the seventh princess. To put it simply, she was called the Princess Qi. [Note: This 'Qi' means seven, remember this for the future, because it will be used a lot. The 'Qi' in his mother's name is different.]

As for what was the name of Princess Qi? About this, the little thirteenth prince seemed to not know, and he only knew that she was to be his future wife. Of course, this was what he was told to by others.

Because Princess Qi was born on the same day and date as the little thirteenth prince, therefore both of their birthdays had always been celebrated together. It was just that, the location that the birthday party was to take place in, was decided by taking turns. If this year the celebration was held at the Ye Family Residence, next year it would be at the Imperial Palace and vice versa.

Today just so happens to be his birthday and he had precisely used his birthday as an excuse to come out to ruthlessly squander money. But until now, it seemed that he still hadn't found a place to squander money

"Oh, that's right, since today is my wife's birthday, I will go and buy a birthday present for her. Let's go to the auction house." The

little thirteenth prince suddenly thought of this problem. Tigress and Long An Qi had told him before that, on a girl's birthday, you must always give her a birthday present.

It was just that, he only knew that he had to give her a birthday present, but he did not know what kind of present he should give, and what kind of present a girl would be fond of. Due to this, he did not go to a place such as a jewelry store, clothing store and etc. While instead, he went to the auction house and intended to buy the most expensive item.

This is because, to him, when buying something, one only needs to buy the most expensive one, and it wasn't about choosing the correct one. Also, to him, the auction house was a place that he was very familiar with. Why was he so familiar with the auction house? It was simply because it was a place which he had often come to.

"Thirteenth prince, you have come! Someone, bring the thirteenth prince to the VIP room." When the little thirteenth prince entered the auction house, the personnel in charge immediately appeared in front of him and greeted him passionately.

"Who is this little noble prince? Why does our attendant look at him as if he was looking at his own father?" A new worker, who had obviously just started working here, was surprised and asked.

"That's right, you could said he is our father. This little prince is our auction house's livelihood's biggest supporter. He is the Ye Family's thirteenth prince. Every time he comes to our auction

house, he would always raise the price against others and also one more thing, he has never lost a single time." An 'old man' answered.

"Never even lost once? How could this be possible? Could it be that no one dares to 'fight' with him?" The new worker asked again.

"It's not that they dare not fight with him, it's just that no one was able to successfully 'fight' with him. The thing that this little prince wants, he would never give up on it. No matter how high of a price you raise, he would still raise a price higher than your's."

"If it's like this, as long as someone keeps on raising the price against him, won't we get filthy rich?"

"Your thinking is still too young. Just who is he? He is the Ye Family's thirteenth prince. If someone was to purposely raise against him, it would definitely offend the Ye Family. Although the Ye Family can't do anything about this little prince, it doesn't mean that they can't do anything to other people. Of course, others can still 'fight' with him for a while, as long as it's not too much over the limit."

"Oh, that is true indeed."

Chapter 12 – With The Purpose Of Squandering Money

When the little thirteenth prince entered the auction house, the auction had already been halfway through. The auction would of course not wait for him. Leaving the point aside that they didn't know when the little thirteenth prince would come, and even if they did know, they wouldn't wait for him, as they had their own regulations.

However, the majority of the items auctioned at the beginning of the of the auction were common and lower in quality. The majority of the good stuff was kept for the later part of the auction, and the best ones were only revealed at the end.

After many items were auctioned, the little thirteenth prince finally started to move as he raised his plate and bid. As soon he shouted a price, everyone immediately stopped bidding, and in the end, the item was smoothly obtained.

This was not because the price he bid was high, but it was because this item was not very important and no one wanted to offend him. At the very least, they would not bid against him over this kind of thing.

Sometimes, there were also indeed advantages for being a prodigal son where one would be able to take such some small advantages.

It was just that, the problem lied in –

“Young master, what are you buying this for? You are not intending to give this as a present to Princess Qi right?” Tigress frowned and asked.

This auction item was a sword, a decorative sword. Although this sword had some historical value, for a martial artist it was completely useless, which in other words also meant that this sword had no practical value at all.

This kind of decorative sword, usually only a prince would wear it on his belt as an accessory for them to look cool, and it was not something which noble young ladies or madams would bring along with them. Perhaps, some noble young ladies who had some practice in martial arts would bring along the decorative sword, but Princess Qi was a magician.

“Oh, that’s not it. This sword is bought for myself to play with. How can such a cheap thing be given to my wife as a present. I will buy a much better present later on.” The little thirteenth prince said while shaking his head. And the meaning behind the words “much better” that he had just spoken of, actually just meant, more expensive.

Numerous amounts of auction goods passed again and within all of them, the little thirteenth prince himself had also bid for a few. However, the little thirteenth prince’s bidding was due to it being fun and the items which he had bought, they were either strange magic transmission devices, or they would be magic scrolls which he would use as fireworks to play with.

Magic scrolls, and similar things, there isn't much of a need to explain what they are, as there is very little to explain. Though one point that should be made, is that in the entire continent, the manufacturing of magic scrolls was not easy and the materials costs were also very expensive, therefore magic scrolls were very expensive and luxurious.

And all these expensive and luxurious items were instead to be used as fireworks by the little thirteenth prince, to look at when he has nothing to do. This was indeed luxurious and prodigal enough. However, to speak the truth, the effect of magic was indeed much more gorgeous when compared to normal fireworks.

"Right now, it is time for the last three auction goods for our auction, which is also our entire auction's focal point. Firstly, this first item on display is the Moon God Laurel Crown which was spoken of in the legends. This laurel crown was Great Emperor Xi Si's present to his most beloved empress. It was the heart's blood crystallization of close to a hundred craftsman. And on top of the laurel crown, it also currently has the largest sapphire presently known. Now, the starting price will be at 50,000 gold coin. For those who are interested in it, please start bidding." The auctioneer familiarly introduced the item for a while and immediately went into the auction sequence.

"Young master, this one is not bad. You can give this as a present to Princess Qi." Although Tigress felt that this item was a bit too expensive, but up till now, this was the best choice.

It was just that, she instead found that, the little thirteenth prince seemed to not have much of an interest in it and totally had

no intent of bidding.

“Oh, is this item good? Let’s buy it then, 100,000……” The little thirteenth prince said casually. From this sentence, it was clearly told to everyone that, if Tigress didn’t remind him, he would absolutely not know that this item was an item which girls would like a lot.

“The Ye Family’s thirteenth prince bid 100,000 already, is there anyone higher than him? 100,000 one time……”

“110,000!” Due to the worth of this Moon God Laurel Crown being more than 100,000, there were still many people continuing to bid. Unless the amount of the bid exceeded that of the item’s worth, there would still be a lot of people bidding.

“120,000.” The little thirteenth prince did not think at all and just immediately bid once again.

“150,000!” That person continued shouting out a higher price and not out of everyone’s expectation, just after that person finished calling out a higher price, the little thirteenth prince’s voice once again rang out.

“160,000.”

“……, 170,000……”

“180,000.”

“……”

In the end, with an unusually high price of 180,000 gold coins, the little thirteenth prince successfully bought the Moon God Laurel Crown. However, for the little thirteenth prince, the more expensive it was, the better it was.

The next auction good, which was also the second last item of the auction, was a sword. And this time, it wasn’t for decorative use, but it was instead a high quality sword which was forged by a present age weapons master. This sword was a weapon which was the dreams of most swordsmen.

When everyone was currently shouting out a high price time and time again, the little thirteenth prince however had no reaction or movement at all. It wasn’t that he was waiting for the last person to bid before bidding, but it was instead just that, he was not interested in the sword at all.

“Things like fighting and killing isn’t suited for a prodigal son like me. This type of weapon is useless for me.” thought the little thirteenth prince.

“The last auction good……This item belongs to a hidden auction good which is this box. The starting price is 100,000 gold coins.” When the auctioneer was introducing the item, he was obviously lacking confidence.

A hidden auction was also a type of auction, and there were many types. In some cases, it was in the situation where the auction house knew what the item was being auctioned. While in other cases, just like the one right now, even the auction house didn't know what the item being auctioned off was.

It was just that, in the past, even if they didn't know what the item being auctioned off was, there would still be more or less some hints, and at the very least, they would know how much the item itself was worth.

Though this time, someone auctioned this box and did not reveal any information about it at all, straightforwardly requesting for a starting price of 100,000 gold coins. Right after the person who auctioned the box finished paying enough for the service fee, he no longer paid any more attention to it.

No matter how the auction house investigated, they were still unable to find out what the item being auctioned off was. It was just that, since the customer had already paid for the service fee, they could only auction the item off like this.

The problem was that, an auction item like this, how many people would even have the courage to buy it? 100,000 gold coins, if the item inside the box was not worth that much, what would the person who bid on it do then?

Therefore, the auctioneer did not have any confidence and felt that no one would bid for this item.

“100,000 gold coins? What is the item inside the box?” Someone started asking questions. After all, for a box on which there was very little information, it would be very hard for someone to make a firm resolution to buy it.

“As for what was specifically placed within the box, we ourselves don’t know about it. We can only say that, those who are willing to take risks can try to buy it and perhaps, there may be an item worth more than 100,000 gold coins in it. And if there isn’t anything of worth in the box, our auction house will not be responsible for it.” Said the auctioneer. He was also reminding his own customers that they should not take risks rashly, but of course, the most important part was still the final sentence – even if the buy goes wrong, they would not be responsible for it.

Perhaps, some people may not be able to understand why there would be a situation like this. But actually, this was just one of the existing rules, just that very few people would use this rule. After all, no one would be willing to take the risk and buy such a mysterious item.

At the same time, the more information there was about the hidden auction good, the more the amount of people willing to bid for it. After all, hidden auctions like this one rarely occur, but instead, the more normal hidden auctions, with more information, would occur more often.

Of course, there were no lack of people who would appear with special motives and carry out hidden auctions. It was just that, more or less, they would reveal a bit of information about the item, and the information given out must absolutely not be fake. During

the time when carrying out a transaction with the auction house, the auction house would confirm this point.

It was just that, this item was just too particular. Nothing was said about it, and the price was straightforwardly starting from 100,000 gold coins. One doesn't even need to talk about the situation surrounding the item, just the starting price alone of 100,000 gold coins, was something which was rarely seen. At this kind of level, it was already basically a national treasure.

This situation made everyone feel very curious, and at the same time, it also caused them to have the mindset of just observing.

At this time, when everyone present, including the auctioneer, thought that there would be no one bidding for this item, a sound suddenly rang out, letting everyone at the same time feel that it was unexpected but that it also made sense.

If it was someone else, everyone would be surprised. But if it is this person, everyone instead felt that it was normal, and within everyone present, only this person would bid on such a strange box.

This is because this person was basically a prodigal son. A complete and thorough prodigal son whose purpose was to squander money. This person was indeed our little thirteenth prince.

"100,000!"

Chapter 13 – Professional Prodigal Son

Everyone became silent and no one increased the bidding price, unless that person purposely wanted to offend the thirteenth prince, or knew how much the item inside the box was actually worth.

The auctioneer was bewildered for a while and immediately said: “100 000, Ye Family’s thirteenth prince has bid 100 000, is there anyone who is going to bid higher? 100 000 going once……”

Very quickly, the auctioneer finished counting down, unusually fast this time around. This situation was completely different compared to regular auctions, where shouting ‘going once’ would drag on up to a few minutes time.

This was very normal. After all, everyone knew that it was the Ye Family’s prodigal son, thirteenth prince, who bid for that item, making it very hard to find another person who would bid, thus there was no bidding competition at all.

In fact, everyone was very curious as to what was hidden within the box as they were holding their breath in anticipation. The little thirteenth prince however hurriedly left the auction house after paying the money, leaving behind many disappointed faces.

To leave so promptly, could it be that the item hidden within the box was a treasure? Everyone was suspecting this, but if they were to hear the following conversation, they would understand that it was totally different.

“Please go to the Ye Residence!” After flagging down a rental carriage, Tigress looked at the box within her hand and asked: “Young master, do you know what is inside the box?”

Although she felt that the answer she would get from her young master would make her feel very helpless, she still wasn’t able to bear with her curiosity and asked her young master who stood next to her.

“Don’t know.” As expected, the little prodigal son shook his head and answered.

“……, don’t know but you still bid 100,000?” Tigress shook her head helplessly before placing the item inside her space pouch.

Although this little prodigal son also had a pretty good space ring with him, his ring was actually very spacious and empty, almost having nothing in it, since most of his things were safely kept by Tigress instead.

This was not for no reason. The thirteenth prince did not care whether the things he bought could be used by him or not. He also wasn’t really clear about the functional use of the items. But Tigress was different, if she didn’t know, she would go to learn and understand about it. Thus, placing the things that the little thirteenth prince bought inside her space pouch, Tigress would allow them to exhibit the functional use of the items.

There was also one more point, which was that even if the things

were left with Tigress, it was the same as being left with this little prodigal son, since both of them were basically inseparable, never leaving each other's side, just like a couple. Err, wrong, it should be a pair of master and servant.

"I am a professional prodigal son. Other prodigal sons would only pick the things that they liked, or pick those which have value. I am different from them, I don't care whether I like it or not, I don't care whether if there is any value. I will be prodigal when I want to be prodigal, squander money when I want to squander money." Little prodigal son said very solemnly, his tone even having a little bit of despise, as if he was despising those so called prodigal sons.

"Sigh……I knew you would be like this this. Every time when it is something like this, the words you say would only be a little bit different. Could it be that you were born to just squander money and be prodigal?" Tigress felt even more helpless, and at the same time, she also felt very strange about one point, which was that her young master was very obtuse with everything, and even when speaking he would be somewhat unclear too.

But every time when it was about being prodigal, the way he spoke would be tidy and clear, and the logic would always be distorted logic, making people roll their eyes.

Since this little prodigal son did not know what was inside the box, then what was he hurrying for? This was of course because he had to go back home before going to the imperial palace to attend his and his "wife's" birthday party.

Just now when he was at the auction house, the time had already passed for one hour and a half, reaching the limit of the time he had to go back home. If he still did not return home by then, his parents would surely send someone to fetch him.

“Little bastard, why did you only come back now? Didn’t I tell you that you have to be home earlier today? Don’t say anything, quickly get into the carriage. Tai Ya, help him change his clothes in the carriage.” Ye Family’s biggest prodigal son reached the gate of the Ye Residence, and just after coming down from the carriage, his ear was immediately pinched by someone and pulled into a luxurious carriage, which was already waiting at the side.

“Mom, auaaaa……” Little prodigal son shouted painfully. The person who pinched his ear wasn’t just anyone, but was indeed Long An Qi who was waiting at the gate for him. She was one of the only two people who would do something like this to him.

Why’ the only two people’? That’s of course because there were two people. But the second wasn’t his father, but his bigger sister, Ye Lan Yu.

“Hahaha, serves you right, who told you to run away while I was not paying attention.” Ye Lan Yu said while clapping with her small hands, looking as if she was venting her anger.

“I didn’t ah?” Little prodigal son shook his head, denying Ye Lan Yu’s accusation.

“Still say you didn’t, didn’t I tell you to go and play together with

me.” Ye Lan Yu said with slight anger.

“Yep, you did say that.” Little prodigal son nodded his head and said slowly.

“Then you still say you didn’t!” Ye Lan Yu used her hand to knock on the little prodigal’s forehead.

“But I didn’t agree that I would go and play together with you!”

“……” Ye Lan Yu remained silent.

“I don’t like to go and take a stroll around the streets with you. You would always dress me up into your appearance.” The little prodigal son continued talking, revealing the reason why he didn’t like to go out together with Ye Lan Yu.

“……” Ye Lan Yu remained even more silent.

Is it that you sort of don’t understand what happened? Actually, it was very simple. Our little thirteenth prince saying that he was dressed up into Ye Lan Yu’s appearance, did not mean disguising himself as Ye Lan Yu, but instead he was dressed into the same style as her. Simply said, it was dressing him up as a girl.

At that time, when our little thirteenth prince was still young, his eyes were bright and clear, while his skin was meticulously

white. When he was dressed up as a girl, it could be said that he was capable of overturning an entire city. Of course, this was an exaggeration, but when the little thirteenth prince dressed up as a girl, he was indeed very cute.

After all, he was just a child who was still not past the age of 10. Even if it was changed to another person, as long as he was similarly dressed up by Ye Lan Yu, that person would probably be more or less look just like the little thirteenth prince.

“Xiao Yu, you only have yourself to blame for this. Right now, even little brother is starting to be afraid of you.” At the side, a little lady who was beautiful and had a sort of gentleness attached to her laughed.

“Second sis, you dare to laugh at me. At that time you were also involved in it. If I remember correctly, the idea was even proposed by you.” Ye Lan Yu said unhappily. She still remembered the time when she let her little brother try out her clothes, it was her own second sis who said that their little brother looked very cute, and if he were to dress up a bit, they would have another little sister.

“I did?” Second sister pretended to know nothing about it.

“Humph!”

“Stop chattering already. Set out, go to the imperial palace.” Ye Cheng Tian waved his hands, breaking off his daughter’s conversation while declaring to set out.

Inside the carriage, when Ye Lan Yu was looking at Tigress and Long An Qi helping the little thirteenth prince change his clothes, she once again suggested to let him wear her evening dress for a while. Of course, the result was that she was immediately knocked on the head by Long An Qi.

At the side, the little thirteenth prince had a pitying expression while looking at Ye Lan Yu and used his hand to stroke on the spot where Ye Lan Yu was hit. Towards this big sister of his, he was very caring about her.

Although Ye Lan Yu had often teased and deceived her own little brother, it couldn't be denied that she loved her little brother very dearly and would not allow anyone to bully him.

"Little brother, how about when we go back home, you wear this for me to take a look……" Ye Lan Yu enticed.

"Don't want!" The little thirteenth prince immediately ran to the other side, hiding beside Long An Qi, making Ye Lan Yu only be able to look, not daring to move..

"……"

Chapter 14 – Alchemy Notebook

At night, within one of the palaces in the Imperial Palace, the members of the Imperial Household and Ye Family were currently celebrating the birthday of the two little boy and girl. This party belonged to a private type of party, therefore the amount of people invited here were not many. However, everyone here were all heavyweight rank characters in the empire.

Yep, heavyweight rank. They just had to randomly move a bit, and it would cause the entire empire to tremble for a while.

Same as the past years, the little prodigal son started his prodigal behavior at the party, bringing along Princess Qi and Tigress to a wide space to set off his ‘fireworks’.

Suddenly, eight fire dragon flew upwards into the sky above the wide square, fluttering around in the sky and illuminating the sky and earth in the vicinity. The appearance of the fire dragons soaring up towards the sky and fluttering around was very magnificent. If one were to merely calculate the quality of the appearance, it could be said to be first-rate.

Not only were the people who were nearby the Imperial Palace able to see the fire dragon, the entire imperial capital was able to see it. And a lot of people, other than feeling that it was very beautiful, were also sort of sweating cold sweat.

For those who didn’t know, they may even have thought that something had happened within the Imperial Palace, as why would

a fire dragon like this suddenly appear in the Imperial Palace. And they would have never thought that, this fire dragon was merely because someone was playing with fireworks.

“What the fuck, a grade 8 magic Eight Fire Dragons technique. Fuck, this magic scroll should be worth at least 100,000 gold coins. I had heard before that he was prodigal, but only now do I know that those things that I heard before were just mere trifles.”

In a short while, everyone who was present began to discuss spiritedly, and even Ye Cheng Tian himself also began to frown, as he also felt that this was a bit too over already.

“Eh? Strange, when did we have this?” At this time, Tigress who took out the magic scroll was dazed for a while as she appeared to have never thought that there would be a grade 8 magic scroll here

“The just bought recently, Grade 5 Fire Dragon technique scroll, why did it appear as Eight Dragons?” The little prodigal son said. Although he was somewhat weak in other aspects, his memory was however extremely good.

“This means that we picked up a small advantage and only spent 3000 gold coins for it just now. Just that, right now, no matter what we say, it is useless already.” Tigress sighed. She should have first checked the scroll. This little young master of her would often buy some odd and bizarre stuffs. Don’t even know if it was because similar things would always go together. [She’s implying that her young master is also odd and bizarre, in case you didn’t get it]

“It doesn’t matter anymore. In any case, let’s just set them all up and watch.” The little prodigal son did not feel that it was a pity at all.

“Young master, your present……” Seeing that the Eight Fire Dragons technique, which suddenly appeared, had attracted everyone’s attention, Tigress took advantage of the situation to let the little prodigal son give the present he bought.

“That’s right, wife, this is the present which I bought for you today. 180,000 gold coins, this is the most expensive thing which I had bought till now.” The little prodigal son took over the item from Tigress and immediately passed it over to Princess Qi.

180,000 gold coins. Every member of the Ye Family felt pain for a while, and right now Long An Qi was considering if she should temporarily seal this little bastard’s economic source. It’s just that, every time when she saw this little sweetheart, she would not have the heart to do it at all.

Forget about it, just treat it like I owed him in my past life, it’s fine as long as he is happy.

“What is it?” Princess Qi asked while smiling. Towards this little prodigal son’s address, she completely did not feel whatsoever disgusted at all. If it was changed to another person that were to be engaged with her and that person called her wife, she would surely be disgusted with it. Instead, towards this silly little idiot, she did not feel any dislike whatsoever at all.

And at the same time, Princess Qi also really liked spending time together with the little prodigal son, and both of their relationships were very good. Also, it seemed that the two of them were not opposed towards their engagement at all, and this made a lot of people feel very strange.

Although Princess Qi was not the most outstanding within all the princesses, she was still a beautiful princess who had a lot of people pursuing after her. Her liking the little thirteenth prince made everyone feel extremely unexpected.

Perhaps, it was because her age was still small, and perhaps after she grows up, it would be different by then. However, this were also things for in the future. Right now, she was precisely fond of the little prodigal son having a pure and innocent heart, and thus when she was together with him, she would not have any worries, as there would not be things like fighting and scheming against each other.

If it was an average person, at this time when Princess Qi asked this question, they would say 'You will know once you open it' and perhaps may even say that there would be an unexpected surprise.

But, the little thirteenth prince was not the average person and not only did he say it very straightforwardly, he even actually said some things which he should have not said: "It is a Moon God Laurel Crown. Tigress said that girls would like it."

Speechless…… What you just told her, aren't you telling her that, if Tigress did not tell you to buy it, you might not have bought it.

Princess Qi slightly smiled and after opening and taking a look at it, she passed the Moon God Laurel Crown over to the little thirteenth prince and said: “Since this is given by you to me, I should leave it to you to help me wear it.”

“Oh……” The little thirteenth prince responded with a sound, and after looking at the Moon God Laurel Crown in his hand, he casually placed it on top of Princess Qi’s head. The Moon God Laurel Crown appeared to have a crooked angle feeling when placed.

Princess Qi knew that this would happen and thus slightly adjust the laurel crown on her own and following on asked: “Does it look good?”

“Yep, the sapphire is very big, very good looking.” The little thirteenth prince nodded his head.

“……, I’m asking you if I look good or not.” Princess Qi said helplessly.

“You’re also good looking, much better looking than my big sis.”

“…….”

“Ye Lang, what did you just say?!” Ye Lan Yu suddenly appeared out of nowhere and said while staring at the silly little thirteenth

prince.

“I just said, she looks better than you……”

“You still dare to say it!!”

“Why do I not dare, she’s indeed much better looking than you.”

“Where does she look better than me? Look at her, her chest has no meat at all, her height is not tall at all……” Ye Lan Yu started to criticize Princess Qi. Just that, those points which she said are normal. After all, Princess Qi was just 10 year old and was still in her growth stage. [Remember this folks, this is an important point for the relationship between Princess Qi and Ye Lan Yu, they shall henceforth bicker forever!]

Princess Qi stared at Ye Lan Yu fumingly and solemnly protested against what Ye Lan Yu had said about her: “You are more or less the same too. Bigger than us three years old and still can’t properly see your chest. Your height is also not that tall either.”

“Tigress, is the chest that they are talking about this?” The little thirteenth prince pointed at Tigress’s chest and asked.

“About this……that’s right.” Tigress’ face became red and replied embarrassedly.

“Yep, yep, I had seen before when we showered together. Her chest is only as big as a steamed dumpling.”

“Ye Lang, you little idiot……”

Just when Ye Lan Yu was quarreling endlessly with the little thirteenth prince and others, and others were looking at them while smiling, a news was spread to the ears of the emperor and he let out a loud voice, causing the entire scene to be mixed up temporarily.

“What?! Did you guys confirm that this information is true?” The emperor’s astonished voice transmitted into the entire place, causing everyone’s attention to move onto him, including those little kids too.

“Emperor, what happened?” Ye Cheng Tian asked curiously. He knew that the emperor was the type of person to not panic even if Mount Tai were to collapse in front of him, and no matter how big of a deal the matter was, he would always be able to remain calm. Very rarely would there be matters which would rend him to be astonished like this.

“Just recently, there was an information stating that the notebook of Ban, the great master alchemist had appeared.” The emperor said, seemingly to not have the intention of keeping it a secret at all.

Chapter 15 – The Lucky Prodigal Son

“What? Ban’s alchemy notebook?”

Everyone who knew what kind of object this thing was were all very astonished, now they also understood why the emperor was so astonished. If it was another person who suddenly heard about this, they would also be astonished.

Ban, he was a legendary alchemist thousand years ago. His alchemy skills were so brilliant that it had already surpassed the knowledge of everyone. If one were able to get a hold on his alchemy skills, it would definitely make the nation become much stronger than it is now.

This was almost the same for the modern Earth’s science and technology, where the nation who had the better scientific skills and technologies would become much richer and powerful compared to other nations.

In order to get Ban’s alchemy skills and techniques, who knows how many people had proposed countless attractive conditions? Just that, he had always never replied to anyone. Some even wanted to steal from him, but instead found out that it was totally impossible.

Alchemists always had their own special fighting style. They could use alchemy formations to summon magic elements, and also were able to change some objects within the vicinity. Some could only change the shape while some were even able to change

the material's structure.

A strong alchemist could definitely contend against a magician or martial artist. And normally, alchemists would bring certain alchemy goods with them, causing them to become much harder to deal with.

However, when an alchemist fights, he had to also calculate various kinds of factors and had to accurately draw out the alchemy formation and so on. Therefore, the criteria for an alchemist to be able to contend against magicians and martial artists was very harsh, the general alchemists would at the most learn to be able to at least defend themselves. Advancing to an expert alchemist was very difficult, even within a 100 years an expert alchemist was still hard to come by.

However, if an alchemist was given enough time to prepare beforehand, they could easily blow an expert into mere slag.

"Yes, that's right, the information said that the item is currently within our imperial capital." The emperor nodded his head.

"What? Then right now, the item is in whose hands? No matter how much price we have to spend, we must definitely get it." Said a general who appeared to be brave and fierce. The general's age was not small and he appeared to be the empire's grand marshal.

As the nation's grand marshal, he naturally knew what kind of benefits Ban's alchemy notebook would give to the army. With the alchemy notebook, one could make one or two alchemic magic

transmitter devices with huge formidable might, it would make them be able to sweep everything in front of them during combat.

"About this, when I was told who it was that possessed the alchemy notebook, it also made me feel very astonished." The emperor's expression was somewhat strange as he looked at Ye Cheng Tian at the side.

"????" Ye Cheng Tian did not understand what this strange expression of the emperor meant. And others who didn't know either, thought that the alchemy notebook had fallen into the hands of Ye Family.

"Cheng Tian, since your Ye Family has obtained this alchemy notebook, just take it out. This thing can't be pocketed privately. But at least, in the future we will give you more benefits. The matter about you becoming the family's owner, I will support you to the end." The grand marshal said straightforwardly.

"Uncle Li, if my Ye Family had this alchemy notebook, with my dad's character, wouldn't he have already taken it out to share it with you?" Ye Cheng Tian said helplessly.

This Grand Marshal Li's relationship with Ye Yi could be described with 4 words, very close male friends. The both of them grew up together, stirred trouble together, chased after girls together, traveled around the world together……

Although right now, the both of them had already become grandfather rank characters, they would still always bicker when

they were together, quarrel because of some small things. Of course, this was just the display of how good their relationship was.

“What you said is right too. If you guys had obtained this alchemy notebook, he would have immediately come here today and not hide at home to be affectionate with sister Lian Er.”

Even if no one said anything, Grand Marshal Li would still know that Ye Yi was definitely together with Ruan Lian Er. He also could not understand as to why this old husband and wife could keep on maintaining this kind of state of relationship. As for him, he and his own wife were less affectionate already.

However, Grand Marshal Li did not feel that his degree of love towards his wife was lesser than Ye Yi. Just that, his way was different.

“Cheng Tian, the person who has obtained the alchemy notebook is indeed from your Ye Family. Just that, you guys don’t know about it. Perhaps, even the person himself also doesn’t know about it either.” At this time, the emperor said something which made other people be puzzled.

“??” Ye Cheng Tian looked at the emperor while feeling puzzled, wanting to hear what the emperor would say next.

“Little Ye Lang, come over here for a while, I have a question that I want to ask you about.” The emperor said while waving towards the little prodigal son who was still talking with Ye Lan Yu at the

side. However, the little prodigal son totally did not hear his words, which made him feel depressed for a bit.

However, after the emperor called out for the little prodigal son, everyone started to somewhat understand the situation. Could it be that……

“Emperor, do you have something?” After the little prodigal son was pulled over by Tigress, he asked straightforwardly.

“Little Ye Lang, did you buy a strange box at the auction house today?” The emperor asked while slightly smiling.

“Oh, I have. It was purchased with 100,000 gold coins.” The little prodigal son replied.

“Then do you know what is placed inside the box?” The emperor asked, trying to probe him out.

“Don’t know.” The little prodigal son shook his head.

“It was indeed like this. Since you didn’t know what was inside the box, why did you still buy it?” The emperor asked while feeling somewhat puzzled.

“Because I want to be prodigal.” The little prodigal son explained righteously.

“……”

The members of Ye Family, whether it was the older generation or the younger generation, all held on their forehead with their hand, expressing out an extreme kind of helplessness. They had all guessed that it would be an answer like this.

“He’s this wasteful, why don’t you guys prevent it a bit? Don’t tell me that your Ye Family just has that much money?” Grand Marshal Li said. He had somewhat heard before about this Ye Family’s little prodigal son, but only today did he know that it was to this degree of prodigalness. [Yes, that word exists, wikipedia said so!]

“You think that we don’t want to? It’s just that he likes to be prodigal, we also have no choice. Furthermore, within the things he buys, there would often be odd and bizarre goods whose worth was hard for one to even imagine.” Ye Cheng Tian said somewhat strangely.

That’s right, if it were not for this little prodigal son buying some extremely uncommon valuable objects from time to time, the members of the Ye Family would probably not have allowed him to squander money recklessly. At the least, they would control the amount he squandered, and at the most let him squander only 100,000 gold coins every month.

But, is this called controlling?

“That’s right, I know about this matter too. He seems to have been looked after by the goddess of luck ever since he was little. Take this time for example, he used 100,000 gold coins to buy this box, the worth of which far surpassed the amount he had spent for it. Even if he had spent 1,000,000 for it, it would also have been counted as cheap.” The emperor said.

“Could it be that Ban’s alchemy notebook is within the box? Little Ye Lang, quickly let your Grandfather Li take a look at the box you bought.” Grand Marshal Li said.

“Alright, but……who is Grandfather Li? The little prodigal son nodded his head, but afterwards found out that he seemed to not know who Grandfather Li was.

“……”

“Pfft……”

The people at the side let out a light laugh and then immediately feigned solemnity. Their expression completely denying that he or she had just laughed. And within those people, the emperor seemed to be one of them too.

“Son, your Grandfather Li is him. You had seen him before when you were still young.” Long An Qi resisted laughing and knocked onto the little prodigal son’s head.

“When?” The little prodigal son seemed to still be unable to

recall it.

“When you were a month old.”

“Oh……”

“……”

Chapter 16 – Birthday Present

Grand Marshal Li coughed dryly and said: “let’s not talk about this, Little Ye Lang can you show us the box you bought?”

“Tigress, give the box to him.” The little prodigal son answered generously. Since, he originally wanted to be a prodigal son, it did not matter to him whether he uses it or gives it to someone else as a gift without expecting anything in return.

According to him, why should a prodigal son care about such a thing?

When Grand Marshal Li excitedly took the box, everyone raised their heads and looked towards the box with anticipation. But then a somewhat a depressing matter occurred. What was placed inside the box was another box.

This made everyone think of one thing, which was “Could this box be the kind of box where a box would be placed within a box and the cycle would keep repeating itself until a notebook appeared?”

Thinking about that, if it was just a notebook, how big would it even be? This box to begin with was not that large.

In the end, it was still alright as it seemed that this box was not like that. It was just then that another problem appeared. This box needed certain procedures to be opened, and those procedures were very very difficult.

“What the fuck. This Ban is seriously fucking sick in the mind, making a box to lock his notebook for no good reason. This fellow seriously did not want others to look at his notebook?” Grand Marshal Li immediately opened his mouth and cursed heavily.

That’s right, this box was not an ordinary box, and it was instead a box with a mechanism which Ban spent great efforts to create. These mechanisms needed one to have deep knowledge about alchemy. This was a test for the person who was fated with him. He did not want his own notebook to be seen by ignorant people, and thus to see his notebook, one must have profound understanding of alchemy techniques.

As such, this box was a test used to test others.

Regarding this matter, everyone present easily figured it out and immediately called for the empire’s best alchemists to come and decipher the box. Fortunately, all those individuals were basically in the vicinity.

Due to the presence of this box, which captivated and held everyone’s attention, they had all forgotten about some matters, such as today’s birthday boy and girl. Fortunately, these two children were very magnanimous and did not go to argue about it. Instead, they were just happily playing at the side.

Since they were children after all. It would be best that adults didn’t notice them, so that they could play as much as they liked.

“……You are saying that, you need a period of time to decipher it?” The emperor frowned and asked while feeling somewhat uncertain.

“That’s right your majesty, this box requires very complicated procedures to open it. I’m afraid that, if there’s a mistake in between the procedures, the mechanism inside the box would start and destroy the notebook. Therefore, we need time to slowly study the box.” The alchemists said.

“Hmmm, you’re right. Since it is Ban’s box, it would naturally not be that simple. You guys can slowly study the box. I believe you guys would want to see the item inside much more than me.” The emperor said.

That’s right, the thing within this box was something which all the alchemists wanted to look at. They were much more anxious than everyone else, and wanted to know Alchemist Ban’s knowledge.

“Haha……” All the alchemists started to laugh somewhat foolishly. However, this foolishness instead let other feel that it was a very cute.

“Your majesty, I would like to boldly ask something. Where did this box come from?” After the alchemists finished laughing foolishly, they started to ask about this curiously.

“About this, we would have to thank our little birthday boy, our Ye Family’s little prince. You guys should also go over there and

congratulate him on his birthday." The emperor pointed to the little thirteenth prince who was playing a game, a game which was not known to all in the banquet.

"??" At the beginning, the alchemists did not understood why the little prodigal son would have any relationship with this matter. However, they quickly recalled that it must be that this rumored ultra-prodigal son had bought the box from who knows where. At an earlier time, they had already heard that this little prodigal son's luck was always very mystical.

Bringing up this subject, this matter was indeed a very very lucky one. In fact, in the past few hundred years, this box would appear in some auction house or grocery store from time to time, and the price would always be high to bid.

According to Ban, he was hoping that the person who would inherit his alchemy techniques will be someone with high alchemic techniques, and the people employed by Ban would not reveal any information about the box.

However, once someone gets the box, they would immediately announce it to the whole world, to prevent the fated person from inheriting Ban's alchemist techniques.

Luckily these individuals announced it to the whole world. Otherwise, this box would definitely lie dormant within Tigress's space pouch, with no chance ever to see light again.

For the purpose of expressing their thanks to the little prodigal

son's 'meritorious service', the alchemists came up to congratulate him for his birthday, but they suddenly remembered that they did not have any gift to present him.

As they came here hurriedly, how could they have had any time to prepare a gift? However, someone immediately thought of a good method.

"Little Ye prince, I wish you a happy birthday. I don't have anything good to give you, so I will give you this book instead." An alchemist took out a book and gave it to the little prodigal son. Of course, a book taken out by an alchemist would of course be a book about alchemy.

A book is the source of knowledge. Although giving out a book as a birthday present was not very fancy, however it would not be old-fashioned and no one would also say that it was not suitable either. Moreover, it is ok to give a book to someone, no matter if they were old or young.

When someone began to give a book, the other alchemists started to give out books as well. They would always bring along books and materials about alchemy with them wherever they were, and that also prevented each other from giving the same book to the little thirteenth prince.

These people were the continent's top-notch alchemists. Although they were only giving away books, these books however were very precious, which could only be discovered but could not

be purchased.

Although the little prodigal son did not understood why all those people suddenly came over and gave him books, he still accepted them unrestrainedly.

“This box……let me take a look……” Suddenly, the little prodigal son looked at the box on the alchemist’s hand and made a confused expression.

At this time, towards the little prodigal son’s confused expression, everyone seemed to understand that the little prodigal son was thinking if this box was the previous box.

If it was the request from someone else they would have refused it immediately. However, right now, they knew that the original owner of the box was the little prodigal son. As a result, they passed the box to the little prodigal son hesitatingly, while at the same time telling him to be careful with it.

“What is this thing?” The little prodigal son looked at the box for a while and then asked while pointing to one of the alchemy formations on the box.

“This is a type of defensive alchemy formation which interlocks with the others alchemy formations on the side and covers the whole box. This alchemy formation can help protect the box to stay intact and also at the same time guarantees that others cannot use other types of methods to open this box. This is the first time that I have seen this type of alchemy formation arrangement. As

for what it does, we will have to study it slowly." One of the alchemist replied very professionally.

"Oh……" The little prodigal son looked at the box and replied.

Chapter 17 – Alchemist Genius?

After a short period of time, the alchemists were unable to wait anymore and said: “All right, little Ye prince, we will first take this box to study it, and we’ll stop hindering your and Princess Qi’s birthday celebration.”

“Study the box? For what? Is it fun?” The little prodigal son was very puzzled about this.

“No it’s not fun at all. This is not for playing. We want to open up the box to obtain Ban’s notebook.” The alchemists said solemnly.

“Notebook…are you talking about this book?” A book suddenly appeared within the little prodigal son’s hands.

“Yep, it is exactly this alchemy notebook……EH?! That’s not right……You, you……” The alchemists all pointed at the little prodigal son while their eyes were opened so wide that it was as if their eyes were going to pop out. That was an expression of shock, and they were not able to believe what they saw.

“Ah……” At this moment, everyone’s mouth was widely opened, as they looked at the little prodigal son while being astonished, and they were not able to let out any kind of sound.

“There are still more books, one, two, three, four…… five books, there are five books in the box.” The little prodigal son took out one book after another, and everyone present was still staring blankly in a daze.

“Are you all certain that you guys did not bluff me just now? Is this box really that difficult to open?” The emperor and others were starting to suspect that those alchemists deceived everyone, and that they were not able to open the box because they wanted to be the first ones to have a look at the notebook.

But, everyone present also knew that, this probability was close to zero.

All the alchemists immediately made a solemn vow and denied: “We didn’t, we definitely didn’t. Your majesty, how could we possibly deceive you? This box indeed really requires a lot of skill, requires a lot of difficulty to be able to open it. It’s just that……”

“Just that, why was the little thirteenth prince, a 10 year old child, able to open the box so easily?” The emperor looked at the little prodigal son, with an expression of puzzlement, and oddness.

That’s right, the box which all of these top-notch alchemists were unable to open just a few moments ago, was opened by our little thirteenth prince, and what’s more, it was opened very easily, without any hinderance at all, even to the point that no one was able to notice him opening the box.

This made everyone feel both uncertain and astonished to the point that they even suspected that they had seen wrongly, though the very scene before their eyes was absolutely true.

If it was any other children, they would perhaps say that the

child was a genius. But, the little thirteenth prince was however not even as good as an average person, how could he possibly be a genius.

"Perhaps, he is an alchemist genius." Although they felt that it was impossible, an alchemist still suggested this possibility.

'This is impossible. He has never learnt alchemy before. Such a dangerous thing, we never let him have contact with it." Long An Qi immediately denied this possibility. As a mother, she was clearly aware about the matters of her son, at the very least, she knew about this matter.

"That's right, young master doesn't know alchemy. He has never even looked at an alchemy book before." Tigress at the side also nodded her head.

If it was said that Long An Qi's words alone were not sufficient enough to make others believe that the little thirteenth prince did not know about alchemy, then by adding Tigress's words, it would be more than sufficient to disperse any doubt. After all, everyone knew, that in these past few years, Tigress has always been at the little thirteenth prince's side. Whatever the little thirteenth prince did, who else but Tigress would be most clear about it?

"Since he doesn't know about alchemy, how was he able to open the box, could it be that it was yet another coincidence? This little brat is indeed under the care of the goddess of luck, this is just too mystical." The emperor and the others started to discuss it, and they were only about to use the little thirteenth prince's mystical luck to explain how he was able to open the box.

At this time, Princess Qi opened her mouth and asked: “Ye Lang, how did you open this box?”

When princess Qi asked this question, everyone present suddenly thought; why were they guessing at the side for, isn’t the person involved right in front of them, just ask him directly and clear this whole thing up.

It was just that, everyone was however worried about an issue, which was that, the person involved himself may not necessarily be able to clearly explain how he opened the box.

“What? How did I open it? I just opened it like this ah, what is so difficult about this?” As expected, the little thirteenth prince’s answer was complete nonsense and it did not explain this matter at all.

“Seems like it was just luck, this cannot be explained any other way.” Everyone laughed bitterly and thought to themselves, if this kind of luck appeared, no matter how hard the problem was, it would be of no difficulty to solve.

It was just that, was this really just luck?

“All these alchemy formations, I am certain that I have not seen them before, but why do I have such a familiar feeling to them?” The little prodigal son looked at the alchemy notebook and muttered to himself. Afterwards, he made a decision which caused everyone to go into a daze.

“I want to learn alchemy, I want to take a look at all these books.” After he finished saying that, the little thirteenth prince placed the 5 alchemy notebooks within his space ring and the alchemists at the side were not able to prevent him from doing so, as they had no time to react.

“About this, little Ye prince, could you give the 5 alchemy notebooks you just put in your space ring to us, we still have many books here, we can make an exchange.” The alchemists at the side said while taking out many books. These books were from their own collections, normally they would not be willing to take them out, even if they were begged to do so, but right now, they did not care about them.

After the little Ye prince kept all those books, he said a sentence which made everyone collapse.

“I want all these books, but, I’m not exchanging!”

“……”

All the alchemists wanted to cry but had no tears and looked at the emperor with pleading gazes. Right now, they just hoped that the emperor would help them, and think of a way to get the 5 alchemy notebooks.

Actually, even if they did not ask for help, the emperor would

also think of a way, because he knew that if those 5 alchemy notebooks were to be placed in the hands of the little prodigal son, there would be no effect whatsoever. Only by handing the alchemy notebooks to the Imperial Household's alchemists would it be of any help to the empire.

Finally, after discussing, the little thirteenth prince handed over the alchemy notebooks, however, he only loaned it for 3 days. For 3 days, the alchemists are to write down a copy of the alchemy notebooks.

Don't forget, these alchemy notebooks are only just Ban's notebooks and not profound alchemy goods. So long as they copied down the contents of the notebook, it would be the same as having the original.

This idea was also suggested by our little thirteenth prince. All of them thought too complicated and completely forgot about such a simple solution, this caused everyone to blush with shame.

Sometimes, the key to solving a problem is a very simple solution. It was just that, many people don't try to think in the most simplest terms and only think more and more complicatedly, which in the end causes the problem to become more and more troublesome.

"Little Ye prince, could you first give back the books which we had just given you? We will make a copy for you……" The empire's imperial household's alchemists all asked weakly. Since there was this solution, they of course thought of this aspect.

Letting the little Ye prince take those precious books was indeed a too wasteful. If it was possible to take them back, then of course they would. Right now, they were not able to deal with their own faces, for their treasured books, they were already throwing caution to the wind.

“Can!” The little thirteenth prince answered very straightforwardly, it was just that there was still another sentence after where he just said: “You all must make a copy of every book you guys have for me too!”

“……”

Was this little brat really as the rumors said, a mentally deficient and silly child? Why is it no matter how I look at him, he just doesn’t look like that and instead seems more like a little sly fox, is he pretending?

At this moment, many people were suspecting, however, it was only just for a moment. As they did not believe that a person was able to pretend like this, and moreover pretend since they were an infant.

The actual fact was that, the little thirteenth prince did not pretend at all, it was just that, he seemed to be lacking a certain something which caused him to be weaker in some aspects, but in other aspects, he was however very strong, for example his memory strength and the alchemy which he is going to learn next.

Perhaps this could all be contributed to a certain point, his luck.

Chapter 18 – Cold Medicine (1)

After what happened, other than being a prodigal son, the little thirteenth prince had also become an alchemist. Of course, he was still an apprentice, he did not take any whatsoever examination and was only researching on alchemy at home.

Also, this alchemy had also let him have one more way to be prodigal, as he could now justifiably go and buy alchemy materials. No matter how pricey the alchemy materials were, he would go and buy them.

This situation let many alchemists be envious. Only the Imperial Household's alchemists would get the empire's support, or those small number of alchemists who had those big families' support, the majority of the alchemists were all having a headache because of material problems. Even if they had extremely high alchemy skills, under the situation where they had no materials, everything was of no use at all.

There is a sentence that fits here properly: Even the cleverest housewife cannot cook without rice!

Not sure if the little thirteenth prince really had talent in alchemy or if it was because he had a large capital support, his alchemy was improving in a pretty good pace. This made Ye Cheng Tian and his wife to be very excited and also started to support the little thirteenth prince's prodigal conducts even more.

To them, as long as their son had even a little bit of

accomplishment, no matter how much money they spent was of no matter to them. Things that could be solved using money were totally not a problem at all for them.

Just that, although the little thirteenth prince had gained accomplishments in the alchemy aspect, the peculiar gaze of others instead changed more. This was because he had still not grown up previously, so thus some things were not that clear. But, following with him growing up each and every day, some things would also start to become more clearer.

With the little thirteenth prince's family's power, there should not be many people who would dare to bully him, but when all's said and done, there were still people who would dare to bully him. After all, there were those who were of similar age as him, and at this age it could be said that 'Newborn calfs aren't afraid of the tiger', towards things like background, they would still for the time being neglect about it.

As for others, they belonged to the jealous kind, jealous of the little thirteenth prince. No, right now we should call him thirteenth prince already since he's already not little anymore. Those people were jealous of why the thirteenth prince's life was so good, to be able to be born in Ye Family.

Many people all had this kind of thinking, why was such an idiot able to be born in the Ye Family, wasting such a good condition. If it was them instead who were born in the Ye Family, they would definitely become one of the empire's top character.

This indeed let many people become jealous till they went mad,

and this jealousy would turn into resentment. An ordinary man has no crime but harboring a jade becomes a crime. Ye Family's thirteenth prince was exactly this situation, his identity was a jade. [Basically: People won't harm you if you don't have anything worth coveting, but if you have valuable things, people will covet it and try to harm you.]

Of course, some people were still as before and continued to caringly look after the thirteenth prince, and one of them was Tigress. Tigress right now could also be considered slender and elegant, a beautiful bud whose development had fundamentally been completed. Yep, this was only saying about the primary stage of the development. She still needed to begin the next stage of development, till she reaches maturity.

Beautiful bud, eh, wrong, it's Tigress. Every day, she would basically do the same things. Don't need to say, everyone also knows what those things are as they were basically all things which revolved around our Ye Family's thirteenth prince, which was so lucky that people were jealous of him.

Waking up in the morning, she would first help her young master prepare breakfast, prepare clothes, prepare water for washing the face, prepare……

After she was finished with all those things, the thirteenth prince basically should have already woken up from bed, comfortably served upon by Tigress to wear clothes, wash the face, comb his hair, fix his face, eat breakfast and followed up by sitting at the courtyard, reading books.

Talking about reading books, whatever the book was, the thirteenth prince would read it, however, the books were mainly concentrated in the alchemy aspect. The thirteenth prince himself also did not understand why, but the more he read, the more he felt that he was somewhat familiar with those things, no matter whether it was the alchemy formations, those materials or alchemy compound formulas.

But he would also feel somewhat odd, like those things seemed to also not be things that he knew. But he also he didn't know what the things were that he knew of, and with his personality, the things that he couldn't think of, he would just throw it away at aside. As time passed and he got used to it, he also started to not feel that it was odd anymore.

During the time when the thirteenth prince would read books, Tigress would be practicing martial skills and dou qi at the courtyard. This was the homework that she needed to do every day, and her martial skills and dou qi did not came from the Ye Family, but instead were something she knew since she was young, or perhaps it should be said that, it was something she knew of since she born.

Within the race of beastmen, majority of the races would carry inheritances, and at the moment that they are born, they would know of their race's abilities within their instincts. As for the strong tiger race, their inheritance was basically all dou qi and martial skills.

Of course, those were all generally just the foundations. To improve their performance, they would have to advance their own

martial skills and dou qi, absorbing other's experience.

However, using those as basic skills was actually already very good. The more you practiced, the deeper your foundation would be, and right now Tigress only needed to learn those basic skills. As for other things, she still need not consider for the time being.

As for the ability to protect the thirteenth prince, Tigress had more than enough. Within the same age, her strength could be considered to be very strong. Adding on the tiger race's innate god strength, she was just like a tiger that had grown wings and could deal with the general young experts.

And she also needed to only deal with those people, as other people would not dare to provoke the thirteenth prince. Moreover, even if there really was someone like that, who dared to come and provoke the thirteenth prince, there would naturally also be someone at the same strength to step out and settle the matter.

Actually, the person she needed to be on guard against was still the thirteenth prince himself, as the thirteenth prince would also do some things which would make others feel a headache, for example the matter which was just about to happen.

"Young master, what are you eating?" Tigress suddenly discovered that the thirteenth prince was eating some strange things which appeared to be some medicine pills.

"I'm eating cold medicine." The thirteenth prince answered.

“Did you catch a cold? Did you catch a cold yesterday? I will immediately go and call go for a doctor.” Tigress said nervously.

“Don’t want, I don’t have a cold.” The thirteenth prince immediately shook his head and refused.

“Don’t have cold? Then why did you eat cold medicine?” Tigress asked feeling puzzled. If it was changed to another person, that person would also not understand. Since you don’t have a cold, why would you eat cold medicine?

And the thirteenth prince gave an answer, an answer which made Tigress go into a daze for a moment.

“This cold medicine is going to expire soon, it is a waste to not eat it.” The thirteenth prince answered very seriously.

“……”

What was this even……where would a person go and eat the medicine just because the medicine was going to expire. Tigress thought helplessly, suppose within the whole world, only her silly young master would do such a silly thing.

And right now, this silly young master was still continuing to eat the medicine, not right, wait, he was still continuing……

“Young master……” Tigress looked at her young master continuing eating the medicine and she immediately went over to seize over all the medicines which were about to expire.

“What, you also want to eat?” The thirteenth prince looked at tigress and asked.

“Not eating!!” Tigress replied unhappily.

“Give it to me then.” The thirteenth prince reached out his hand to demand back the medicines that Tigress took.

“Cannot!!” Tigress refused solemnly first, then afterwards gently explained: “Young master, you cannot anyhow eat all those medicines, this is not food, and you can only eat it when your body is not feeling well, if not you would fall sick from eating.

“What kind of illness would there be, am I not very well?” The thirteenth prince used his body to prove what he just said. Anyhow eating medicine actually wasn’t a problem, of course, just that right now it wasn’t a problem.

Chapter 19 – Cold Medicine (2)

“There is no problem right now but after eating a lot of those medicines, there will be a problem. Do you really want to use yourself to proof it?” Tigress felt extremely powerless.

“Will there really be a problem?” Towards Tigress, the thirteenth prince still has a kind of trust for her, since she had said it, then it could really be true.

Nonsense, of course it would be true, only you yourself would be unclear of the situation, fancy that you are even someone who plays with alchemy.

“Yep, there will really be a problem. I will throw away all those expired medicines later. Next time if there are still medicines which are about to expire, you also cannot eat those. You can only eat medicines when you are sick, and furthermore you cannot eat too much. Also, when you clearly have cold, you can’t go and eat stomach medicine instead.” Tigress softly warned repeatedly.

“I know already, I’m not that stupid.” The thirteenth prince said with disdain, as if he would definitely not do that kind of silly thing. Just that, whether if he would or not, was very hard to say.

And at this time, he let out another sigh and said regretfully: “Just that, this is too wasteful already.”

“……” Tigress was speechless. It was nothing unusual if it was someone else who said that it was wasteful, but the little thirteenth

prince was a famous prodigal son, how would he even know how the word wasteful was even written.

“Young master, you are a self-proclaimed number one prodigal son under the heaven, and you are still afraid of wasting a bit of medicine?”

“Prodigal is prodigal, even if you are prodigal, you also cannot be wasteful. I am only a prodigal son, not a wasteful person.” The thirteenth prince began to explain about being a prodigal son and did not put prodigal and wasteful at the same level.

“This……” Tigress had nothing to say already, to mention it, although the thirteenth prince was very prodigal, he was however really someone who did not like to waste things.

In any case, this silly young master of hers was already not able to be explained with common sense.

Tigress smiled and then continued doing the tasks for today. Her silly young master was the same, continuing to do his own things, and the two of them continued their brand new day just like this.

…

Now, the silly young master was 13 year old and Tigress was 14 year old……

The Imperial Academy. This was an ultra-high rank academy

where even regular nobilities may not be able to enter. Within the entire continent, it was ranked as number two, however this ranking was highly contested.

Just, it wasn't that the Imperial Academy tried to contest for the number one rank and not stay in number two. Towards number one rank, almost everyone was certain, certain from their heart that no one would be able to shake the position of the number one academy.

Since was not about contesting for number one, then it was the number two position where the Imperial Academy was at. That's right, the academies which were ranked at number three and four had always been glaring like a tiger at the number two position and had the determination to grab onto every chance to seize over the position as number two.

If you want to ask how this ranking came out, it was not because some people went to collect information and got the end result based on the grading of every aspect of the academies. The ranking was actually very simple, whereby it would be ranked based on the summed up strength of the academies during the Arena Duel Competition that was held every 10 years. [Remember this for later on]

In other words, this ranking could only be maintained for 10 years. After 10 years, if you lost, you would drop in rank, and conversely, if you won, you would go up in rank. This was the so-called 'Thirty years the river flows east, thirty years the river flows west'. Just that this time was shorter, with just only ten years. [Thirty years the river flow east, thirty years the river flow west; is

used to describe how things of the world always change.]

This Arena Duel Competition was also not mixed at all and was split according to different categories; like magic competition, martial skill competition and the competition where very less people participate, alchemy competition. Of course, there is also a mixed competition, where it would be according to the members, split into individual competition and team competition.

In this continent where martial strength was above all else, every academy's objective was to raise an individual's strength. Therefore, the circumstances of the students' strength also represented an academy's strength and weakness.

What is worth mentioning is that, the academies which are ranked number two to four were all occupied by the three big empires' academies, and the academy which was ranked number one did not belong to any of the three big empires. Instead it belonged to a very small, a very inconspicuous small nation. Actually, it could also be said that this nation was an academy and this academy was a nation.

Perhaps, this was also the reason why the academy was able to rank number one, there were very little politics in the academy.

Even if it was the three big empires, the majority of the nobles within would also set this ranked number one academy as their first choice. For example like Ye Family, where the thirteenth prince's brother Ye Hui was also at the number one academy, also including the thirteenth prince's second big sister and his other cousins.

In fact, if it was not for the thirteenth prince being a bit special, Ye Family would also send him to the number one academy. but the situation right now was that, even if the Imperial Academy's ranking was lower, they would still send him to the Imperial Academy to study. Because if the academy was too far, they would not be able to put their minds at ease. They could at least take care of him by sending him to the Imperial Academy.

There was also one more thing. The thirteenth prince's youngest older sister, which was also Ye Lan Yu, rejected going to the number one academy with the reason of wanting to take care of her little brother, and thus enrolled into the Imperial Academy instead. With her capability, even if she was at the number one academy, she would also be a well-known figure. Thus naturally, she was also a top-notch student at the empire's Imperial Academy.

Because she was a girl, the family‘s requirements for her were also not that high, whichever academy she would like to attend, they would just let her.

And since the two of them attended classes at the same academy, the two of them naturally went to the academy together. As a matter of fact, she once again charmingly appeared in front of the thirteenth prince. The Ye Lan Yu right now was already someone who had all the requirements needed to be a beautiful woman, and had already become the pursuing goal of many male nobles. [Keep dreaming]

Seems that right now, she was just nice enough to be called a 16 year old youth, a pretty young girl who was currently in the prime of her youth.

“Little brother, time to go to school already.” Ye Lan Yu straightforwardly kicked open the courtyard door and pulled away the thirteenth prince, who had already finished preparing. This sequence of movements was very adept that it could be even said to be done in one go.

“Oh……” The thirteenth prince was totally used to this kind of situation, as while he let Ye Lan Yu hold his hand, he was using another hand to hold onto a book to read.

Tigress, who was in the courtyard, saw this situation and similarly very adeptly put everything into her space pouch, then immediately went to chase after the two siblings at the front.

Every day, Tigress would follow after these peculiar siblings to go to the Imperial Academy. Her identity was naturally the thirteenth prince’s study companion. For nobles were allowed to bring a chamberlain kind of study companion along with them. This was a thing which all the academies in the continent allowed. However, the nobles would have to pay an additional school fee for the study companion.

Of course, not every noble would bring along a study companion with them, like for example Ye Lan Yu herself.

The Ye Family’s carriage sent the three to the outside of the

Imperial Academy's big gate. The three of them came down from the carriage and began walking into the academy. This was also one of the academy's rules, where no vehicles were allowed to enter into the academy. If not, the entire Imperial Academy would have big traffic jam occurring every single day. After all, everyone here were all nobles who were out of the ordinary.

And whenever it was this moment, a group of people would gather outside of the academy to await the arrival of the three of them. Of course, the person they were waiting for was not the thirteenth prince. Although the thirteenth prince provokes jealousy, he has never offended anyone before, and so there would not be a phenomenon of him being besieged by others.

The person those people were waiting for was the person at the thirteenth prince's side, his big sister, Lady Ye Lan Yu.

"Lady Lan Yu, these are 999 roses which I bought from God of Love Flower Shop. This represents my love for you……" A bunch of roses appeared in front of the three of them, as for the person who was holding the roses, only his voice was heard but the person himself was not seen.

"I'm sorry, I don't like roses." Ye Lan Yu's face had an apologetic expression as she said while smiling, her tone and expression was just that noble and gentle.

This was indeed the bearings a young lady who belonged to a big family should have. Just that, this Ye Family's young lady would really have this kind of side to her? Could it be that she had changed after growing up?

Chapter 20 – Alchemy Academy (1)

“Big sis, you are lying, the thing you like most are roses and still demand that I buy them for you.” The thirteenth prince did not give any face and straightforwardly exposed his big sis’ lie.

That’s right, they had already properly asked around, Ye Lan Yu liked rose a lot, especially blue roses. Perhaps it was because of her name, she liked the color blue a lot. [Lan in her name means blue.]

“Little scoundrel, who told you to be so talkative. Your big sis here is rejecting people.” Ye Lan Yu knocked on the little thirteenth prince unhappily and furthermore, very straightforwardly said it out loudly. This let the person who was holding onto the roses at the side feel very depressed.

“Reject then reject, why do you have to lie about it?” The thirteenth prince covered his head with his hand and said.

“You don’t know about this. Even if I reject them, I still have to give some courtesy at least. Ah, so truly helpless, your big sis’ charm is seriously just too big already. If it was changed to you, it would be different already, no one would chase after you.” Ye Lan Yu pulled onto the thirteenth prince and ran away, throwing off all those people who were chasing after her.

This was a routine that she needed to do every time, which also implicated the thirteenth prince and Tigress to not have a day that was normal where they could leisurely stroll into the academy campus. However, it was also because the thirteenth prince had his

big sis to escort him, that there were also lesser people who would make trouble for him.

“That’s not true, I also have many people who chase after me.” Said the thirteenth prince.

“Really? Who are those young ladies who have such a good taste, to be able to discover the hidden value of you this little scoundrel.” Ye Lan Yu questioned closely. She was very curious and really wanted to know who the person chasing after the thirteenth prince was, why the person has such a good standard.

This was definitely not that she wanted to see the thirteenth prince’s joke. Being the big sis who was always with him the whole day, she knew that the thirteenth prince had some unique capabilities which hardly anyone would be able to compare against with.

“Not only young ladies, there were also some boys.” The thirteenth prince said proudly, seemingly feeling that her own big sis was looking down on him too much already.

“WHAT?! Boys? Fuck, is it those perverted boys, I’m going to kill them. Little brother, quickly tell big sis, who are those boys, I want to turn them into ice sculptures.” Big sis was angry already, she obviously thought in the direction of a bad aspect.

“Miss Lan Yu, I think you should ask more clearly first.” The Tigress at the side reminded, the matter was actually very different from what Ye Lan Yu had thought. As for why Tigress did not just

explain to Ye Lan Yu, it was because she knew that Ye Lan Yu did not like others narrating about the thirteenth prince's things when the thirteenth prince himself is currently present.

"?" Ye Lan Yu was somewhat puzzled. Very quickly, she realized that there may be some misunderstanding between all this. After all, her little brother would often express out with wrong a meaning.

"Little brother, you say, how did they chase after you?" Ye Lan Yu asked.

"They were the same as those people who chased after us just now, their hands were carrying something while shouting at me, telling me not to run." The thirteenth prince said and his words caused Ye Lan Yu's face to sink downwards.

The same as them, isn't this just you yourself thinking that it was the same.

"Young master, what were they shouting at you, and what were they holding within their hands." The Tigress at the side said.

"They would hold seats and stools in their hands, shouting out, Ye Lang, you this idiot, what kind of messy thing are you doing again, stand right there and don't run, I want to kill you today."

"……"

Ye Lan Yu already understood that the chase which the thirteenth prince mentioned was not the pursuing and wooing after kind of chase, but was instead those chasing to kill kind of chase. At the same time, she also knew what the thing was within what the thirteenth prince said.

Those were the alchemy products which the thirteenth prince fiddled with. It was perhaps some type of medicine, perhaps some type of magic transmitter device, but no matter what it was, all those things all had one characteristic in common, which was that all of them had a bit of danger. Using the thirteenth prince's words to explain, those things were all not yet complete, a half-finished product would of course have no safety to it.

Just that, since you know that there is danger, why would you always bring it over to harm others, creating a complete mess. All those groups of students who had suffered really wanted to choke the thirteenth prince to death.

The things that the thirteenth prince does, majority of them are all his experiment products. Not sure why, his brain would always have some kind of bizarre and odd ideas. An alchemy formula which was originally very common, after he added a few things, it would become a variation kind alchemy formula.

Generally speaking, all those variations were strengthening the effect of the original and also added on another kind of effect. However, there would also be few mistakes, which causes the product which was originally safe to become a bit dangerous.

This was not only in the aspect of alchemy formulas, he would

also alter some alchemy formations and the effects were pretty much the same as the alchemy formulas which he altered. Also, at the same time, his alchemy formulas also became something new, which could also be said that it was changed into something which others could not understand after looking at it.

Right now, all the students knew one thing, which was that, the thirteenth prince's things are all very dangerous.

Sometimes, the harming power of the thirteenth prince's product would be very little, and at some times the entire classroom would be unlucky. Every time when Tigress saw this situation, she would immediately pull away the thirteenth prince and leave.

As for why Tigress didn't put away all those things, it was actually not that she didn't but that the amount of things the thirteenth prince had was just too much, letting others be unable to be on guard against it at all.

Sometimes, the thirteenth prince would accidentally trigger the danger property of the thing, letting the other students at his side be unlucky. Sometimes, he would let his thing lying around, and when a curious student picked it up, the curious student would be out of luck. Just that, every time, he was protected by Tigress and did not have any injuries at all.

This was perhaps the point that made everyone feel the most annoyed about. Originally, they were all students of alchemy

academy, often meeting this kind of situation, everyone was able to understand one another as they knew that it was all caused because of the other person's mistake from failing an alchemy experiment.

But, for what reason should him, this Ye Family's thirteenth prince be safe and sound every time and it was instead them who would always suffer from injuries? This was also a kind of jealousy, a jealousy of how lucky the thirteenth prince is.

Therefore, Ye Family's thirteenth prince also gradually became the public enemy of the class, even up to the entire alchemy academy. Just that, they had him no choice and also couldn't beat Tigress. Constrained under pressure, it then only caused them to be unable to go on a punitive expedition against the thirteenth prince.

"Alright, I'm going to my classroom already, meet you at noon at the dining hall. Little brother, be a bit more well-behaved today, don't stir trouble again already." Although she knew her own little brother would not listen at all, Ye Lan Yu still told him nonetheless. At the same time, she also asked Tigress to look after the thirteenth prince.

Ye Lan Yu was a student of the magic academy and Ye lang was a student of the alchemy academy. Their classrooms were separated by a few sport fields and school buildings. If Ye Lang was in the martial arts academy, it would be a bit better, as it was much closer. Problem was that he belonged to the alchemy academy.

Even a student like him would bring along a certain danger risk,

it was of course not needed to say about the entire alchemy academy already, where it was the focus point of all hazardous products. An academy like this was of course very naturally isolated at the edge of the zone.

Also because of this reason, the alchemy academy's defense was the strongest and also the most independent one, obviously being isolated in a zone from the other academies, by a man-made river and even a perimeter wall.

This also reduced quite a few of the thirteenth prince's troubles, as because some people were not able to find the chance to have contact with the thirteenth prince, they gave up on some ideas which were risen from their jealousy.

The students who chose the alchemy profession, their combative mindset were weaker than other people. Although they also had jealous hearts, they belonged to those who were much more reasonable, and their focus was aimed towards alchemy techniques and not family matters.

Luckily right now, although the thirteenth prince's improvement was decent, in the eyes of other people, he still appeared to be very weak to them. To say the least, within all the genius students of the alchemy academy, the thirteenth prince himself was a small character which was totally not worth mentioning at all.

And as for the thirteenth prince's variation alchemy, right now it still hadn't reached its peak point, thus it would still not attract everyone's attention.

Chapter 21 – Alchemy Academy (2)

Upon entering alchemy academy, one would discover that this place is different than the other academies, as if it was two different world, the difference was very big. This was not about the good or bad of the constructions, the design of the entire Imperial Academy and gardens were all the same, similarly strict, not existing the situation of favoring one and discriminating against the other.

However, it was because of this kind of design construction, that let this contrast become clearer.

And this contrast was the academy's popularity degree. At this time, at other academies, there would be plenty of people on the way, but here, only after walking quite a distance would one be able to see one or two people, and sometimes you would not be able to even see one or two people at all.

Although the alchemy academy's scale was not as big as the other two academies, but because of the amount of students being very sparse, it became very spacious and empty, giving others a kind of misperception, as if this alchemy academy was the biggest place in the entire Imperial Academy.

For the Imperial Academy's alchemy students, there were basically only two classes and the amount of students were not more than 100. This was also normal, after all, those people who were able to enroll into the Imperial Academy were all the younger generations of from famous families, so why would they even pick a subject which was not valued much by others.

But, the alchemy academy had a trait, which was that the amount of teachers was more than the amount of students, and furthermore, it was more by a lot. This was actually also very easy to comprehend, those teachers, majority of them were people who wanted to use the resources of Imperial Academy to test and improve their own alchemy. After all, alchemy materials were not something which ordinary people were able to afford.

The alchemy academy was also very fond of this type of alchemy teachers, and those alchemy teachers who had some achievements would be recruited as the imperial household's alchemists. Not only were the teachers like this, some students were also like this.

Because of this reason, it caused the alchemy academy to have the oldest student in history in it and also the student who had been at the academy for the longest. Furthermore, this record had continuously been broken several times even up till now.

Of course, new students like our thirteenth prince would not be able to meet those students as those students were usually nested in the laboratories, fiddling with their alchemy techniques. The thirteenth prince's class was the only new class in alchemy academy, where the amount of students were 21. Within those students, there were 9 female students. This was also since the beginning of history of alchemy academy that there were so many girls in a class of alchemy academy.

Within Imperial Academy, the scale of the amount of girls within magic academy was the largest, with martial arts academy being the second, and alchemy academy being the last. Moreover, the

amount of girls within alchemy academy was also much less, where the amount of girls added up within the alchemy academy would not even match against the amount of girls in a class of magic academy.

In the quality aspect, within the 9 female students in the thirteenth prince's class, there were both fat and thin. Don't be mistaken, this fat was not Yang Yu Huan kind of fat [Don't bother googling, you'll only arrive at the proclaimed one of the four most beautiful women in history], and was that genuine kind of fat. In the class, that female student was called Zhen Xiao Yan, her body weight was even enough to occupy two times an average girl's weight.

Of course, there were also beautiful female students. Sha Lan, who had blonde hair and blue eyes, was one of the representatives. Using some professional lechers, no, it should be female appraisers, using their words to say, after this Sha Lan grows up, she would become a sexy and gorgeous woman which cannot be produced locally.

As for the other girls in the class, still using those female appraisers' words, they were girls who had class, where after dressing up a bit, they would still look pretty good; except for Zhen Xiao Yan, that kind of top quality, of course.

However, the thirteenth prince liked Zhen Xiao Yan much more, because she had never chased after him, wanting to kill him. Just that, he doesn't know that it wasn't that she did not want to chase after him, but it was instead that she knew that she herself was not able to chase him.

When the thirteenth prince and Tigress set foot into the spacious and bright classroom, the discussion sounds, which originally filled the classroom, immediately stopped. Everyone fixed their attention onto the thirteenth prince, looking at him slowly entering into the classroom and sit at an empty seat.

“Pop……”

Almost everyone who was nearby the seat which the thirteenth prince sat at, immediately stood up and moved to the other half side of the classroom, distancing themselves from the thirteenth prince as far as possible. Following on, they once again started to discuss about their own thoughts, as if nothing had happened at all just now.

The thirteenth prince also did not feel anything and just took out his alchemy book to read. Seeing that the thirteenth prince took out an alchemy book to read, everyone seemingly let out a loose breath. They still payed attention to what the thirteenth prince took out, if it was those weird things, they would have to keep their guard up.

In this case, since the thirteenth prince took out a book, it meant that they could temporarily ignore the thirteenth prince. Everyone knew that the thirteenth prince was the most quiet when he was reading a book, and would not have any action at all, thus they continued on with their discussion.

As for the thirteenth prince? He had never discuss with others at

all. Firstly, there was a limit to his discussing capability. Secondly, all those thoughts of his would drive others mad and no one would approve of his opinions, thus being unable to discuss.

Very quickly, it was time to attend class. Same as the past, their homeroom teacher arrived and began teaching the class as usual. The students of alchemy academy were able to find any alchemy teacher to be their teacher, but there would still be a homeroom teacher which would come and teach them, since not every students would go and find teachers after all.

Perhaps, it could also be said that some students were unable to find a teacher who was willing to take the student under their belt. All those teachers were proud and arrogant, and would not anyhow take a student under their belt. It would not be a problem if it was an intelligent student. But, for those type like the thirteenth prince, those teachers would definitely not take him under their belt.

In the case that if the thirteenth prince was only slow-witted, they would still actually be willing to take him in. Like this, they would be able to have some relations with Ye Family, and furthermore they would also be able to get many free materials. Wasn't this the reason that they stayed at the academy?

Just that, the problem lied in that no one was able to answer or explain about this Ye Family's thirteenth prince's alchemy, no one was able to indicate a path for him. To want to be the thirteenth prince's teacher, they probably had to be Lu Ban's reincarnation to be able to teach him.

“The two most important points for alchemy are alchemy formulas and alchemy formations. They are all valuable assets which were left behind by the older generations through countless painstaking efforts. Thus, we must make sure that we are all familiar with all those things.” This was the homeroom teacher’s introduction.

“Alchemy formula is a very complicated kind of knowledge, and also something which is the hardest to grasp in alchemy. The effects within all the alchemy formulas are countless and immeasurable, this is something which you guys would have to go and attempt yourselves. Relatively speaking, alchemy formation is much simpler as everything is formed by some basic alchemy formations. According to the alchemy formation’s nature, it could be divided into transformation formation and refining formation. According to the effects, it could also be divided into attack, defense and recovery so on.”

“Transformation formation refers to a kind of substance’s transformation, the transformation of a shape or form. This is relatively speaking a kind of simple formation. And refining formation is where two types or more of different substances would mix and transform into another kind of substance. Different kinds of alchemy formation arrangements would have different kinds of effects. This is also something which you guys have to attempt yourselves.” [Chemistry class: physical and chemical changes]

The homeroom teacher was speaking on top and the some students below would use their mouth to lip synch, seemingly completely the same, as if this was a script which they already

knew by heart.

"All those things, I will say it one time every day, so that you guys will understand that, alchemy needs foundations, it requires you to memorize all those base knowledge every single day. Only by having a strong foundation, will you guys then be able to make more attempts and have the chance to reach the peak of alchemy. Perhaps one day, you guys will discover that the useless base knowledge is the thing that you guys have been chasing the entire time, and it is the crucial point to solving the difficult problems you guys have."

The homeroom teacher said with deep emotions. He seemingly had also discovered the reactions of the students, but however, he still continued persisting with this custom and would always start with this introduction every day, the completely same introduction.

This was truly called 'A day feeling like a few years'!

Chapter 22 – Alchemy Academy (3)

“Cough, cough, alright, let’s formally begin with our class, just ask if you guys have any questions.” The homeroom teacher coughed dryly a few times before speaking.

The academies of this continent have a different style of teaching. Perhaps it was because of suffering from the influence of magic academy and martial arts academy, after teaching some basic stuff, they would let their own students go research and study by themselves. Afterwards, if the students had any questions, they could raise them out in class.

Martial arts and magic teaching was the kind where the teacher would teach, and the cultivation depended on the person himself. Other than teaching some basic knowledge, they would not teach any other stuff, only letting the students cultivate by themselves while they guide the students.

And this way, perhaps some people would feel that, why not just hire a great teacher to teach themselves to cultivate alone. Of course, this was possible, but the problem was that in this world, how many great teachers would there even be? Even if there were, at most one or two prominent people could get a master to guide them.

In the academy, it was different. Not only were there many great teachers to guide you, there were also many classmates to accompany you to examine and test out your martial skills and magic.

When a teacher was guiding a student, it would also frequently give other students some help. In other words, the questions which are raised forward in the classroom would give the entire class' students benefits. It was not where just because you did not have any questions today, this class would thus be meaningless for you today.

Sometimes they would also say a bit of their own experience.

Thus, the moment the homeroom teacher said that the class could start asking questions, someone immediately raised his hand to indicate that he had a question to ask.

"Me, me……" A student immediately raised his hand, wanting to ask a question.

Just that, after the homeroom teacher saw this student, he frowned and said seemingly sort of like gave an excuse: "About that, student Ye Lang, let's leave your question for after we finish the class and research individually together. In the class, let's first hear about other's questions."

After experiencing several times of lessons full of blood and tears, not a single teacher now dared to answer student Ye Lang's question in class at all. Furthermore, his question was not of help to the others in class, thus the teachers would basically choose to slowly talk about it with him after class. As for if they would be able to talk or not after class, it was another matter already.

"Oh……" student Ye Lang seemingly used to it, put down his

hand and started reading the thick alchemy book while listening to the students' question and the homeroom teacher's answer at the same time.

Very quickly, morning passed just like this. Apart from the resting time in between the lessons, it was basically just questioning and answering. Following the arrival of the class' dismissal, it also declared that today's theoretical knowledge lesson was already over. Following after lunch, it would be either self-study or practice lessons.

The academy's arrangements were just like this. In the morning, theory would be taught and in the afternoon, it would be free time for the students, where if the students would like to continue researching on theory, could just continue on with it, and for the students who would like to practice their theoretical knowledge, they could go and do it.

After class finished, student Ye Lang saw that the homeroom teacher immediately took off without saying anything, just as if he was running for his life. Thus, he also temporary gave up on his plan to go and find the homeroom teacher to research on his problems, and instead proceeded towards the dining hall with the sleepy Tigress, to find his sister to eat lunch.

Towards alchemy, Tigress was not very interested. During the time when she was accompanying her young master to attend alchemy class, she would either be sleeping or reading books about martial skills, which she borrowed from the library.

Regarding this matter, student Ye Lang had once suggested

Tigress to go to martial arts academy, saying that alchemy academy was very safe and he could take care of himself, not needing Tigress to accompany him at all. However, without thinking at all, Tigress immediately rejected it. After all, her original intentions were to accompany her young master, if she were to go to martial arts academy, her meaning for coming to Imperial Academy would be pointless already.

To say, even if there was a meaning, she would also not leave half a step away from her young master.

Looking at the large and gorgeous dining hall, Tigress' heart began to be on guard. Because, at this time, it was the easiest to suffer from a surprise attack and it was the only time where others would have a chance to have contact with the thirteenth prince.

This was not Tigress' groundless fear and it was something which happened every day. Majority of the attacks were obstructed by her and Ye Lan Yu, but sometimes, they would still unfortunately get attacked. However, luckily those surprise attacks were only harmless pranks and humiliating kind of surprise attacks.

Yep, in the thirteenth prince's viewpoint, all those humiliations were totally not worth mentioning at all. But of course, as far as it was concerned with Ye Lan Yu, it was different. She would flip out violently and let those people die very uglily. [figuratively speaking, she doesn't really kill them, just brings them to the brink lol.]

Cautiously bringing the thirteenth prince to the dining hall,

Tigress found a table and sat down there. The tables of the entire dining hall were all the same and there were not any kind of VIP special tables at all. This was a kind of idea which the academy wanted to convey, that within the Imperial Academy, everyone all had only one identity and it was that of a student. No matter how noble your identity was in this continent, you would still be treated equally as others would.

Of course, this was perhaps because the academy did not want to see those young masters and young ladies causing some needless conflicts because of treatment problems.

“Tigress, my stomach is hungry already, go and get things to eat.” After a good while had passed, the thirteenth prince began to talk.

“Wait for a bit more, wait for lady Lan Yu to come. Why is she still not here, normally she would have already come here at an earlier time.” Tigress looked at the door and said while feeling somewhat puzzled.

Before Ye Lan Yu comes here, she would not go and get food. Because, like this, she would have to leave the thirteenth prince alone and who knows what would happen during this time. And she did not dare to bring the thirteenth prince along to get food, because between all this, there would be too much of a crowd they would have to squeeze through.

Therefore, she was waiting, waiting for Ye Lan Yu to come. With

Ye Lan Yu here, she would then be able to be reassured. Problem was that, something seemed to have happened today and Ye Lan Yu was late.

Time passed for a while again and Ye Lan Yu finally arrived, with bad mood written all over her face. Very obviously, she had met with something that made her feel unhappy. And not far from Ye Lan Yu, there was a beautiful girl whose age was similar to the thirteenth prince, and opposite of Ye Lan Yu, this girl's face was full so smiles, as if she had discovered something which made her feel very happy.

This kind of situation let others very easily think that the thing that had happened to the two of them could have been the same thing.

That's right, Tigress was able to be certain that it was definitely the same thing which had happened to these two people. This girl was not a stranger and was exactly the young lady, the empire's seventh princess.

Ever since the matter that had happened during the birthday, Princess Qi and Ye Lan Yu had been against one another, often quarreling together. If one was happy, the other would definitely not be happy, vice versa.

At this time, Tigress also finally understood why Ye Lan Yu was late. Ye Lan Yu must have ran into Princess Qi and thus came so late.

“Don’t follow after me, don’t pester my little brother. Little brother, don’t talk with her. If not, next time, I will ignore you.” After sitting down, Ye Lan Yu roared at the girl opposite of her and then gave a warning to the thirteenth prince.

“Don’t need you to pay attention to him, having me pay attention to him is enough, isn’t that right, Ye Lang.” Princess Qi sat down while smiling and giggling, and also saying a sentence towards Ye Lang too.

The gunpowder between these two girls was ample and if the thirteenth prince was to say something wrong, it would definitely trigger a conflict, yep, a small scale one.

However, the thirteenth prince was instead completely paying no attention towards these two girls and straightforwardly said to Tigress: “Tigress, quickly go and get food, I’m starving to death already.”

“……”

Chapter 23 – I Lick (1)

“Lady Lan Yu, you guys look after the young master, I will go and get food first. Just now I had made him wait for a while, he’s quite hungry already.” Tigress exhorted and then went to get food.

This was a self-service type of dining hall where all the food and beverages were provided for free, and you could take as much as you possibly want. The condition is that you must be able to finish what you take, and there must not be even a tiny bit of waste.

“I really don’t understand you, not going to Zhu Xing Academy and instead insisting on staying here. That is the number 1 academy in the entire world, others want to go but don’t have the qualifications to be able to go.” After Tigress left, Ye Lan Yu said very unhappily to Princess Qi, and she seemed to have forgotten that she herself had also not gone to Zhu Xing Academy either and came to Imperial Academy instead.

“Aren’t you the same, what right do you have to say that to me.” Princess Qi said straightforwardly.

“I’m different, I have to look after my little brother. What’s more, I feel that there is no difference between here and there, either place, I would still be able to become the most talented magician.”

“I’m also the same, I have to look after my fiancé. I also feel that there is no difference, I could also become the most talented magician anywhere.”

“You……”

“What are you two quarreling about, aren’t everyone’s opinion the same, why do you two have to fight every time?” The thirteenth prince interrupted the quarreling of the two girls. About this, he was somewhat not able to understand at all. Between these two girls, there was basically no reason for conflict that could be said, and moreover, both of their purposes were very similar too. [It’s you, you idiot!]

About this, don’t say that the thirteenth prince was not able to make sense of it, even the members of Ye Family and Imperial Household were not able to make sense of it either. They did not understand why the two girls would quarrel, or could it possibly be because of that one time when the two of them compared each other’s figure? That can’t possibly have caused them to quarrel like this though.

Perhaps, it was because both their innate skill attributes. Princess Qi’s innate skill attribute was fire and Ye Lan Yu’s innate skill attribute was an uncommon water variation attribute, ice attribute. This was inherited from Long An Qi’s attribute, within the four siblings, only Ye Lan Yu herself had inherited this uncommon attribute.

Fate let these two become fire and ice, being incompatible with one another.

“Whose opinion is the same as her?” The two girls spoke at the

same time.

“Oh, let’s first eat lunch already.” The thirteenth prince only said ‘oh’ and then picked up the food which Tigress had just brought over, and started eating with big mouthfuls.

“Humph……” The two girls look at each other with a glance and then started to begin eating.

Tigress shook her head somewhat helplessly, somewhat sighing about why odd people would often appear at her own young master’s side. Lady Lan Yu’s temper was already odd enough, and right now there was Princess Qi, who was even odder.

Also, don’t know which point this Princess Qi even likes about her young master. Although it was not that kind of ‘like’, but she would always want to be together with this silly young master of hers.

“I’m full, time to go out and play!” The thirteenth prince patted his stomach and wiped his mouth, then immediately stood up and left, not even waiting for the girls who were still slowly eating. Of course, this did not include Tigress, as Tigress’s appetite was big, thus her eating speed would not be much slower either.

“Young master!” Tigress immediately wiped her mouth and stood up to follow after her young master. To be able to eat till she was 80% full was already good enough.

80% full?! As expected of the tiger race, this portion size was already enough for the average person to eat a few meals.

“Little scoundrel, get over here, wait for me……” Ye Lan Yu shouted very unhappily. With regards to the thirteenth prince’s action of not waiting for her and leaving, she was very unhappy about it.

Although she also knew that her little brother had always been like this, but she was still very unhappy about it.

However, she had not even finished saying out what she wanted to say, and an unexpected accident happened. This caused two people who should not have ever crossed each others path to have a chance encounter, which made others feel very speechless.

At that time, Ye Family’s thirteenth prince was holding a bottle of fruit juice in his hand. He was fond of taking it and drinking like this, and this was something which he had often done. Just that today because of this, a scenario which made others feel very speechless appeared.

When someone saw that Ye Family’s thirteenth prince was ‘left alone’, upon seeing there was a chance, the person used a very often seen method to attack the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince. This method was extending out his leg to trip the thirteenth prince.

In the end, the clumsy Ye Family’s thirteenth prince very easily fell into the person’s attack, and got tripped onto the floor, making

a very intimate contact with the floor, and the juice in his hand also sprayed forward conveniently.

“Ahh……”

“Ouch, very ouch……”

“Young master!”

“Little brother!”

“Ye Lang!”

A sweet sounding frightened scream, along with the thirteenth prince’s shouting for pain; and Tigress, Princess Qi and Ye Lan Yu’s concerned shouting resonated practically at the same time in the entire dining hall.

The few voices which were heard, were very normal, except for that sweet sounding frightened scream, which made others felt a bit puzzled as to who it was that let it out.

It was a 15, 16 year old white clothed girl who had a delicate, pretty and outstanding small face, silver-white colored long hair, skin which was as fair as snow, letting the eyes of others have a feeling of eating ice cream.

The girl stood in the front of Ye Family's thirteenth prince, her frightened scream was not because the Ye Family's thirteenth prince suddenly fell down in front of her, but was because of the juice on her face and chest. That's right, those juice belonged to the Ye Family's thirteenth prince.

The delicate and pretty girl who was originally like snow, had right now been stained by another color, the color of the juice. This destroyed the whole feeling she gave off to others, and at the same time seriously damaged her white colored dress too.

"……" The girl's brows were locked up tightly, her face already showing the sign that she was angry. But continuing on, she would become much angrier, it could simply be said that she was bursting with rage already at that time.

"Young master, are you alright." Tigress helped the Ye Family's thirteenth prince to stand up.

"My nose is very ouch…… white color panties, Tigress, her entire body is body, very nice to look at." Ye Family's thirteenth prince covered his nose and said, his tone sounding very ordinary, as if he was saying a matter which could be not be any more ordinary.

"……" Everyone who was present was completely silent.

At this time, the person who tripped the thirteenth prince was beginning to regret, regret for why he had let this little idiot be able to get such an advantage, he was wishing that the one who had been tripped was himself. And this thinking, I reckon that all

the male students who were present here, all had this same thought too.

Geez, this silly little brother, just saying out anything he wants, looking at other people's panties and still saying it out straightforwardly like this.

At this time, Ye Lan Yu took back the magic she was originally preparing to release out. If not for this matter, I believe that the person who had tripped the thirteenth prince would have been frozen for a while.

"He, he, this beautiful young lady, I'm sorry, this little brother of mine is a stupid fellow, he did not peep at your panties intentionally, he was only tripped by others." Ye Lan Yu was preparing to smooth down the anger of the girl before she got angry. Just that, what she said also had a very big problem, she had actually reminded the girl about the matter that her panties were seen once again.

"Really don't know how to talk at all!" Princess Qi secretly said a sentence about Ye Lan Yu, and then went forward to converse with the girl: "I'm sorry, these two sister and brother don't know how to talk at all. This happened because Ye Lang was tripped by others. If you feel offended, please don't be angry. Ye Lang, quickly say sorry to her."

"Oh, I'm sorry." Ye Family's thirteenth prince was still very honest, although he was tripped by others, he still felt that, it was wrong of him for spilling juice onto the girl, at the least, an apology was still needed.

“Just saying that he was tripped. Just saying sorry, would it erase all the things that have happened?” The girl said coldly, stating clearly that she was not accepting the apology.

[Oh, she sounds like one of those thugs you see in manga that extort people for "dirtying” their clothes, and demanding cleaning compensation.]

Chapter 24 – I Lick (2)

“Then what do you want?” Ye Lan Yu asked somewhat unhappily. She felt that since her little brother had already apologized, the girl should accept the apology.

Ye Lan Yu’s attitude made the girl’s anger to raise upwards a bit again. The girl was originally already very angry, leaving aside the part where she was splashed with juice by the thirteenth prince, her dress’ underside was peeped by the thirteenth prince too, and what’s more, the thirteenth prince still said it out loud that he saw her panties.

All of this caused the girl’s anger to reach a new height, and right now, the anger was higher than it previously already was. Because of this, under this situation where her anger clouded her mind, she said a sentence which she would from henceforth, regret for a very long time.

“Humph! What do I want? I will let it pass if you lick all that up cleanly.”

“Do you have a deathwish? If you do, I will fulfil it! Little brother……” Ye Lan Yu said coldly. Similarly, Princess Qi and Tigress also felt indignant, as this sort of action was a kind of very thorough humiliation.

In fact, right after the girl spoke out what she had just said, she felt a bit regret about it, feeling that she should not have said it like this. Just that, during the time when she hadn’t had the time to

properly finish thinking of what to do, something which she would have never have thought of happened.

“Ah!” The girl cried out in fear.

“Ah……” Everyone opened their mouth widely and looked at the scene blankly.

A small juvenile extending out his tongue to lick the delicate and pretty face of a girl. And right now, the face of the girl was displaying an astonished, sluggish expression.

To let others lick clean was indeed a very humiliating action, but if that person had really licked, what kind of situation would it then be? This kind of thing, I believe that many people would have never ever thought of at all. And even if they had thought of it, they would also not dare to go and do it too.

However, this Ye Family’s thirteenth prince in front of everyone, was a very special person. He had really licked, and furthermore, he was very concentrated when licking.

The girl felt her face become moist, felt the tickling feeling on her face, and all of those feelings transmitted to her heart, transmitted to her entire body……

“Ah!! You…… You……” As if waking up from a dream, the girl pushed away the thirteenth prince who was licking her face with concentration, and used one hand to cover her face which was

licked while remaining speechless.

How should this situation even be expressed? You could say that the Ye Family's thirteenth prince took liberty of a girl in public, but it seemed that it was also the girl's request too.

At this time, Ye Family's thirteenth prince still said a sentence which made the atmosphere of the entire scene become even more strange: "How do I lick you if you push me away, there is still a lot on your body."

This sentence caused everyone to notice the juice stains on her clothes, especially those juice stains on her chest appeared to be especially clear right now.

"Ah, you are not allowed to lick!" Astonished, the girl immediately used both her hands to protect the front of her chest.

"……" Silence.

"Little brother, nice one, ha ha……" Ye Lan Yu laughed. Originally, she still wanted to give the girl a lesson, but right now, there wasn't a need anymore because her little brother's actions were better than any other kind of lessons.

"Pfff……" Tigress and Princess Qi were unable to bear it and let out a light laugh.

Right now, all those male students who were present at the

scene, wished that they themselves were the ones who were in the Ye Family's thirteenth prince's position instead. At the same time, they also swore silently that, next time, if there was any girl who wanted them to lick, they would not have any hesitation at all.

However, all the girls who were present at the scene all came to an understanding at once that, next time, these kind of words may in no way be said in a moment of anger. If not, if they were to meet a person like this Ye Family's thirteenth prince, they would not be able to punish the person, but still have to get taken advantage of by the person instead.

And this matter also created a phenomenon whereby, the males of Imperial Academy would intentionally or 'unintentionally' spill things like juice or wine on the girls, and thus the girls also practiced till they became very skillful in dodging.

"Humph!!" The girl stamped her feet ferociously, then brought along a rarely seen blushing face of hers, and ran away with her head lowered down.

"Don't run away ah, there is still juice on your body. Actually, there is no need to lick, I can use transformation formation to clean it away." Ye Family's thirteenth prince shouted at the back, and the more he shouted, the faster the girl ran.

"It is really possible to clean it away with transformation formation ah... Tigress, she seems to not believe what I say."

“Young master……”

“Ha ha……Alright, this matter will end here. Little brother, you are not allowed to be like this next time, just obediently doing whatever others tell you to do. Like this, it would not be good if you met one of those bad people.” Ye Lan Yu scolded while smiling, at the same time reminding this little brother.

“That’s right, you are my fiancée. How can you go and lick other girls.” Princess Qi also followed after and spoke, furthermore adding a small joke.

“Then, I will only lick you next time.” Ye Family’s thirteenth prince very seriously nodded his head and said.

“Eh……” Princess Qi stopped talking.

“Oh, that’s right, who was that girl just now, why have I never seen her before, I’ve also never heard of this person before.” Ye Lan Yu asked while feeling somewhat puzzled.

A person like the girl just now, with her looks and temperament, she should be a well-known person in the entire academy, how come no one has ever heard of her before.

“Don’t know, I have also never heard of her before. Oh, that’s right, I just remembered, right now, we are currently undergoing an inter-academic exchange with Ai La Empire’s Violet Academy, and a part of their students seems to have come to our academy.

That girl could have been from their side.” Princess Qi guessed.

“That’s right, she is a student who belonged to violet academy, her identity is a huge deal, and she is exactly……” A well-informed person said. Just that, he hadn’t finished saying out the other person’s identity and the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince had already ran away, thus not knowing who that girl, who was just like snow, was.

Actually, even if he had heard, he may not even be able to remember it at all, or perhaps, it should be said that he wouldn’t take it to heart, believing that there would also not be a chance that he would meet the girl anymore in the future.

As a matter of fact, it was also true. After this inter-academic exchange, that girl went back to Violet Academy, and furthermore swore that, in her whole life, she would not come back to Soaring Sky Empire ever again. Especially this empire’s this Imperial Academy, and even more, she did not want to see a certain person!

She wanted to forget about this matter, and even more wanted to forget about a certain someone!

Throughout a person’s life, there would always be things that a person would want to forget about. But how many people would be able to truly forget about what they want to forget?

Few days later, Imperial Academy held a series of interesting activities. This was held for the sake of Violet Academy’s exchange students, to at the same time treat it as welcoming them and also

as seeing them off, because they would be leaving after a few days.

The Ye Family's thirteenth prince did not participate in the activity. It was not that he had no qualifications to participate, as at the previous pre-selection activity, he had furthermore won with a result which made everyone feel that it was a little unexpected but also at the same time excepted.

However, considering his instability, the academy decided that they should still give him a few days off for the time being, let him go and harm other people instead.

Although it was like this, the pre-selection activity also left behind a rather not small conversation topic. Within a very long period of time, those people who were having a 'showdown' with the Ye Family's thirteenth prince, in the above-mentioned matter, gave everyone a matter to ridicule which spread for a very long time.

And this was something which those people regretted, as it was them who thought to the greatest extent for a method to make the Ye Family's thirteenth prince participate in the activity. With the thirteenth prince's personality, why would he even go and participate in those kinds of activities? If it was a sales exhibition, he would certainly go, but this was only a talent performance, knowledge questions and answers type of things.

Chapter 25 – Puzzled (1)

Their motive was to make the thirteenth prince look bad. Nominally, they were helping the white-as-snow girl to take revenge, but the actual fact was that, they were only using the matter for their own purposes, wanting to mess with the thirteenth prince who was so lucky that everyone was jealous of him.

Because of this, they felt that the knowledge questions and answers kind of activities was the best to make the thirteenth prince look bad. Thus, when the thirteenth prince said that he was going to participate in the talent show, they thought of ideas to make the thirteenth prince go to the question and answer activity instead.

Towards this, the Tigress who was at the side only laughed and did not have the intention to stop those people at all, as she wanted to watch the show. However, her so-called watching the show was the complete opposite from other people. She was not waiting to watch the thirteenth prince be embarrassed, but was instead waiting to watch those people who wanted to mess with the thirteenth prince become embarrassed.

Don’t forget, although the thirteenth prince was very stupid, his memory strength was still exceptionally good, and he had read books extensively since he was small. With regards to pure knowledge, within all the student in the academy, if he was number two, there was definitely no number one.

Just that, very few people knew about this matter. Other than

Tigress and Ye Lan Yu, other people only knew that the thirteenth prince's alchemy knowledge was very strong at the most. After all, the thirteenth prince was someone who studied alchemy.

Afterwards, when it was time to start answering the thoroughly stochastic questions given, the thirteenth prince took first place, with his score leading by a wide margin compared to the person who took second place. This caused many people to be taken aback.

This result caused others to suspect whether the thirteenth prince had cheated, but after going through a test, they discovered that the thirteenth prince truly did not cheat. This result made a lot of people feel ashamed. It was still ok to lose to other people, but to actually lose to the thirteenth prince who was acknowledged as an idiot fool by everyone, this caused them to not be able to accept it at all.

Thus, all the remaining people who did not get eliminated, they all started to give hundred percent of their fighting spirit, and at the second round, which was also the final round, they began raising out some questions which they themselves considered as unpopular, which others would not know how to answer.

The rules of this round was that it was left to the participants to raise questions, then afterwards, whoever who would be able to answer the most questions would be the winner.

Just that, when those people asked the questions, they all followed according to what they were used to, which was some knowledge type questions. Thus, even if they asked unpopular

questions, the thirteenth prince would also still have the chance to know the answer to the question.

As a result, in this round, the thirteenth prince correctly answered two question. But, the other people also correctly answered two questions at most, and some were not even able to correctly answer a single question at all. Leaving aside the result for the pre-selection competition, just including this alone, the thirteenth prince was also definitely able to make it to the finals and participate in the activities following this.

Of course, for the ranking position problem, everyone still continued to use another method to calculate, which was that, it would be judged by how many questions a person would be able to answer correctly this time, and whose question will be answered the least by others.

At this time, everyone astonishingly discovered that, no one was able to correctly answer the thirteenth prince's question. The thirteenth prince's question was also not an especially hard question, and anyone would be able to answer it, but however, no one was able to answer it correctly at all.

The question was this: "Let's say, a fool was walking on the streets and he saw a gold coin and a silver coin on the ground. May I ask, would the fool pick up the gold coin or the silver coin?"

Some people answered that it was of course the gold coin, saying that even a fool would also know to pick up the gold coin instead of the silver coin. While some other people answered that it was the silver coin, because the fool does not know the difference between

the gold coin and silver coin.

“Wrong, the answer is, the fool would take both the gold coin and silver coin. Even a fool would also know to take everything, you guys are really more foolish than a fool!” When the thirteenth prince declared the answer, everyone’s face was as ugly as it could be, wishing to dig a hole and hide into it.

It was still ok if they were spoken of like this by some other people, but to be spoken of like this by someone who they considered as a fool, it was seriously hard for them to accept it.

And at this time, everyone who was below had already started to begin laughing. Although just a moment ago, they were also choosing between the gold coin and silver coin, but after all, they did not answer, and thus, they were able to laugh justifiably.

Actually, matters like this had also happened a few times, just that no one had notice it at all since the start, and felt that it was just a coincidence. Because of this, a bunch of people who thought they were intelligent themselves, after being played by the thirteenth prince countless times, they still had not accepted their lesson and kept continuing to send themselves to death’s door.

“Young master, the question you asked a while ago was somewhat misleading other people. You ask it like this, it would let others think that they could only choose one between the two.” Tigress said while resisting her laughter.

“Is it?” The thirteenth prince thought for a while and then said:

“I did not say that they could only choose one, so they can choose more than one. And also, this question, even if I don’t say, the answer should be very easy to guess. Originally, I wanted to ask a most simple question, but why are they just so stupid.”

“……”

……

The sizzling hot summertime, a time where weather changes a lot. Who knows when the weather will change suddenly, changing from a bright scorching sun to black cloud densely covering the sky, with thunderstorm falling repeatedly.

Today was precisely this kind of situation. Because of the changed weather, the thirteenth prince was unable to return home and was only able to stay at the Imperial Palace. At that time, thunder sounds could be heard from the sky repeatedly, a bunch of lightning tearing up the sky.

“Ye Lang, you just stay here today, I sleep together with you.” Princess Qi said while smiling.

“It’s okay to stay, but cannot sleep together, we are still not married.” The thirteenth prince said slowly.

“Hehe, what’s the problem, we are still small right now and can’t do anything too, sleeping together is normal. Didn’t you frequently

sleep together with your big sis in the past?" Princess Qi said while smiling. Of course, she was only teasing and did not really mean to want to sleep together with the thirteenth prince.

"She is sister." The thirteenth prince said.

"Then what about Tigress?" Princess Qi asked while smiling. She knew that previously, for a very long period of time, the thirteenth prince and Tigress slept together on one bed. However, that time was when they were still very small and there did not exist any problem.

"At that time, I wanted to sleep together with her. Right now, we don't sleep together anymore. Only when I'm sick, then she would accompany me." The thirteenth prince replied. After the age of 10, they had already began to sleep in separate beds. Except for when the thirteenth prince needed to be looked after, then Tigress would sleep together with the thirteenth prince.

Speaking about Tigress, she appeared to not be feeling well today and was resting at home. And because the thirteenth prince was personally brought over by Princess Qi, and had furthermore promised that she would take good care of the thirteenth prince, only then did Tigress reluctantly relax and let the thirteenth prince go to the Imperial Palace to play.

Princess Qi would drag the thirteenth prince along to go and play at times, perhaps going shopping, or perhaps going on scenic tours. Of course, they would also go to the residence of Ye Family too. And regardless of what the situation was, in the past, Tigress would always be at the side of the thirteenth prince.

Because of today's specialness, it caused an unexpected accident which should not have happened to happen today, making Tigress to not dare to leave half a step away from the thirteenth prince anymore in the future.

"Ye Lang, I have finished bathing already, it's your turn right now……" Princess Qi wore a thin night cloth, using the towel to wipe her somewhat wet beautiful hair. That snow white skin, which was moistened by the water, looked extremely alluring. This kind of look, only her personal maid and also the thirteenth prince would be able to look at.

Towards the thirteenth prince, she would not avoid anything at all, and in front of him, she would always be completely natural.

"Eh, where is he?"

Originally, after she had finished showering, it was the thirteenth prince's turn, but however, she was not able to see till the thirteenth prince's trace.

Chapter 26 – Puzzled (2)

“Ye Lang, stop playing already, come out.” Princess Qi began to start searching in the room, however no matter how hard she searched, she was not able to find the thirteenth prince, “Could it be that he is dazing outside?.That is not right, it is still raining heavily outside.”

“Princess, why is young master Ye Lang still not here… Princess, what are you searching for?” A maid walked out from the bathroom, originally wanting to call Ye Lang to come in the bathroom, so that she could draw a shower, but in the end, she discovered that Princess Qi was searching the entire house for something.

“Ye Lang, I don’t know where this Ye Lang is hiding, you guys help me search for him quickly. Who was the one that was accompanying him just now…” Princess Qi said somewhat anxiously.

“Princess, we all seemed to have accompanied you to the shower, no one accompanied young master Ye Lang…In the past, it would always be Tai Ya who would accompany him.” The maid replied, her voice sounding a bit weak.

“That’s right, in the past, it was always Tai Ya who accompanied him. We became used to it, we forgot to leave one person to look after him. Not sure where he ran off to, all you go and search every room and look.” Princess Qi said while frowning. At the same time, she also went to confirm a guess which she did not want to think of, walking towards the doorway.

“Did you all see that stupid fellow Ye Lang?” Princess Qi pushed open the door and asked the bodyguard at the doorway.

“Yes, we saw him just now. He ran out alone not too long ago.” The bodyguard replied, and then it hit him, he found the issue, and his face began to darken.

“What? He ran out alone? You all just let him run out alone like this?” Princess Qi immediately reprimanded angrily.

“We thought that he was going home.” The bodyguard replied somewhat weakly. Normally here, whenever Ye Family’s thirteenth prince wanted to come or leave, it was all up to him. He was free to enter and leave as he pleased, thus the bodyguards did not obstruct him from leaving.

Normally Tigress was always at the thirteenth prince’s side. But, just now, the thirteenth prince was alone, and this is where the problem was.

“Go home, can he go back home alone? It’s not like you all don’t know that he is different from other people, would I let him go back home alone? What’s more, it is still raining and thundering right now... Immediately send people to chase after him!!!” Princess Qi bellowed angrily. This attitude of hers had never before appeared. In the past, no matter how big the matter was, she would always face it calmly.

“No, I also have to look for him!!” Princess Qi wanted to

immediately go out, just that she forgot that right now, she was currently wearing a piece of night cloth only. If she was to go out like this, it would turn into a crisis.

Luckily, at this time, a maid was sharp-sighted and deft enough to pull back Princess Qi, saying anxiously: “Princess, you can’t go out looking like this right now, it is ok to just let them search for young master Ye Lang, the wind and rain outside is violent, you should wait here for a bit.”

“Let go of me, you also know that the wind and rain outside is violent. He will get sick by getting drenched by the rain outside. I don’t understand him, clearly he agreed that he would stay here today, why did he still have to leave?” Princess Qi was unable to make sense of why the thirteenth prince left.

If she knew of the reason as to why the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince left, she would surely be angered dizzy and greatly scold that the thirteenth prince is a stupid fellow, an idiot, a through and through fool.

“I must tell Tigress, say that I will not be going home tonight and will be staying at wife’s home.” This was the sentence that the thirteenth prince said to himself when he left.

In this past few years, he had never been separated from Tigress, not even for a day. No, to say it more accurately, it should be that, they had never been separated for more than 2 hours, not to mention a whole day. And today, he wanted to stay at the imperial palace, but Tigress however was at home.

He knew that Tigress would surely be worried about him, and so as to not make her worried, he decided to go back home to tell Tigress that he would be staying at the imperial palace and she doesn't need to worry about him.

However, if he was able to go back home to notify Tigress, then he would not have needed to stay at the imperial palace already. What's more, would Tigress even let him return and get drenched by the rain?

Towards this, he did not think about, he only knew that he must not let Tigress be worried about him. Even if he knew that the rain and wind was strong outside, and thunder and lightning was flashing in the sky, he still had to go back and tell Tigress not to worry about him.

Under the thunderstorm, the thirteenth prince was running within the imperial palace and there was not a single person who blocked him, because everyone knew who he was, and there was no place in the entire imperial palace where he could not go.

Just like this, the thirteenth prince ran out of the imperial palace and ran towards the Ye Residence. Actually, the Ye Residence was not very far from the imperial palace, the district where the influential officials were at was naturally also near the imperial palace, making it convenient to go to the imperial palace, and at the same time, they could also be neighbors with the emperor.

Of course, although it was not far it was also not very near. It

would take at least 20 minutes for the thirteenth prince to run back home, if he was able to continue running without stopping of course.

At that time, the thirteenth prince was holding an umbrella, a very expensive umbrella which was made from cloth made of gold thread weaved together, and framework inlaid with gold. This was an umbrella which a prodigal son like him should use, this umbrella was bought by him when he was being prodigal.

Just that, right now there was a thunderstorm. Holding an umbrella like this, there would be a very high probability to get struck by lightning. This was practically taking a lightning rod and running around in the thunderstorm.

In the end, the thunder god seemed to give a lot of face, and struck the thirteenth prince's umbrella. [Dear thunder god, you don't need to give me face when I'm running outside when it's thundering]

"Bang……"

"Ah……"

The thirteenth prince's entire body gave out a kind of electric light, then he gave out a miserable shriek and collapsed on the street filled with rainwater. In that split second, the thirteenth prince seemed to see that there was a wave of electric current scattering all around the district near him.

And at that time, the thirteenth prince seemed to feel a kind of electrical current flowing around his entire body, stimulating his brain. The stimulation in his brain was not caused by the lightning's electric current, although it could have been brought forth by the lightning, but the thirteenth prince felt that it was not like that. It was instead another kind of miraculous electric current, a kind of feeling which could not be said out.

What was this? Before the thirteenth prince was able to think, he had already sank in a deep unconsciousness

……

"Found him. young master Ye Lang is on the floor. Why is there a kind of burnt smell? Could it be that…that…that lightning just now struck on his body? A bunch of bodyguards appeared at the street. The first thing they saw was the disaster inviting umbrella, then afterwards it was the thirteenth prince who had been struck by lightning. Right now, the thirteenth prince had all the characteristic of having been struck by lightning.

Fluffy curled hair, skin which was black and brought forth a bit of burnt smell, clothes also having been destroyed……

'Was he still alive?' All those people who saw this situation, all of them thought of this first. For people who had been struck by lightning, it seemed that the survival rate was extremely, extremely low.

But, all the bodyguards who were present however had another thinking immediately after a while.

He must live, if not, the trouble would be great!

That's right, if the Ye Family's thirteenth prince was to die right now, then they would suffer a calamity for sure. Although the calamity was not as far as that they would die, but they would surely be unlucky.

– But he died once more –

Just kidding, the last sentence I mean.

Chapter 27 – Puzzled (3)

“He still has breath!” The imperial family’s bodyguard let out a sigh of relief, but very quickly, his anxiousness came back.

“Quickly, go back to the palace immediately! Notify all the Imperial family’s doctors, call those water attribution and light attribution recovery magicians to come too!! Also the Imperial family’s alchemists too. In any case, don’t let go of any occupations who can give medical treatment, if anything were to happen to the thirteenth prince, we will all be in big trouble!!”

“Also, notify Ye Family, Princess Qi……”

……

“Bang……”

The teacup fell onto the floor, scattering all around.

“What did you all say? Xiao Lang got struck by lightning, life and death still unpredictable right now?” Long An Qi seemed to not dare to believe it was true, anxiously confirming if it was true.

“That’s right, just now, young master Ye Lang tried to go home alone in the rain and got struck by lightning on the way back home. Right now, he is currently in the palace receiving treatment.” The Imperial family’s bodyguard replied.

At this time, Long An Qi didn't care about other things, not researching as to why Ye Lang would come back home alone, also not caring about the strong rain and wind outside, she immediately set off, rushing on a horse towards the imperial palace with Ye Cheng Tian.

The both of them were the very first people of Ye Family who reached the Imperial Palace, and following after, as the news of Ye Lang being struck by lightning got spread out, Ye Lan Yu, Ye Yi and his wife, and also Tigress who was sick, all of them braved against the thunderstorm and hurried towards the Imperial Palace.

"Cheng Tian, An Qi, you guys came already. Don't be anxious, the doctors are inside treating Ye Lang now. According to them, Ye Lang's life has no great threat."

When Ye Cheng Tian and his wife were brought to the place where the thirteenth prince was given treatment at, they at once saw the emperor and Princess Qi who was at the side with tear stains. The emperor also discovered them, and immediately told the situation to them.

"Then how is his situation right now, can we go in and take a look?" Long An Qi asked. Until she has seen her own son, she would not be able to stop worrying.

"It is still not possible right now, there can't be too many people inside as it would hinder them from treating Ye Lang. Don't worry, with those Imperial doctors and also treatment experts, priests, even if your son dies, they would still be able to bring him back to life." The emperor smiled slightly, seemingly wanting to break this

depressing atmosphere.

"Just what is going on, why did he come back home alone?" After calming down, Long An Qi began to question.

"It's all my fault, I should not have left him all alone in the room, it's my fault." Princess Qi said with remorse.

"Why did you let him be alone, it's not like you don't know him. If you don't know how to take care of him, you should not have brought him out." Long An Qi criticized unrestrainedly, not caring about the tear stains and remorseful expression on Princess Qi's face.

"It's my negligence, I forgot that Tai Ya was not by his side and thought that she was still together with him at that time." Princess Qi said faintly, tears seemingly to appear in her eyes once again.

"Tai Ya……She is not god, there are times where she would be sick too. Normally at this time when Tai Ya is sick, Xiao Lang would not mess around and would obediently stay at home to accompany her, clumsily taking care of her……"

When talking about Tigress, Long An Qi spoke somewhat absent-mindedly, and talking about that, when she thought about the way her son took care of Tigress, she felt like wanting to laugh, just that at this time, how was she able to laugh out.

"You all don't need to be like this, it's already said that Ye Lang

will be alright. I believe that they don't need long, the treatment inside will be finished, guaranteed to give you guys back a perfect condition Ye Lang." The emperor said immediately when he saw that the atmosphere became very depressing.

"That's right, what is going on with you two girls, my son's life and fortune is great, there will not be any problem, so stop looking so miserable already, it will bring unluckiness." Ye Cheng Tian held onto Long An Qi's and said. At such a time, the men have to give the women confidence.

"Also, An Qi, this matter cannot completely be blamed on others."

"That's right, this matter can't be blamed on Princess Qi, beforehand, we had already come to an agreement that young master Ye Lang would stay in the Imperial Palace, and young master Ye Lang had also agreed, but not sure why he ran back home again." The maid at the side said following, she did not want to see her owner be wronged. [If anyone is at fault, it's YOU, the maid]

"Let's not talk about this matter already, wait for Ye Lang to wake up and we will all know everything then." Princess Qi said. She knew that the reason for all this, no matter how hard they guessed, they would still not be able to guess it, because the thirteenth prince was just such a special person.

After a while passed, the Imperial doctors and other people all walked out in a line, releasing a good news towards the bunch of people who were waiting outside anxiously, letting the big stone in

their heart to lower by half.

“Young master Ye Lang’s situation is very stable and there is no big hinder with his body anymore. However, he may have to be unconscious for a period of time and would not wake up immediately, so you all do not have to go and wake him up, let him rest for a while.

“Then, can we go in and see him?”

“Can! However, you guys have to be a bit quiet, don’t disturb him.”

“Ok, we understand.”

When everyone entered, they immediately saw the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince, whose face was slightly frowning, not sure if it was due to pain or other reasons, letting Long An Qi and the others to feel a kind of indescribable heartache.

However, fortunately, the thirteenth prince’s life was in good condition, which let them be able to temporarily put their heart at ease. As long as he was alright, even if there were other things, they could also slowly think of a solution.

After a while passed, Tigress, Ye Lan Yu and the others had also reached here. Looking at the thirteenth prince who was unconscious on the bed, on Tigress’s face, there was sadness, anger

and a very complicated expression.

“What did you promised me before, you said that you would take good care of the young master, how did he became like this?” Tigress looked at Princess Qi coldly. I believe that, if not for being afraid of disturbing the thirteenth prince, Tigress would already be bellowing angrily right now.

However, this kind of low voice and cold toned question had a different kind of feeling, which could let others very clearly feel her anger.

“I also don’t know why it would turn out like this, it was originally all right, then don’t know why he suddenly left the Imperial Palace alone.” Princess Qi shook her head and said.

“I don’t care about what the reason why he left was, he is normally like this, you should have taken good care of him for me, if you can’t do it, you should not have promised me that you would!” Tigress’s voice was still that cold, “If there is anything with him, I will surely not let you off!!”

What Tigress had spoken, wasn’t a bit over, but saying it in the front of so many people, a person whose identity was a maid, speaking like this towards an empire’s princess, this seemed to make everyone feel that it was somewhat strange.

Those words made the emperor frown, made some other people be astonished, made some other people be angry, but Princess Qi herself felt ashamed, ashamed towards thirteenth prince and

Tigress.

“Audacious, who do you think you are, to dare to speak like this to the princess!” The princess’s maid rebuked angrily. In her eyes, Tigress was just only a female slave, no matter how the thirteenth prince doted on her, it would not be able to change this fact. A female slave, to actually dare to speak like that to the empire’s princess, as the princess’s maid, she would naturally not be polite towards Tigress! However……

[Oh no, she Di-int]

Chapter 28 – Puzzled (4)

“Shut up, if you dare to make noise, I will throw you out of here. Also, don’t get it wrong, the reason I stayed here is just only because of the young master, who you all are has nothing to do with me, I don’t care how noble the identity of you all is. Do not let the young master suffer from unnecessary harm, if not, I will make you all pay for it.” Tigress completely did not retreat half a step, on this matter, no one was able to make her take half a step back.

Perhaps it was that she was secure in the knowledge of her backing, or perhaps, it was merely because she was a newborn calf who was not afraid of a tiger.

However, after this matter, everyone knew that the Ye Family’s thirteenth prince was Tigress’ sensitive point. No matter who touched him, she would not have the slightest trace of politeness towards that person, including the Imperial Family and also the Ye Family.

This matter also made others to start guessing about a question which was forgotten by everyone, and that question was regarding Tigress’ background. Up till now, other than her name, everyone didn’t even know what her family name was, needless to say about other information regarding Tigress.

Beastman was a very special race, although they had never established a formal empire and existed in the form of tribes, their strength was completely not at all weaker than any empire. Even up to the point that they were not inferior in any aspects of an empire and may even be stronger in some aspects.

Of course, this was regarding their united strength. However, basically the situation was that they were governed separately, where a few races or simply a single race were under a tribe. Within the few biggest tribes, the majority of them only consisted of a single race, fundamentally being the large and influential clans within the beastman race.

Although there would also still be conflicts and contradictions between the beastmen from time to time, but when other races invaded them, they would unite together to eliminate the invaders of the foreign race completely.

This was very similar with the human race, where they were governed separately. But what was different was that, even when the human race was facing against a powerful enemy, there may still be endless inner conflicts within the human race. Even if a nation were to get invaded, the other nations would only just watch with folded arms at one side, unless it was to the point where the nation was seriously in grave need of help.

Within the beastmen, the tiger race was a large and influential clan. Their power was very huge, and they were fundamentally together with the fox race too. Having the shrewd fox, it helped the tiger race's strength to raise to a higher level.

Perhaps, this Tigress was an important person within the tiger race. If it was like this, she definitely had the qualifications to speak like that to the princess!

An empire's princess, concerning an empire, there were not just one or two, there may even be up to 10 or 20 of them!

Although it was said to be an empire's princess, but the princess may not be as important as an important person in the tiger race. And at most, would only be able to be equivalent in identity.

What's more, the beastmen tribes had always never cared much about status. In their world, strength was the most important thing. As long as your strength was strong enough, you would be an important person in the tribe!

Of course, Tigress had been together with the thirteenth prince since she was small, which also means, she would not be someone who would be an important person in the tribe because of her own strength.

Perhaps, Tigress had an identity which other people were not able to think of!!

Of course, these were merely guesses only, perhaps, Tigress may not be anyone important at all, and it was merely because of her personality that she's not afraid of anyone, not caring about any identity!

After all, within the beastmen, many races were all very hot-blooded, and would do things without thinking of the consequences. Only doing things which they considered that they should just go and do, even if the result would cause them to die, they would still advance bravely.

The tiger race was one of the representatives of those hot-blooded races. If not for the fox race to put forward plans and ideas, the combat of the tiger race would just be charging and breaking through the enemy lines with direct combat, and there would not be any whatsoever combat tactics at all.

……

After 7 days had passed, the thirteenth prince was still continuously sleeping on the bed, not having any trace of waking up at all. This caused the others to begin to feel a bit anxious, as they began to think that the thirteenth prince would just lie in bed for the rest of his life, never waking up at all. This was a very normal thinking, no matter who it was, after seeing someone not wake up for 7 days straight, they would all have this kind of thinking.

Right now, the thirteenth prince was already in the Ye Residence, on his own bed. After that day where they finished treating the thirteenth prince in the Imperial Palace, they moved him back here. During these 7 days, Tigress had always been by the side of the thirteenth prince. Even when sleeping, she would just lean on the bedside. This point, even Long An Qi, who was the mother, was only able to preserve for 3 days, then handed over to Tigress to take care of the thirteenth prince.

However, Long An Qi would still come every day, and only late at night would she then go back to her room to sleep. Every day was like this, and there was also one other person who was doing the same thing as her, which was Ye Lan Yu.

During the day, Long An Qi and Ye Lan Yu would let Tigress rest for a little bit, let her go and shower and such, temporarily leaving the thirteenth prince for them to take care of.

Tigress had rejected it at the start, but afterwards, she did not reject anymore, because she knew that this could possibly be a very long war and she must not tire herself out. If she were to collapse from exhaustion, then how would she be able to continue taking care of the thirteenth prince.

In these 7 days, Princess Qi would also come and visit the thirteenth prince, and moreover, it would be for half a day whenever she comes.

On this day, Tigress, Ye Lan Yu, Princess Qi and Long An Qi, these four women, were all keeping watch at the side of the thirteenth prince, hoping for him to wake up, hoping for him to open his eyes and look at them, anticipating those silly words that he would say.

Because they were anticipating it so much, they would always be pleasantly surprised by some of the thirteenth prince's meaningless little movements. Just that, every time after they were pleasantly surprised, they would be disappointed. And time after time of disappointments, it caused them to be exhausted physically and mentally.

In these seven days, it let them know what kind of a feeling 'a day

feeling like a year' was.

Suddenly, the thirteenth prince's hand moved a bit and Tigress, who was holding onto his hand, trembled for a bit and looked at the thirteenth prince immediately. But then, the thirteenth prince had no movement at all, causing her to feel disappointed again, thinking that this time was just the same as usual.

Except that this time, this movement was definitely not meaningless, and this time was definitely different than the usual.

Because, the next moment, the thirteenth prince suddenly opened his eyes and sat up, and furthermore loudly shouted a sentence. Although everyone did not know what this sentence meant, but they didn't care at that moment, as the four women all pounced forward and hugged the thirteenth prince happily, while the thirteenth prince's face was filled with a puzzled expression.

Just what was the sentence that the thirteenth prince said? According to the 4 woman's recount, it was a sentence that was very hard to understand, and also a sentence which did not match with the thirteenth prince's personality.

"Fuck, thieving old god, I have only just come out from closed-door cultivation, you didn't have to welcome me so grandly and give me such a huge meteor!!"

Thieving old god? Meteor? Just come out from closed-door cultivation? What was all that?

Did the thirteenth prince’s brain get damaged by the lightning?

Or it is that, he had this kind of experience before, or perhaps that he had this kind of dream before? Within the unconscious period, who would even know what kind of dream he had?

……

Chapter 29 – Merging Of The Soul (1)

Within Ye Family's thirteenth prince's room, after a moment of unusual silence, someone finally took the initiative to break this silence.

"Young master, you finally woke up, I was so worried about you!" Tigress' voice was filled with happiness, and at the same time, there was also a bit of sobbing in her voice which she have never had before.

"Who are you all?" The thirteenth prince looked at the girls who were hugging him confusedly. At this moment, he seemed to not recognize the few girls who are extremely important to him.

"……"

Silence. The four girls let go off the thirteenth prince and stared at the thirteenth prince with their beautiful eyes.

"Young master, don't you recognize us?"

"Son, you can't remember?"

……

The four girls immediately questioned the thirteenth prince closely and furthermore requested the Imperial doctor who lived

here to examine him and understand just what is going on with the thirteenth prince, why did the thirteenth prince seem to have lost his memory. Could it be that the thunderstrike caused his memory system to have issues?

"You all……"

The thirteenth prince looked at the four girls, and immediately he felt a kind of electric current in his mind, and then images started to flash through in his mind……

"Ah!" The thirteenth prince hugged his head and let out a heartrending painful scream, then once again fainted.

"Young master, young master!"

"Son!"

"Little brother!"

"Ye Lang!"

Four voices rang out at the same time, and four figures threw themselves at the thirteenth prince once again.

Very quickly, the Imperial doctors came over, and after understanding the situation, they immediately carried out treatment for the thirteenth prince to try to wake him up.

This time, the thirteenth prince reacted to the Imperial doctors' treatment and woke up. He slowly opened his eyes once again. Within his eyes, there was still a bit of bewilderment, but this bit of bewilderment vanished very quickly.

"You all……" The thirteenth prince looked at Tigress and the others.

"Young master, you don't have to try to think of anything now. It's ok if you don't remember us, you can slowly think about it next time." Tigress said immediately. She was afraid that the thirteenth prince would faint once again, suffer pain once again.

"You foolish girl, how could your young master not be able to remember you. I was just a bit confused just now." The thirteenth prince smiled slightly, his tone being very gentle and his talking speed still being as slow as usual, however, the slowness this time gave everyone a feeling which was different from the past.

Not only this, the feeling that the thirteenth prince gave to everyone right now seemed to have changed a bit too.

"Then, you remember us and did not suffer from memory loss?" Tigress represented everyone and asked.

"Of course I don't have memory loss. You are my obedient Tigress, she is my mother who has unequalled youth, she is my big sis who has no upright character, and she is my beautiful and gentle Princess Qi." The thirteenth prince said while smiling, and

pointed out the people who were present, one by one.

At this time, everyone seemed to not have noticed that the way the thirteenth prince addressed Princess Qi had completely changed, and was not ‘wife’ anymore.

At this time, everyone was happy that the thirteenth prince did not suffer from memory loss, and other things were temporarily overlooked by them.

“That’s great, you scared me to death young master, I was so afraid that young master would forget about me.” Tigress hugged the thirteenth prince, her tone still have a trace of fear.

“You are truly a foolish girl, even if I forget everyone else, I would not forget about you.” The thirteenth prince said while smiling. Just that, this sentence of his seems to have triggered the three other women who were present.

“What did you say?!” The three women immediately questioned the thirteenth prince, especially Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi, each of them twisted one of the thirteenth prince’s ear.

“Little bastard, your mother has truly given birth to you for nothing!”

“Little scoundrel, your sister have truly doted on you for nothing!”

Long An Qi and Ye Lan Yu each twisted one of the thirteenth prince's ear and bellowed angrily at the same time.

"That, I was wrong, I was wrong! What I meant to say was, even if I forgot who I am, I would also not forget every one of you." The thirteenth prince said immediately.

"Humph, I will spare you this time!" Long An Qi and Ye Lan Yu said at the same time again, then all of them gently hugged the thirteenth prince. But, not knowing how they actually hugged him, how was a thirteen year old boy able to be hugged by so many people.

"Ye Lang, do you still remember as to why you wanted to go back home." Princess Qi saw that everyone was more or less fine now and asked curiously. This question was also something which everyone wanted to know too.

"Eh, this could be counted as my silliness. The reason was that I wanted to go back home to notify Tigress that I will be staying over at your palace because of the thunderstorm." The thirteenth prince said somewhat embarrassedly.

"……"

Silence, everyone present truly didn't know whether to laugh or cry. If he was able to go back home, there would have been no need for him to stay over already. Such a foolish thing, only he would be able to do it.

After a while, Tigress asked: “Young master, were you afraid that I would be worried?” She was able to feel the meaning within all this. After all, she had been together with the thirteenth prince for so many years already. About what he was thinking, who else but her would be able to understand more.

“That’s right.” The thirteenth prince nodded his head and admitted.

“Young master……you are truly stupid!” Although Tigress said it like this, in her heart she felt incomparably warm, and felt that all that hard work in the past was not worth mentioning at all.

“Yeah, I am stupid. I don’t know how many stupid things I have done throughout my life, but this foolish thing I did was however right. If not, I would also not be struck by the lightning, and I would also not……” The thirteenth prince said while smiling, and after saying that much, he did not continue anymore.

Ye Lan Yu said petulantly: “Get stricken by lightning, and you are still happy about it, you are really a stupid fellow……Eh, that’s not right, little brother, the way you spoke today, why is it sort of strange, the feeling is completely different from the past.”

“That’s right, I also felt that it was a bit strange just now. There is a some kind of feeling which can’t be explained about Shao Lang’s words, just what is this feeling…” Long An Qi followed after and said, similarly feeling puzzled about it too.

“Yep, I also have this kind of feeling.” Princess Qi was the same too.

If it were some other people, they may perhaps not be able to sense the thirteenth prince’s change, but those girls who cared deeply about him, even if they had not noticed it for a while, they would still sense that something was not right after a while.

“It’s just your misconception, it must be like that.” The thirteenth prince said.

Tigress looked at the thirteenth prince, then afterwards simply said a sentence: “Young master has become smart!”

That’s right, it was this kind of feeling. In the past, he would like to talk nonsense, but today, the words he said did not give everyone that kind of foolish feeling. Moreover, saying that the things he did in the past were foolish, would it be something a foolish person would say?

“Little brother, could it be that, after you were struck by the lightning, your mind had opened up?” Ye Lan Yu stroked the thirteenth prince’s head and said very confusedly.

“……” The thirteenth prince remained silent, what Ye Lan Yu just said was indeed very matching with the fact.

The thirteenth prince is precisely Ye Lang, that lucky guy who discovered a martial arts treasury when he was in despair. But was

also extremely unluckily smashed by a meteor, which was hard to come by in a hundred years, and got annihilated from earth. Perhaps, it was due to his strong ‘dying wish’, he actually really became a prodigal son who has authority and power, which could allow him to always squander money and be prodigal.

Chapter 30 – Merging Of The Soul (2)

Just that, even though Ye Lang succeeded in reincarnating and had also found a family which fitted with his ‘dying wish’, his memory did not completely open up, and a portion of his soul seemed to have also been sealed off, causing his reincarnation to not be complete.

Perhaps, this was also some kind of cost for reincarnation. Just like in the folklores, after drinking Grandmother Meng’s soup, one would forget about everything, and everything would start anew. [Grandma Meng feeds you a ‘soup’ before you reincarnate to make you forget your past life.]

This kind of situation, if there had been no accident, the thirteenth prince may have continued his whole life like this. And until the day he died, he would still perhaps not possess a complete soul. But very luckily, after the thirteenth prince got struck by the lightning, it caused the soul, which was originally separated, to merge together once again.

The thirteenth prince right now is exactly Ye Lang. As of now, he would at the same time possess the memory of his previous life, and the memory which he possesses now. Because all the things that had happened were things that he had experienced himself, and were not memories inherited from other people, they were truly his own experiences.

It was not that kind of seizing over someone’s body, and was instead reincarnation and rebirth. He was able to clearly feel the feelings he had for Tigress, Ye Lan Yu, Long An Qi and Princess Qi.

Those were all his own feelings, which he would not be able to forget in this life, after all, this was not reading a story.

Right now, the reason for the thirteenth prince's specialness could also be explained. Why had his intellectual growth never grown, yet his brain function was however exceptional? It was precisely because of the portion of soul which he had lacked.

Right now, his soul has already been completed, and thus from now on, he would not be that foolish child anymore, and would become a normal person. Moreover, he would be a person which possesses the experience of two lives, and thus would have much more experience than other people, and would also have a much more incisiveness when looking upon things.

"Big sis, you have also become smart too." Ye Lang said while lightly smiling.

"Of course, your big sis is exceptionally intelligent, talent surpassing others……Wait, what do you mean with what you just said, are you trying to say that I was very stupid in the past?" Ye Lan Yu was still being conceited, but suddenly discovering the smile on Tigress' face, she immediately understood the meaning behind Ye Lang's words.

"Of course not, how could this be possible, why would I say that about my exceptionally intelligent big sis." Ye Lang shook his head, and denied while acting out a foolish look. This look had already been used by him for more than 10 years, and he was extremely proficient with it.

“You……trying to act foolish in front of me, I’m suspecting whether you were actually acting all this time.” Ye Lan Yu knocked on Ye Lang’s head petulantly, “However, this look, I like! I just like this silly look of yours.” After finishing speaking, Ye Lan Yu hugged Ye Lang, with her face pressed up against Ye Lang’s face.

“Yep, I also feel that the you in the past was much cuter.” Princess Qi said at the side.

“It’s all the same, no matter what look, your mom likes them all.” Long An Qi said while smiling. As a mother, she would not mind if her own son was a genius or an idiot.

“Eh……” Ye Lang right now was dumbfounded, “Then how about I just act foolish and dazed in the future, and you all just forget about the things that just happened.”

Since you all want me to act foolish, then I will just act foolish for you all to see. At that time, see if you all would be able to bear it.

Actually, acting foolish is also quite fun. At least, Ye Lang had also previously thought about continuing acting foolish. But he felt that acting like a fool for others, with no good reason, wasn’t that being a bit sick in the mind? Even if he acted, he should at least act like an ordinary person, why act as an idiot.

What’s more, he did not want to bluff and pretend in front of the four women who were present. Of course, some secrets could still be kept, after all, each and every person would have their own

secrets.

“There is no need to act as a fool for no reason. I don’t wish for you to be a genius, I just want you to be able to live the life of an ordinary person only.” Long An Qi said gently, and within her tone, there was an emotion that made others feel warm.

“Genius, this word has nothing to do with me. Ordinary person……” Within Ye Lang’s eyes, a certain feeling was shown. In his previous life, up till the end, he was just an ordinary person. In this life, it would be hard for him, even if he tried, to be an ordinary person.

At this time, Ye Lang suddenly had some kind of an indescribable comprehension. Perhaps, being an ordinary person would be a bit better, but for him, it was already an impossible matter.

Ye Family’s power, even if a member’s aptitude was ordinary, and the identity was ordinary too, that member would still definitely not be an ordinary person. What’s more, right now he was still the grandson of the family’s current patriarch, and was someone who was part of Ye Family’s core.

What’s the use of thinking so much about it though, identity is after all just an identity, and is not able to lock him up. Whatever he wants to do, he will still be able to do it.

Ye Lang shook his head, and shook away those messy thoughts of his, then afterwards said out his main goal from now on. And this goal, when spoken out, completely defeated the four women who

were present, being completely helpless towards him.

“In the future, I want to be an ordinary prodigal son!”

Even until the end, he still wanted to be a prodigal son, wanted to continue walking down the path of being prodigal. And moreover, he still wanted to bring being prodigal to a great height of development, bringing honor to his ancestors……

Bringing honor to his ancestors, I believe only Ye Lang himself would be able to think that the conducts of a prodigal son would be able to bring honor to his own ancestors. Normally, this kind of conduct would only let the ancestors of Ye Family become angry until they jumped out of their graves.

Just that, his prodigal conduct sometimes was very interesting as the outcome would always make others feel surprised. This also made him feel extremely gloomy.

Just take Tigress for example, Tigress is exactly the outcome of his prodigal conduct, and is perhaps the biggest profit of his entire life’s countless prodigal conducts.

“Tigress, from today onwards, let’s sleep together again during the night, until……” Ye Lang’s words were astonishing, putting the four women present into a daze. And it seemed he still had some words he wanted to say at the end, just that, no one tried to look into it.

Not long afterwards, the four women would also understand that, so the words he did not finish saying at the end were……

“Little bastard, you have indeed become smart already, knowing about hugging your Tigress and sleeping.” About this, Long An Qi of course did not mind. In any case, Tigress is Ye Lang’s female slave, and this also counted as a much more normal phenomenon.

“Only wanting to hug Tai Ya, you don’t want this big sis of yours anymore, humph!!” Ye Lan Yu was a bit jealous, but about this, she also did not prevent, and on her face, there was also an ambiguous smile.

“Ye Lang, you actually dare to say that you want an other woman to sleep with you in front of me, I want a divorce!!” This was Princess Qi’s indignant rebuke, just that everyone knew this indignant rebuke was feigned.

“Divorce what divorce, we are still not even married yet.” Ye Lang corrected Princess Qi.

“Marrying is just a sooner or later thing.” Princess Qi said while smiling.

“Then as you please, divorce then divorce.” Ye Lang said with a look showing that he was not afraid.

“You……hmph……” Princess Qi was angry and speechless

towards this.

As for Tigress' answer towards this, there was only one word and that was –

"Okay!"

There wasn't much of an issue about a thirteen year old sleeping together, just that, would a certain person really think like that, and did that certain person really simply wanted to let Tigress sleep at hide side, or was there another motive?

Or perhaps, he was also the kind of person who had a special hobby? After all, his mental state was already one of an adult, from theory, he should be.

The answer towards all these question was that, during a certain period of time after today, when Ye Lang hugged Tigress every night while sleeping, it was indeed just hugging, and there were no other actions at all. Of course, not counting the physiological natural reactions.

Chapter 31 – Merging Of The Soul (3)

On a morning three months later, Tigress woke up from her sleep, and as she looked at Ye Lang who was still asleep, a kind of faint smile appeared on her face, was it happiness? About this, no one could really be clear about it, perhaps, even she herself did not know that she was smiling.

Tigress' little tail shook around, caressing Ye Lang's body a bit, being a little bit mischievous...

Following, she began to carefully slip out from Ye Lang's embrace as she did not want to wake him up. Although she knew that when he was sleeping, he was just like a dead log, and would not wake up no matter how one tried to wake him up, unless he woke up by himself.

Fortunately, his daily schedule could still be counted as steady. And of one the norms were that he would basically sleep at 10pm, and he would wake up at around 5-6am.

Same as the past, Tigress prepared breakfast, and then began practicing martial arts at the courtyard. However, different from three months ago, there were a bit of changes in her technique.

Although it was still the same as in the past, brave and fierce, but now there was an additional subtle softness, and it was this kind of softness which made her technique become much more perfect. Not only did it not make others feel that the strength within the technique became weaker, instead it made others feel that it had

become much fiercer and stronger.

Extreme strength and yang, that kind of extreme path walked by sword users was not suitable for Tigress. Although she was born with innate godly strength, she was still after all a girl, and within her nature there was also a gentle side too, therefore inserting a bit of softness would instead be much better.

However, this kind of softness was also just a tiny bit. If it was not an expert, one would absolutely not be able to see the profoundness within the technique, and would only feel that Tigress' technique was really too domineering, as expected of a girl from the tiger race.

And this was not a comprehension that Tigress suddenly gained by herself, it was instead an expert who pointed it out for her. And this expert was exactly a certain person whose brain had the entire information about the martial arts treasury. Although Ye Lang did not practice all the martial techniques, he had still researched on the strong and weak points of every martial technique, and with just a look, he was able to make out other's weak points.

He had been together with Tigress for such a long time already, and had at an earlier time already become deeply familiar with Tigress' martial technique. He knew the weak and strong points of the martial technique like the back of his hand and immediately began his experimental pointing out and re-correcting of Tigress' technique.

Through his experiments, he was able to confirm that the martial technique of this continent was very strong. No, it should be said

to be extremely strong. The many years of passing on and refining had let this continent's martial techniques to develop to an unimaginable height. Therefore, if he wanted to depend on his martial arts treasury to be unequalled under this heaven, it was definitely not a simple matter.

This was a fact for no matter who it was, to want to be unequalled under the heaven was not a simple matter at all. Even if it was an extreme genius, even if one had hundreds of fortuitous encounters, to want to become number 1 under the heaven would also not be easy at all.

After all, the martial path was a path filled with hardships. No matter how many trump cards you had in your hand, it would still not be an easy matter.

Ye Lang knew this principle, and thus he would cultivate bit by bit, improving himself bit by bit, and slowly advance towards his goal of being unequalled under the heavens.

Actually, he did not really want to be unequalled under the heavens. He just wanted to have enough strength that he was able to absolutely protect himself, and that would be enough for him. This was a certain strategy of his to set his goal higher, so that this way, he would strive unceasingly, and would not slack off.

This was a little trick in his life, and of course, it was also a little trick of many others. To want to get 80 points, you would have to set your goal to be 100 points.

Right now, he was currently cultivating inner strength and martial arts. From the day he regained his memory, he had already begun to cultivate.

Although this body of his needed to cultivate from the start, but because he already had the prior experience of cultivating, his cultivation speed this time was very fast, and these three months time were comparable to three years cultivating in the past. After all, at that time, most of his time was spent on learning and comprehending things.

Just that, this kind of standard was at most only enough for him to be able to protect himself, and wasn't enough to be arrogant in front of other people. And also because he felt that one must be low-profile when conducting themselves, thus there existed no possibility of him being arrogant. Of course, this was just on the aspect of martial studies and there were no guarantees on other aspects.

He also did not choose to cultivate magic and douqi at the same time, and become some cool person who cultivated magic and martial arts at the same time. He merely cultivated ancient martial arts and inner strength.

Firstly, he did not want to divert his attention as he remembered one sentence which was left behind by the ancestor of the martial arts treasury – Do not bite off more than one can chew, keep to the working routine.

Secondly, he knew that no matter if it was douqi, magic or inner strength, they were all actually the same thing, cultivating one's

body and bringing out the potential within one's body. What was different was that douqi emphasized on the cultivation of the physique, magic emphasized on the spirit. And as for inner strength, using his own words to say, it could be said to be a kind of douqi, just that inner strength was much more meticulous that even the arteries and veins needed to be cultivated too.

Of course, this was just the rough sketch of the situation. Actually using his words to explain douqi, the majority of it belonged to outer strength and minority belonged to inner strength, and there were very few parts where both inner and outer strength were cultivated. But without exception, there was completely no cultivation of arteries and veins.

Other than the above reason, there was actually also another very important reason, which was also the most main reason. Which was that this body of his had no innate attribute at all, and no matter whether it was cultivating douqi or magic, there would be no additional benefit at all. Like this, he might as well just cultivate inner strength, where there would be no additional benefit from innate talent.

These were all Ye Lang's thoughts, but sometimes, the development of things would often become very weird, and even he himself would not expect it. And as to what he will become after he cultivated to the end, only by walking down the path step by step would he then be able to know the result. Perhaps, in the middle of the path, there may be a roundabout route, there may be obstacles, but about all those, he had at an earlier time had already been aware of them.

If he did not have any awareness for this, he basically would not need to cultivate anymore, and would just go and be a prodigal son only, where there would not be such a huge crisis to his life. Just that, once he loses the protection of Ye Family, he would not have any ability to protect himself anymore.

And about the martial arts prowess of Ye Lang, no one knew of it even after many years passed. This was not due to Ye Lang trying to hide it or anything, but it was just because the achievements he had for another aspect were just too outstanding and completely did not need to reveal the martial arts prowess he has. This was also a thing which he did not expect.

For him, there was a certain feeling he had towards his martial arts, like he unintentionally planted a seed and it grew into a marvelous plant. And about others knowing of his martial arts prowess, it was a thing which would happen many, many years later. The current Ye Lang was just conducting with low profile. Being a very ordinary prodigal son, a small little hedonistic son of rich parents where no one knew what kind of ability he actually had, because there was no chance for him to exhibit it, and he was also too lazy to exhibit his abilities.

Chapter 32 – Blade Of Tai Ya (1)

Ordinary prodigal sons, hedonistic sons of rich parents, in this Imperial Capital, in this Imperial Academy, they were practically everywhere. There wouldn't be many more with one more Ye Lang, and also wouldn't be any less with one less Ye Lang, belonging to the group that was not very essential and also the easiest to be neglected by others.

This kind of situation perhaps made others feel a bit mystical too, because previously when Ye Family's thirteenth prince was still an idiot, there were many people who paid attention towards him. And now when everyone knew that this Ye Family's thirteenth prince was not foolish anymore, it instead became more and more uninteresting to everyone, his reputation and the attention people paid towards the thirteenth prince dropped sharply.

Sigh, alright then, let me be an 'ordinary person' once again then!

Actually, his reputation dropping was also his own cause. Perhaps it was because he was too attention catching previously, perhaps it was because he was used to the life of an ordinary person in his previous life. His conduct had always been very low profile, and would only be eye-catching for a bit occasionally, but those times would always be forgotten by others very quickly. After all, this was the Imperial Capital, where the situation was always changing, and there would be things happening every day.

Of course, there was still another reason between all this, which is that he did not reveal his talent, letting others feel that his

aptitude was very ordinary. Everyone knew that Ye Family's thirteenth prince became smart already, but it was only just compared with the past, everyone felt that his aptitude was just that of an ordinary person, and there were even some people who had a very strange feeling, feeling that the Ye Family's thirteenth prince was not as smart as he previously was.

That's right, to say it on some certain aspects, it was indeed like this. The past Ye Family's thirteenth prince, when answering some question, although his answer were very strange, but most of the time the answer would have a unique view to them. Right now, when others asked him questions, his answer would be correct, but there would not be that unique view to it.

The more it was like this, the more people stopped paying attention to him. Adding on the fact that everyone knew that he was just a waste individual with no innate attribute, even if he was to get down to do something, he would also not be able to do much.

For the people of this continent, strength was still the most important point. Thus, everyone gradually forgot about Ye Lang this 'waste individual' which was hard to come by even in ten thousand years.

"Waste individual, young master is not a waste individual, he just disdains to bother with you guys." Every time when Tigress heard others talking badly about her young master, she would always feel very unhappy about it, and snort in her heart.

Within Tigress' heart, her own young master was the best, even if it was the past young master of hers who was stupid, her young

master was also still best. Needless to say about right now of course, if her young master was really a waste individual, how would he be able to point out things about her martial technique, and moreover give her a set of martial technique and douqi technique which were suitable for her?

After finishing practicing her fisting technique, she entered into the weapon phase, taking out a double-bladed long handle weapon. A polearm which was part of the 4 manufactures of Tang blade. The double-bladed with a 4 meter long handle polearm. It was equipped by heavily dressed foot soldiers, it was an extremely powerful weapon. On the battlefield, sweeping everything in front, being unstoppable. After the Tang dynasty, the trace of the polearm was rarely seen in history. The reason for it was the construction of the polearm was just too expensive.

However, if it was just one, I believe many people would be able to make one. And for Ye Lang, this prodigal son, it was completely a piece of cake.

After going through the design, placing an order of the materials, and then forging it. Under the attack of a huge amount of gold coins, a double-bladed polearm, that could be circulated around for hundreds of generations, was forged by using carefully selected materials and excellent workmanship.

Actually, this design was not made by Ye lang, but was instead him following the directions of a book from within the martial arts treasury, which was called ‘Weaponry chart’. He followed the directions for the polearm which were recorded in it. On that Weaponry chart, other than China’s successive generation of

weapons which were recorded in it, there was also some unpopular strange weaponry, and even the Zhuge Liang repeating crossbow, which could fire 3 times in a row repeatedly. Firearms were recorded in it too.

The worth of this weaponry chart, I reckon it would be worth more or less the same as what Ban's alchemy notebook was worth. However, this weaponry chart was only within Ye Lang's mind, and he would not bring it out to give to others.

If you want to ask why Ye Lang would remember this weaponry chart, it was actually because this was something of a men's romance. Being fond of researching weapon, no matter if it was unpopular weaponry or modern weaponry, they would go and research it.

Therefore, when he discovered this weaponry chart book, it was practically as if he had obtained the most valuable treasure, and he attentively looked and thoroughly researched the weapons in the weaponry chart.

Returning to our main topic, him picking out this polearm out of the numerous weapons was not a coincidence, but was picked by him after going through careful consideration. He felt that this polearm was the most suitable for Tigress. On this polearm's page, there was also the Yang Jia Spear Technique added, specialized for the polearm, exhibiting out the extreme limits of a polearm.

Yang Jia Spear Technique was created for the battlefield, and it was the most simple and direct technique. However, although the techniques was simple, the might was definitely no small matter.

The simpler a technique was, the stronger it flexibility, it enabled one to be able to develop techniques which were suitable for your own.

When Tigress saw this spear technique, which could not be counted as the Yang Jia Spear Technique anymore, her pair of eyes grew brighter, very obviously showing that she really liked this set of martial technique and polearm that Ye Lang custom-made for her.

Actually, this polearm and the real polearm within the 4 manufactures of Tang blade had some differences. On the weaponry chart, there were two versions of the polearm. One was the original one, and the other one was the improved one, which was made more suitable for martial arts users and not specialized for the battlefield, after all, it came from the martial arts treasury.

Within the improved version, there was also a very interesting mechanism, however, Ye Lang felt that this mechanism was not suitable for this world's martial techniques. But because he felt that one more mechanism in it was no big deal, so he just retained the mechanism in the polearm, since in any case, he did not care about the 'little' bit more manufacture cost, and wasn't this much more prodigal for him anyway?

But he did not tell anyone about the mechanism, including Tigress. It was not that he wanted to conceal it from Tigress, but just because he felt that Tigress would not use the mechanism. He understood Tigress' personality, and knew that she would not use that mechanism.

At that time when Tigress wanted to know what this polearm and set of martial technique were called, Ye Lang thought for a while and then said: “Let’s call this polearm, Blade of Tigress and as for the martial technique, let’s just still call it Yang Jia Spear Technique.”

Just as what was said above, Ye Lang did not want to take possession of the ancestors’ achievements, and also did not want to casually change the name of the technique. He respected those people, just like that person who added the Yang Jia Spear Technique, wasn’t that person still the same, still calling it the Yang Jia Spear Technique after adding it to the page, just that he added on some certain amended version at the back.

“……Young master, can’t you be serious for a bit, this weapon’s name, how do I even tell it to other people.” Tigress said petulantly.

“Is this name not good, then……let’s call it Blade of Tai Ya.”

“……Alright then, at least this is a bit better.” Tigress knew that changing the name again would not change into any good name either, then might as well just take this, since this name was passable.

On this continent, many things were also given this kind of name, using the owner or maker’s name to give it a name, like Claw of Ai Sa La, Blade of Ke Luo and so on.

Chapter 33 – Blade Of Tai Ya (2)

“Actually, this Blade of Tai Ya can still be much better. I will research on the weapon forging sheet next time, and forge a godly weapon for you.” Ye Lang looked at the Blade of Tai Ya in Tigress’ hand and seemed to still be somewhat unsatisfied with it.

If his words were to be heard by other people, they would surely have the impulse to choke him to death. God knows how many rare materials were used to forge this Blade of Tai Ya, it is practically a treasure which many yearn for, day and night, and adding on the fact that the smiths that were hired were all top-grade, the construction cost of this Blade of Tai Ya would let other shrink back from it. Even someone of the Imperial household may also not possibly possess this kind of weapon.

And he himself had instead forged this weapon to give it to his ‘female slave’, indeed worthy to be called a prodigal son.

Never mind this point, what would make others feel even more depressed and drive them mad, was that he actually still felt that this weapon was not good enough.

And the so-called weapon forging sheet, it was not one of the products of the martial arts treasury, but was instead this world’s technique, which was recorded within Ban’s alchemy notebook. It made use of alchemy to forge the weapon, or perhaps refine the weapon. Of course, there were also similar books within the martial arts treasury, and Ye Lang had also mixed those and his own knowledge together to combine it into a new technique.

However, time is needed for him to do those things, and at present, he still did not have this ability. Perhaps a few years later, he might be able to succeed in combining it into a new technique, or perhaps there might still be a longer time needed.

“It is already very good, I really like it a lot.” At that time, Tigress gently caressed her Blade of Tai Ya and said contentedly.

……

Stab, carry, hack, chop……

Tigress held onto her Blade of Tai Ya and made different kinds of movements in the courtyard, brandishing the pole arm vigorously and powerfully, while waves of strong air dispersed to all directions with every movement she did with the pole arm.

……

“Backstroke thrust!”

Tigress turned her body and did a beautiful spin with her Blade of Tai Ya, stabbing directly behind her, causing the pole arm to bring forth a strong douqi and break into the sky.

“Clap, clap……”

Applause started ringing out, and Tigress saw that Ye Lang was

standing in front of her. Due to being too absorbed in her practice just now, she did not realize that Ye Lang had already come out.

"Young master, you woke up already? I will serve you immediately……" Tigress immediately put away her Blade of Tai Ya, then said in a bit of a rush.

"There's no need already, I have already washed my face and eaten breakfast. You can continue practicing. Your backstroke thrust is getting better and better, even without a spear head, you would also be able to stab a person to death." Ye Lang said with a slight smile.

Actually, Tigress had already prepared everything, Ye Lang only needed to pick up the chopsticks to start eating, pick up the towel to wash his face. If he wasn't able to do even those things, then he should really just go and perish already.

"Thank you, young master." Tigress once again said it habitually, and within her heart, there was a bit of confusion, but up to now, she hadn't gotten an answer to what this confusion was.

She did not know why her young master said that without a spear head, she would also be able to stab a person to death. This was actually very simple, she just needed to add a bit of douqi, and without even being highly proficient in the technique, she would still be able to stab a person to death.

After this, Ye Lang took out a pile of books and continued studying his alchemy. Right now, he was more and more

captivated with alchemy as he had discovered a lot of interesting things.

Alchemy was not only able to be used in fighting, it could also be used in many other aspects. For example the weapon forging sheet which he had been researching recently, where by using the transformation formation within alchemy, forging out a weapon without the use of a smelting furnace could be achieved. So, as long as you practiced until a certain realm, you could even achieve a height which exceeded normal forging.

Moreover, the speed of forging with alchemy was much faster than forging normally. The only weak point was that it required exceedingly high alchemy techniques, and also huge amounts of energy, but there was a limit to the energy a person could use.

And since it could be used to forged weapon, it could also be used to forge other things.

This was just merely one of the things within alchemy, and there were still many more things which were even more fun. Especially after Ye Lang combined the things of the martial arts treasury with alchemy. That effect was simply like a chemical reaction happening, having a reaction which one could not imagine.

And those things were exactly odd formation techniques and pill concocting techniques!

Odd formation technique is a small item within Qi Men Dun Jia.

However this small item was able to let a person use his entire life to research on it and the entire Qi Men Dun Jia was of course much more all-embracing.

According to the modern age's research and explanation, Qi Men Dun Jia was the essential work of the Chinese people, which was also the first big secret technique of the three big secret treasures. Ji Men, Liu Ren and Tai Yi, which is I Ching's highest standing of prediction learnings, having the reputation as monarch of all studies, studies of seizing heaven's and earth's luck, and also celestial body theory, the monumental science work of humans and the earth's movement laws.

[I got so very confused, luckily you can just skip this.]

Everyone knew that the 9 symbolic seals belonged to the Qi Men 9 symbol technique, and didn't really belong to Buddhism. And this was also able to let one research for a very long time, in short, the things which were included within this were just way too many.

Also because of this reason, about the research of Qi Men Dun Jia, Ye lang had only pried into the beginning only, but just that was already enough to let him benefit endlessly.

As for pill concocting technique, this was definitely a legend in many parts of alchemy. There were different methods leading to the same result. Gun powder was the product of pill concocting technique, and also the legendary immortality pill.

When both sides combine, the you could only wait and see for the

result only.

The thing which Ye Lang needed to do currently was to merge the knowledge of his martial arts treasury into this world. This process needed a very long period of time and constant experiments.

Of course, he would also not deny the knowledge of this world, on the contrary, because he wanted to merge the knowledge which did not belong to this world with this world, he needed to go and and gain more understanding of this world. Only by completely understanding, would he then be able to merge both knowledges together into one.

And his identity's background allowed him to have plenty of time, energy and money. Allowing him to be able to do experiments without worry and care. Adding on that the thing which he was originally learning was alchemy, he was able to undergo his research under the situation where everyone did not know that he was researching.

As long as he did not take the initiative to reveal it, there would be basically no one who would know about what kind of alchemy abilities he had.

Time slowly passed by, and just like this, one of them immersed himself in reading books, being extremely quiet, while the other one was brandishing her pole arm, just like a thunderstorm.

Tigress' movements became faster and faster, until when her

figure was practically unable to be seen, and everywhere was just the shadow of her Blade of Tai Ya, and her strength qi which filled the entire courtyard.

Although the pole arm's shadow was everywhere, Tigress' techniques were however not complicated at all, and were just merely the result brought forth by her speed. The speed with which she brandished her Blade of Tai Ya was already so fast that she was able to leave an after image.

After all, leaving after images showed the strength of a martial arts user. To be able to reach this point, she could already be counted as having entered the expert level of human grade. Of course, this was just the human grade of ordinary experts, and according to the grade, it could be counted as human 5 grade.

Chapter 34 – Blade Of Tai Ya (3)

Returning to the main topic, the strong point of Tigress' martial technique was simply being straightforward, where there were no complicated changes. Her entire life's cultivation was to exhibit this strong point about herself.

And with Ye Lang's saying,"The martial path, it goes from simple to complicated, and then back from complicated to simple. Upon reaching the end of the martial path, the techniques used would usually all be simple, even up to the point of them being just straight punches.

But, when facing against someone of this realm, even if you knew what kind technique they were going to use, and where the technique would hit you at the end, you would still always be unable to avoid it, unless you were also a peerless expert of the same realm.

Tigress being like this also did not mean that she had leave out the process in the middle, and she had also similarly gone from simple to complicated. Just that her complicated was much simpler compared to others.

After the storm reached the extreme, it suddenly became serene, changing from extreme movement to extreme calmness. The douqi had also disappeared along with the changes, causing the entire courtyard to become serene again.

And during this process, there was a point which was very odd.

From the start to finish, Ye Lang's side was always very serene, even the pile of books which he placed on the table were also, similarly, very serene, not being affected by Tigress' douqi at all.

This was not that Tigress was looking after Ye Lang, she was still not able to do this point yet. The only explanation was Ye Lang himself, not sure what kind of method he used, he made the douqi near him calm down.

This was very odd, and if this was seen by others, they would surely be extremely confused, not understanding why the thirteenth prince, who did not how to do anything at all, was able to neutralize the douqi!

Could it be that this thirteenth prince was deeply hiding and not revealing his talent? Or was it that he had some special alchemy equipment, which was able to suppress the douqi!

Tigress, however, did not feel that it was odd. It was perhaps because she did not notice it, or perhaps she was already used to it, since after all, Ye Lang had always been sitting at the side like that.

What's more, Tigress would discover new things at the side of Ye Lang every day, and if every single thing surprised her, her mental state would have long become hypersensitive!

"Young master, right now, I have already completely finished practicing Yang Jia Spear Technique to perfection." Tigress seemed to want to take credit for her achievement, wanting Ye Lang to praise her for a bit. After all, to Tigress, one sentence of

praise from Ye Lang would be able to make her feel very happy.

Of course, this was just merely because of the feelings between the two people and not Tigress' characteristic preference. If it was changed to someone else who praised her, she would just straightforwardly ignore it. And as for Ye Lang, he would also let Tigress praise him sometimes too, wanting to let her adore him for a bit.

This was a very special feeling, and also a very ordinary feeling. Just that in the modern society, this kind of feeling was quite rarely seen, and that was the feeling between close innocent childhood friends who grew up together.

The kind of intimate friend that did not distinguish between male and female, and accompanied one while growing up, playing together, and after growing up, shared your happiness, suffering, success, and failure with you.

"Yep, not bad, you just need to have a bit more control with your technique now, it only needs time now. I, your young master, am also very strong, I have already completely memorized the entire Ban's notebook, and right now, I also just need to research, also just a matter of time." Ye Lang smiled and answered, and from the beginning to the end, his gaze did not leave from the book in his hand.

"Hmph, praising me half-heartedly again. I'm going to go bathe now, you just sit here and don't move." Tigress snorted lightly, seemingly a bit unhappy with Ye Lang's way of praising her, and ordered him not to wander off, before entering into the house to go

bathe.

“Oh, got it.” Ye Lang replied very naturally and continued on with reading his book, enjoying this moment of serene.

After a good while, a young lady rushed into the courtyard from outside, and chopped on Ye Lang’s head as she asked: “Little brother, what did you hire a mercenary group for, the mercenary group has already come to our house, just what do you want to do? You couldn’t be trying to be prodigal again, and playing around right?”

Needless to say, this young lady was Ye Lan Yu, and according to her experiences, all of these kind of similar conducts of Ye Lang, most of the time, would belong to him being prodigal, purely just his prodigality.

Ye Lang oddly went into a daze for a while, then slowly lifted up his head and continued being in a daze as he looked at Ye Lan Yu, as if he was thinking about something.

At this time, Ye Lan Yu still had not discovered Ye Lang’s odd behavior, and continued saying: “It must be like this, if not why would you want to hire Anna Mercenary Group. They are one of the top 100 large scale mercenary groups in the entire continent, and moreover, one of the few mercenary groups which consisted of only females. Little brother, your motive is not pure oh……”

“I am pure.” Ye Lang replied blankly.

“……” Ye Lan Yu remained silent.

“Little brother, what are you trying to do this time. Not only did you hire them, you also requested for them to dispatch their entire group, there should not be one person less. Since you hired them for an escort mission, just what is it that you want them to escort?” Ye Lan Yu was somewhat unable to grasp the situation, the situation made her feel very muddle-headed.

From her understanding, Anna Mercenary Group had received Ye Lang’s commission request 2 months ago, but only now did they show up to do the escort mission. This was also not because they were too busy, but because that Ye Lang’s request was a bit weird.

Ye Lang’s request was that he wanted her entire mercenary group to carry out this mission. It must be the entire group, and the time was of no issue, he could wait for their entire group to gather together.

The mercenary group only knew that the mission this time was an escort mission, and as for the other details, they completely knew of nothing at all. Originally, for this kind of thing, mercenary groups would normally ask clearly about the situation, then afterwards they would look at the situation, before deciding on how many people to dispatch. They would not dispatch the entire group. Even if the client wanted the group to dispatch the entire group, they may also not agree to it. But they agreed to it this time, just because the commission fee which Ye Lang put forward was just too generous. An amount which would make any mercenary group not be able to reject it at all.

Right now, they understood one thing clearly, which was that this Ye Family‘s thirteenth prince was indeed worthy to be called an ultra-prodigal son, completely not treating money with seriousness at all!

“You sure that this is not one of your new tricks to be prodigal?” Ye Lan Yu looked at Ye Lang who was in a daze, and asked very suspiciously.

Although Ye Lang was much more peaceful for the past 3 months, and practically did not go out to be prodigal at all, and also did not do any things which were off the scale, but the impression he gave to other people was just too strong. Thus, making it hard for others not to suspect that this was a new trick which he came up to play with, making others suspect that the treasure which he wanted to be escorted was not a treasure at all.

Moreover, Ye Lan Yu had been by Ye Lang’s side since they were little, and she felt that he absolutely had nothing which needed to be escorted. This was because he did not have anyone to escort to. Since he was born, he had always been in the Imperial Capital, and did not have any contact with the people outside, so how would he have anything that he needed to send off somewhere.

“No!” Ye Lang seemed to have sobered up, then afterwards used a tone which brought forth a faint feeling of being worried: “This time is not for playing, it is for a serious matter……”

Chapter 35 – It's Not A Crime For A Man To Cry (1)

At this time, Ye Lan Yu also did not have the leisure to go and look for evidence about Ye Lang's wrongdoings, and did not want to discuss whether his past conducts were acting or not. Just that, she was feeling very odd as to why this little brother of hers would have this kind of tone.

Worried, this kind of expression had never appeared on this little brother of hers before. Since he was little, although he had some flaws, he was still happy and merry, not having a tiny bit of worry at all.

Now that he had become a normal person, he was still also the same, being relaxed and carefree every day, researching alchemy during the day and going to sleep while hugging Tigress during the night.

What thing would be able to let him be worried about?

Ye Lan Yu wanted to ask him, but she did not have the chance to ask. At least, she did not have this chance for the time being.

Because at that time, just exactly then, Tigress walked out from the house. Tigress, who had just finished bathing, brought along a sweet scent with her. And as she walked towards Ye Lang, she looked with a bit of curiosity at the 2 siblings who were at the courtyard.

Just what happened? Why is young lady Ye Lan Yu's expression a bit odd. Young master's expression is also a bit odd too.

Tigress' sense was very sharp, being able to spot even this kind of small detail. Not sure if her sense was really that sharp or if it was because of the connection between her and the young master.

Ye Lang stood up and walked towards Tigress silently, then hugged her in his embrace. Just like that, he silently hugged Tigress, not saying a single word at all.

"...??" Tigress and Ye Lan Yu felt strange, just what is going on with him?

Although, during the night when it's time to sleep, Ye Lang would hug Tigress and sleep together, he had never hugged her during the day, and would even more not do this in front of others.

"Young master, what's going with you? Did anything happen?" At the start, Tigress also did not say anything, and just let Ye Lang hug her. However, this hug of Ye Lang was never ending, even after hugging for 10 minutes, he was still hugging her without moving and speaking.

This made Tigress feel even stranger, completely not able to grasp even the gist of what was going on.

Ye Lang slowly separated from Tigress, and with his hands

holding onto her shoulder, eyes looking into her eyes, he said gently: “Tigress, don’t blame me, and don’t be angry either, this is all for your own good.”

“...?? Young master, what are you talking about?” Tigress was even more confused now, what was the meaning of those words.

“Today……” Ye Lang looked at Tigress, wanting to say out the reason as to why he hired the mercenary group, wanting to explain everything. Just that, at this time, another person rushed into the courtyard.

“Little bastard, just what kind of game are you trying to play again? What is the meaning of the mercenary group outside! What kind of treasure did you want to send off to have actually hired the entire Anna Mercenary Group, and the commission you offered is actually reaching up to million! You haven’t been prodigal for 3 months, and I thought that you had stopped already. Never would I have thought that you were actually storing up all your energy and waiting for a chance to use it all at once!” Long An Qi, who rushed into the courtyard, reprimanded Ye Lang loudly.

That’s right, a million gold coins. Just what kind of concept was this?

An ordinary mission would only cost a commission fee of a few gold coin, a much more advanced one would cost and amount of 2 digits. A mission which had the risk of danger along with it was double the usual price. A much more advanced mission, which was time consuming and required a great deal of effort, would cost hundreds or thousands of gold coins, and also the same, a mission which carried the risk of danger was double the usual price.

However, even if it was a top grade mission, which was something extremely dangerous, like slaughtering a dragon, the commission fee would also be more or less a million gold coin, and perhaps maybe even less than a million gold coin.

Of course, the calculation of this commission fee was calculated using the standard of Anna Mercenary Group. Sometimes, a mission required the cooperation of many mercenary groups. Take for example the slaughtering a dragon mission, it was not a mission that only 1 or 2 mercenary groups would be able to handle, and more helpers would need to be hired. After counting up everything, a mercenary group would only be able to get up to about a few hundred thousand gold coins for the mission.

Therefore, comparing it with the current mission which Ye Lang offered, the quality to price ratio far surpassed any other kind of mission. And any other mercenary group would also definitely agree to take on this mission if they were hired. Because this would help develop their mercenary group faster.

And as for the Anna Mercenary Group, after taking on the mission this time, in the next few years, their group would be able to develop extremely fast, and rush to a spot of the top 10 mercenary groups shortly.

This was equivalent to getting a large sum of investment. No wonder the Anna Mercenary Group would summon everyone back within just 2 months of time. If it was changed to a usual mission, they may not be able to summon everyone back even within half a years time.

Also because of this, the Anna Mercenary Group gave Ye Lang a honorary group captain position, viewing him as the most high-ranking honored guest. Towards his requests, if it could be free of charge, they would not charge him anything. Although, Ye Lang, this prodigal son, would not care about whether If it was free of charge or not.

The benefit for Ye Lang? Speaking from the most basic, it would be being able to acquire the information which the mercenary group has. Ye Lang understood the importance of information. In the future, he would also feel that this million which he had spent was still too little.

There was also one more benefit, which was that the entire Anna Mercenary Group consisted of only females. And what's more, there were a lot of beautiful woman too, especially the group captain, Anna. Therefore, Ye Lang, who was the honorary group captain, had also one more benefit which was unimaginable.

In short, in one sentence, this formless benefit, it was unable to be bought with even a million gold coins.

However, right now, everyone was still not able to see the benefits, and were only able to see that Ye Lang was once again being prodigal and squandering a large amount of money.

"A million……young master, you are being too reckless, what treasure do you want to send?" After Tigress heard the amount,

she herself was also dazed, as this amount could be said as the highest record amount of Ye Lang's prodigalness. In the past, it was at most 6 digits, but right now, it actually reached 7 digits.

"I want to send my most, most precious treasure in this entire life, I will not let this treasure of mine suffer from any harm." Ye Lang looked at Tigress and smiled.

"...?? What? Do you have this kind of treasure? Even Ban's alchemy notebook, you would also use it as a table mat. Since little, you had never had anything which you really cared about." Tigress said suspiciously. Since little to now, she had never seen Ye Lang treating anything as a treasure at all.

And if a few certain alchemists were hear this sentence of Tigress, they would definitely cry and shout, and send for a punitive expedition against Ye Lang. To actually use Ban's alchemy notebook as a table mat... That notebook within his hands was the original one, and not the duplicated version!

"All those are all dead things, and I have already memorized it all already, so there is no need to care about those. My treasure is you, you are forever the most treasured treasure of mine." Ye Lang smiled towards Tigress. Although this sentence of his seemed to be a bit casual, and seemed to have a bit of joking feel to it, everyone was able to feel that this sentence of his was serious, and moreover, was the kind of seriousness which cannot be doubted.

"Humph, making fun of me again, you want to treat me as a treasure forever, yeah right.....Wait a minute, what did you say?" At the start, Tigress still had not reacted, but very quickly, she

discovered the issue about Ye Lang's sentence.

To say that she was a treasure, then doesn't it meant that, she was the one who was going to be escorted?

If it is like this, then it would all make sense as to why he would tell her to not blame him, and also not to be angry at him. So it was like this, he wanted to send her away.

Tigress thought of this, and her heart immediately tightened as she looked at Ye Lang, and asked while feeling a bit scared: "Young master, could it be that you want to send me away, you don't want me anymore?"

"Silly girl, why would I not want you anymore!" Seeing Tigress who was scared, Ye Lang held her into his embrace, and said so very gently.

"Then why do you want to send me away?" Tigress trembled lightly in Ye Lang's embrace, still being afraid.

Chapter 36 – It's Not A Crime For A Man To Cry (2)

"Eventually, you will have to go back home, you can't always stay by my side, you have your own family too. You have already been here for 8 years, your childhood should not only have me, it should also have your family too. It is still not too late, you still can be with your family." Ye Lang said softly.

"....." After hearing what Ye Lang said, Tigress remained silent, as she quietly and tightly hugged Ye Lang. She seemed to understand that after this hug, they may be separated for a very, very long time.

At this time, Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi suddenly felt ashamed, they only let Tigress take care of Ye Lang, and from the start, they had never considered Tigress' situation.

Perhaps, only the most intimate friend would be able to understand, and Ye Lang had never looked at Tigress as a female slave at all, and instead regarded her as his own close childhood friend who he grew up together with, his most, most intimate friend. So how would he not be able to feel Tigress' feelings of thinking about her home.

Actually, in front of Ye Lang, Tigress also did not hold back anything from him, and had also talk to him about her family before. She had talked about who was in her family, and sometimes when she would be in a daze under the moon alone, it would mean that she was missing her family.

Because of this, Ye Lang also knew that she was not an orphan, and not only was she not an orphan, her parents and elders were all still healthy, and her family all doted on her.

The Ye Lang in the past was still muddle-headed, and simply did not know how to handle this matter. Thus, just like this, the matter was dragged on for 8 years. The Ye Lang right now knew that this matter had to be handled immediately, but he still wanted to be a bit of selfish, and let Tigress continue accompanying him for 3 more months.

Of course, during this 3 months, he had also done many things, like for example, teaching Tigress some martial techniques and some special skills to protect herself.

Right now, everyone also seemed to understand why Ye Lang suddenly requested Tigress to sleep together, so it was actually at that time, he already had this kind of plan. And during this period of time, he also had to bear the pain of having to separate from Tigress, but on the surface, he was still just the same as usual.

Thinking about this, Tigress' heart seemed to ache once again, and naturally, she would also not blame Ye Lang for not having told her about it.

"But, young master, if I leave, there would be no one to take care of you, you are always that clumsy." Tigress' tone brought along a faint sadness.

“Right now, I won’t be that stupid like in the past anymore, I can take care of myself, you don’t have to worry.” Ye Lang said gently, wanting to let Tigress feel reassured.

“As if! You are not much better than you were in the past, often being muddle-headed and stupid.” Tigress straightforwardly exposed Ye Lang’s comforting words. Her understanding about him was much more than what he understood about himself.

Although Ye Lang had recovered his memories, but just as Tigress had said, he would be muddle-headed when doing things sometimes, and his reaction were also very slow, not sure if he was affected by his earlier childhood or he himself was originally just this kind of person.

Fortunately, all those were just about the small matters, letting others feel that he did not lose the point that made him cute.

About all that, Ye Lang did not really care much. And Long An Qi, Ye Lan Yu, and the others also did not mind it much either. After all, there would be people helping him handle the small matters, and it was all alright as long as he wasn’t muddle-headed about the big matters.

Perhaps, the only person who would really be worried about this thing would just be Tigress herself.

“It will be alright, when the time comes, I will be fine.” Ye Lang casually said.

“……” Tigress did not say anything anymore, just quietly stared blankly at a spot.

At this time, within the courtyard, no one made any sound, only just quietly waited for the time to pass by. Ye Lang and Tigress seemed to want the time to not pass by, and wanted the time stop at this moment.

Just that, time would not stop for anyone, whatever were to come, would come in the end. The arrival of Group Captain Anna gave Ye Lang no choice but to part from each other, and begin discussing about this mission this time.

His request was very simple, not hesitating about any costs, they must ensure that Tigress does not suffer from the slightest harm at all, and if they can’t do it, they can call others to come help.

Towards Ye Lang’s request, the beautiful Anna was dazed. A bit not daring to believe it. Was this real?

It was not that the request was too demanding, but that the request was just too simple. Just for only escorting Tigress, there was simply no need for their entire mercenary group to be dispatched, and also no need for such a big amount of commission fee. Only 10%, no, just 1% of the commission fee was enough for the escort.

In the continent, Tigress was not an important figure at all, at least, she currently was still not. And even if she were to set out on the journey by herself, other than perverts, there would be no one

who would try to make trouble for her. For this kind of person, there was naturally no need for such a big troop-arrangement to guard.

But whatever else, since Ye Lang's request was like this, and he had also given such a big amount of commission fee, they would naturally escort Tigress with their best, not letting Tigress suffer from any tiny bit of harm at all.

After this event, many people would ask Ye Lang as to why he had paid a commission fee of a million gold coins, a mere Tigress was simply not worth this amount. And even if it was he himself, the commission fee would not be that big

This question, Ye Lang did not answer, he disdained to answer this question, disdained to discuss about the worth of Tigress, as this would let him feel that it was a kind of a humiliation towards Tigress.

"Young master, I'm going, you have to take good care of yourself, I will come back." This sentence was said by Tigress after much reluctance to part, and it seemed as if it was a life and death separation situation.

Come back. Of course she would come back. From the start, she had only intended to go back home for a certain period of time, then afterwards, she would let her family arrange for her to attend Imperial Academy. The beastmen students in Imperial Academy were also not a small amount.

How could she not worry about Ye Lang, she would not be able to stop worrying about him for her entire life!

“I got it already, I will take good care of myself. If you don’t come back, I will go over and look for you.” Ye Lang replied, with his understanding about Tigress, he naturally knew that she would come back.

“Also, young master. Before I come back, don’t you sleep together with Princess Qi, other girls would be even more out of the question.” Tigress said lightly, seemingly to be teasing Ye Lang, yet seemed to be serious too.

“Don’t worry, I am not such a casual person!” Ye Lang said very seriously.

“Is your next sentence that, if you were to casually stand up, you would not be a person?” Tigress said while smiling and this sentence let Ye Lang to be dazed.

[That’s what it literally says, we think it has THAT kind of meaning.]

“……. Who taught you those words.” After being dazed for a while, Ye Lang asked very curiously. According to what he knew, this sentence should not be popular in this world.

“Oh you, you said this before 2 years ago. At that time, you were……” Tigress said lightly, explaining slowly and detailed about the situation during that time.

“……” Ye Lang only listened silently. This matter, even he himself had also forgotten about most of it. Yet, she still remembered that clearly, and this was just merely a very, very small interesting incident in life.

How many times had it been? The members of the Anna Mercenary Group at the side could not help thinking about it in their mind. This was already not the first time the two of them had said goodbye, and then talked about another subject, being reluctant to part with one another.

These two little fellows were already sticking and lingering together like this, who knows how they would be like when they grew up!

However, everyone was very fond of the feelings between the two of them. That kind of very, very pure feeling, which did not have any impurity in it at all, made everyone think back to their own childhood, thinking back of their playmate in their childhood……

Such a precious feeling, but how many people would even be able to keep and continue on with such a precious feeling.

Hope that the two of them would be able to always retain this feeling, until eternity! This was seemingly the wish of everyone present.

[Damn, I feel all fuzzy inside too. Cries]

Chapter 37 – It's Not A Crime For A Man To Cry (3)

"Alright, young master, I'm really going now! Help me by taking good care of yourself, alright?" Tigress looked at Ye Lang, her expression having a bit of reluctance and concern.

Help me by taking good care of yourself, alright?

This sentence let Ye Lang's heart be moved deeply, that kind of feeling was unable to be expressed with words.

"Alright, I surely will……"

Ye Lang looked at the troops which escorted Tigress get further into the distance slowly, until he wasn't able to see the shadow of the carriage which Tigress sat on anymore, he was still standing and stared blankly at the door for a good while. If Ye Lan Yu hadn't spoken, he would perhaps have stood there for a much longer time.

"Reluctant to part now right! Are you regretting for not being a bit more selfish?" Ye Lan Yu stood at Ye Lang's side and said lightly.

"What is there to be reluctant about, I can still live on as usual by my own! Selfish. In my dictionary, there is only 'unselfish dedication'!" Ye Lang said while somewhat trying to be brave. Anyone was able to see that he was trying to be brave.

“Alright, let’s not talk about this anymore. I am very baffled, since you treasure her so much, why did you not send her back home yourself?” Ye Lan Yu also did not want to provoke Ye Lang, seeing him suffer, she herself also did not feel good.

“I did want to do so, but would you guys agree?” Ye Lang asked in reverse.

“No!” Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi’s answer was very clear-cut. The Ye Lang right now, how would they be reassured about him going out, they would resolutely oppose it.

“Not only would you guys disagree, she also would not agree either.” Ye Lang looked at the place where Tigress slowly faded away and said faintly.

She would not agree, not only for the reason that Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi had in their minds, but also the other worries she had, for example, she did not want Ye Lang to be seen by her tribe as she did not know how her own race would treat her own young master.

This matter, Ye Lang was also able to guess it. In the past, she had also said it before. At that time, when Tigress talked about her family, and the little thirteenth prince said that he wanted to go her house and take a look, she immediately opposed the idea. For her, who was totally submissive towards her own young master, it was something which was rarely seen.

That's right, Tigress herself indeed admitted that she was Ye Lang's slave. But would the people of her race acknowledge this identity of hers? It was hard to say, and maybe they would feel that this was a humiliation to them, and would do some actions which were harmful towards Ye Lang.

Perhaps, after understanding the situation and knowing that Ye Lang was her benefactor, the people of her race would let Ye Lang off. But this was still an uncertain factor. Thus, she would not let Ye Lang go and take risks, she wanted to confirm if it was alright, before allowing Ye Lang to come visit her family.

Ignoring all that, even if those reason didn't exist, if Ye Lang were to escort Tigress back home, Tigress would also escort him back home afterwards, continuing and repeating like this. Thus, only if Ye Lang does not escort her back home, then can she really go back home!

Turning around to leave……

"Eh?" Ye Lan Yu suddenly discovered that when Ye Lan Yu turned around, she felt a bit of water element fluctuation, could it be that……

"Little brother, are you crying? Ha, ha, you're crying……"

That's right, Ye Lang's eyes were a bit wet, he was indeed crying.

At the start, Ye Lan Yu felt that Ye Lang would not admit It, but

Ye Lang instead did a thing which would be unforgettable to the others, not only did he admit, he also said.....

"It's not a crime for a man to cry! Cry, cry! Even strong people have the right to break down! If only a broken heart is left behind after laughter, why must it be so hard to be a person! It's not a crime for a man to cry....." Ye Lang imitated the singing style of Andy Lau, letting out all his emotions within his heart, singing loudly as he entered Ye Residence.

"Little brother, although this song of yours is not really much, there is however a very manly spirit feel to it. Where did you learn it from?" Ye Lan Yu chased after Ye Lang and asked curiously beside him.

Towards Ye Lan Yu's question, Ye Lang's answer was: "Don't bother me, I still haven't vented out enough!"

"Just as falling rain is a kind of beauty, it's better to hold this opportunity well, and cry out one round. It's not a crime to cry!"

"....."

During the night, the moon used its gentle white light to illuminate the earth, and during this silent night, within Ye Residence, there was however a voice which broke this serenity.

"The cold wind tonight tears my heart to shreds, the flurried

footsteps don't let me go home until I'm drunk, the hazy drizzle has its own hazy beauty……Why did I cry in such a sorry state, is it that I still have some attachments towards you……a person who cried out, cried out, cried out……"

Ye Lang held onto a Chinese lute, stubbornly playing this song. The sorrowful sound of the Chinese lute, adding on the sorrowful singing voice, let the listeners to have a sorrowful and wanting to cry feeling.

The reason as to why he used a Chinese lute was not because he was not able to find a guitar, but instead because that he did not know how to play a western musical instrument like a guitar. Because within the martial arts treasury, there were only China's ancient musical instruments. If he had some time in the future, he may go and try out western musical instruments. But in any case, the musical instrument he was best with was this Chinese lute.

Simply speaking, with the Chinese lute sound and his singing voice, people wouldn't feel that it was unpleasant to listen to, and would instead feel that it was very pleasant to listen to, and would want to continue to listen it. But right now, the people in Ye Residence however did not want to continue listening to it, and the reason was –

"I can't take it anymore, how can I even sleep like this!!" The servants of Ye Family dared to be angry, but did not dared to say it out, and only just mumbled softly.

"Fuck, Thirteen this brat has already sung for an entire day already, is he not tired?" The elders of Ye Family were only curious

and helpless.

“Thirteen, your sister still has a date tomorrow, can you let me have a good sleep!!” Ye Lang’s female and male cousins did not have any trace of politeness, and instead of being affected by Ye Lang, they straightforwardly cursed loudly at him.

No matter how good the music was, during unsuitable a time, it would also become noise. Especially when the song had already continued for a very long time.

Not sure if Ye Lang still had not vented out enough, or it was that he had sing until he became addicted to it, after Tigress had left, he had been singing since then till now. Moreover, he still chose those songs which had faint sorrowful feelings in them, letting everyone in the Ye Residence to feel sad along with him.

Of course, at the start it was not a problem, and many people also liked listening to songs like these. The problem was that he been singing for way too long now, letting everyone feel a bit unbearable.

And this phenomenon also proved one thing, which was that the importance of Tigress within his heart could be something which no one would be able to surpass. At least, in the future, this kind of mood was extremely rarely seen on him.

“Tai Ya……” After Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi saw this situation, their hearts seemed to be a bit jealous of Tai Ya, just that, what they felt more was still gratitude. After all, it was Tigress who had

taken good care of Ye Lang for so long, surpassing the amount of time they had taken care of Ye Lang by several folds.

After this matter, Ye Lan Yu and Long An Qi started treating Ye Lang much better than they already had treated him in the past, completely having the feeling of holding him up in their palm as they seemed to want chase up to the position where Tigress was in Ye Lang's heart.

Afterwards, Ye Lang really stopped singing loudly, and this made that older female cousin of his to feel very comfortable, deciding that tomorrow she was going to reward this younger cousin of hers for being so obedient. Except, very quickly, she was about to be driven mad again, and swear that she would not give any good look to Ye Lang in the future anymore.

That's right, Ye Lang did not sing loudly afterwards anymore; but instead, he took his Chinese lute, and started playing a Chinese lute song which brought forth a faint sorrow feeling.

Tonight, Ye Residence was destined to be sleepless!

During this night, many people all hated Ye Lang's music, and many years later, they would however instead feel why they had not listened for a while more during that time, why had they not treasured that time.

[Ominous chapter ending. Dun dun duuuuuun.]

Chapter 38 – The Godlike Prodigal Son (1)

A few days later, Ye Lang began to be the same as he used to be, beginning to go back and forth from Ye Residence and Imperial Academy, as if his life was just the same as in the past. Just that, many people began to know that Tigress, who was usually at his side, was granted freedom by him, and sent back home by him.

At that time, at Ye Lang's decision, many people felt that it was a pity. That petite and adorable figure of Tigress was top-grade within the tiger race, and was the optimum female slave within numerous males' hearts. This brat was simply wasting natural resources recklessly, my adorable Tai Ya, I won't see you anymore in the future.

Eh, wait a moment, if this brat has sent her back, doesn't this mean that I will have a chance to obtain her in the future? Suddenly, some people discovered that, in the past, Tigress was Ye Lang's female slave, thus letting them have no chance at all. But now, they seemed to have a chance, although, this chance was very tiny.

This was a situation which Ye Lang and Tigress had never noticed before, the two of them did not know that her popularity was that high, even seeming to be much higher than Ye Lang's popularity.

Of course, later on, those people would understand that this chance of theirs was still zero, a big fat zero!!

Afterwards, no one saw anyone substitute Tigress' position at the side of Ye Lang. At home, there wasn't anyone who substituted Tigress, so in the academy, there would also not be anyone who would substitute Tigress.

Long An Qi had arranged an additional maid to take care of Ye Lang, but it was however straightforwardly rejected by Ye Lang, as he said that he did not need anyone to take care of him, and was able to take care of himself by his own. This was also something which he promised Tigress, to take good care of himself.

At the start, Long An Qi just took this as a temporary thing, thinking that it was because Ye Lang did not have Tigress, he therefore did not consider if he had the capability to take care of himself, that's why he rejected her arrangement straightforwardly.

She felt that, after a certain period of time passed, Ye Lang would definitely not reject anymore. At least, not reject it straightforwardly. Because she had always felt that Ye Lang was unable to live alone properly, and was young master who had always needed to be served upon since he was small.

But in the end, she however discovered that she was, in fact, wrong. And moreover, she was gravely wrong. Not only was Ye Lang able to leave from other's care, he was even able to take very good care of himself, and it was so good, that it made other wonder whether they were dreaming.

This situation caused a lot of people to feel confused, this shouldn't be possible. 'Eh... How did the young master, who had

never taken care of himself on his own in his entire life, know how to take care of himself, and moreover still able to do it so thoroughly, not needing any help from others at all.

Of course, the method which this big young master used to take care of himself was also very special!

Firstly, within his daily life, in the matters of cleaning his room, clothes and so on, he would use a alchemy formation to handle it, making those things look as if they were completely new. When he used the alchemy formation to clean, some odd radiance would be produced. Making others think that something had happened. But when they knew the whole story of the matter, they didn't know whether to laugh or cry, and as time passed, they became used to it.

Secondly, he was a prodigal son, he would extravagantly spend money outside to have a meal and so on. And if it was not for him wanting to retain everything of the courtyard, he would have probably torn apart the house and rebuilt it too, as he would throw out everything which was spoiled and dirty, and just bought new ones instead.

No matter what was said, although it was somewhat special, but it was after all still considered as him being able to take care of himself, and he did not need other people to take care of him. Actually, even if it was not this special, he would also be able take care of himself on his own. Don't forget, in his 'previous life', he was exactly an ordinary person, and had taken care of himself for who knows how many years already.

On another note, after Tigress had left, Ye Lang seemed to have small troubles a bit –

“Hey, isn’t this Ye Family’s thirteenth prince?” On the journey to the campus, a noble’s son brought along a group of people, holding onto an extremely dashing big sword, and blocked Ye Lang’s path.

“Hello!” Ye Lang looked at the person in front of him, and said very politely: “Excuse me, is there anything?”

“Nothing much, just that I want to beat you up.” The noble used a posture which he himself felt to be very cool, and flicked his dashing big sword a bit.

“Why do you want to beat me up? Have I offended you all before?” Ye Lang asked blankly. This was not him pretending. For on those kind of things, his reaction was just this slow, not being much different from the thirteenth prince of the past, not understanding what the opposite party wanted to do at all.

“That’s right, you have offended before us.” The noble said mockingly.

“Oh, if it’s like that, then let me apologize to you guys.” Ye Lang said casually, then afterwards continued walking forward with his head lowered down, letting others having a feeling as if he was afraid of those people.

In reality, people who were familiar with him would know that

he was actually just thinking about some things, thinking about some questions regarding alchemy. It was like this every day. And if you asked him later on about it, he himself may actually not know that he was stopped by someone before, and also not know what he had talked about with the person just now.

“Eh……” The nobles were all dazed, not knowing what to do for a moment of time as they did not expect that Ye Lang would have this kind of reaction.

“Stand right there!! You think that you can leave just after apologizing? Let me tell you, right now you don’t have Tai Ya by your side anymore. I can beat you if I want to. Don’t think that you are a big deal just because you are the thirteenth son of the Ye Family, trash will always be trash!” The noble ran to the front of Ye Lang, and then pointed at him as he bellowed loudly.

“Oh, so it is like this, you are jealous of my identity. In the past, Tigress was at my side, so you did not dare to lay a finger on me because you were no match for her.” Ye Lang stopped his footsteps and said as he looked at the noble in front of him.

“…….”

The noble’s face had a bit of an ashamed expression on his face. Ye Lang’s words were indeed the fact. They were from the group of people who did not dare to lay a finger on Ye Lang because they were no match for Tigress. And moreover, they were the much more stupid portion of the group.

If they were smart, they would not have felt that they would be able to lay a finger on Ye Lang just because Tigress was gone.

Why?

“Hey, you guys should better start running, if not, you guys will be in a miserable state later on.” Ye Lang said towards the group of people in front of him. Those people still had not said anything yet, but he said another sentence: “Don’t think that I’m making fun of you all, I’m simply only too kindhearted, and don’t want to see anyone be injured.”

“Utter nonsense. The one who will be in a miserable state is you. The one who will be injured is also you!” That noble bellowed with a look of completely not knowing death at all. Yep, in the eyes of many other people, he exactly did not know death all.

“Eh, you guys are bullying Ye Lang? Are you guys feeling that the weather is too hot and want to cool down?” At this time, a passer-by passed by, and very coincidentally, this passer-by was also Ye Lang’s classmate.

“What too hot, what wanting to cool down?” The noble did not understand what that passer-by meant, but very quickly, he understood.

“Cold Ice Arrow!”

A voice echoed out, then afterwards, a blue radiance flashed through, and struck on the body of that noble, letting that noble become aware of what the meaning of cooling down meant.

“Do you guys treat me as dead? To dare to bully my little brother!” Ye Lan Yu appeared in the sight of everybody, and said as cold as ice.

That’s right, without Tigress, there was still Ye Lan Yu. Whoever dared to lay their hands on Ye Lang, her cold ice arrow would definitely appear in front of that person.

Chapter 39 – The Godlike Prodigal Son (2)

“Cold Ice Arrow Rain!!”

After finishing speaking, Ye Lan Yu waved her hands, very effortlessly releasing a relatively high grade group attack magic, and as the name implied, it was the upgraded version of Cold Ice Arrow.

“My god, why did I forget about this little great aunt……”

Right now, this group of nobles were all feeling regret, and began to think that they were all too stupid. Why did they actually forgot about this Ye Lan Yu, who was not only a youthful beautiful woman with unlimited charm, but furthermore also an absolutely violent expert. Who knows how many had suffered under just one ice attribute magic of hers.

Within the so-called expert ranking of the academy, this little great aunt was ranked at the top, and was an existence that the average person would not dare to offend at all. As for the nobles in front of her right now, they were just like ants to her, and she could toy with them as she liked.

“I told you guys to leave faster, but you guys just wanted to suffer from a few injuries before understanding. Sigh, some people just don’t listen to advice!” Ye Lang shook his head and sighed, then afterwards went along with his classmates to Alchemy Academy.

After similar things happened a few times, no matter how stupid

a person was, they also understood that if they wanted to take advantage of Tigress' absence to bully Ye Lang, they needed to first get through Ye Lan Yu first. And some people also researched very attentively to see if there were still other people besides Ye Lan Yu, and they were able to confirm that there was at least one more person, which was Princess Qi, Ye Lang's 'fiancé'.

Thus, they gave up, at least, they gave up on using violence, and would only use crafty methods to mess with him. However, they seemed to have overlooked that Ye Lang himself, If there was no one beside him, he was just a plate of vegetables. [Meaning: It goes through one ear, and out the other, as he doesn't pay attention to the at all. I think...]

In the following years, Ye Lang's 'low-profile' caused many people to forget about his existence. And those people who were jealous of him in the past, had also gradually grown up, and their thoughts had also matured, thus they also did not have thoughts of bullying Ye Lang anymore.

In the blink of an eye, 5 years had already passed. And this period of time, if you said it was short, then it wasn't really short. But if you said said it was long, it wasn't long either. Ye Lang had already grasped the alchemy of this world, and at the same time, he had also created alchemy which stood out from the masses. Combined this alchemy with the traditional Chinese medicinal teaching, pill concocting techniques and so on, from within his martial arts treasury.

But in front of others, he was still a very ordinary alchemist who was continuing to improve together with his classmates, not

having any special improvements at the start or at the end.

It was also because of this reason, he became more and more ordinary, getting less and less attention from others. And it appeared that he seemed to also enjoy this kind of life, cultivating every martial arts technique, researching alchemy, and occasionally going around being prodigal for a bit, being as comfortable as he wanted.

Of course, to say that there were completely no people paying attention to him was impossible, as he would also frequently do some actions which would arouse the attention of other people. And the very most attention arousing matter was his prodigality, his godlike prodigality.

Today, there was once again a person coming to find him because of one of his prodigal conducts, at that time, he was playing a piano, singing a song...

"My love, are you well now? At that place, what are you thinking about, why is there a faint sorrow on your innocent face. This night I want to say to you, look at the many years older me....."

"Thirteen, are you thinking of Tai Ya again?" The person who came to find Ye Lang said to him.

"Nope, where did I think of her, I'm only just singing casually." Ye Lang shook his head and denied.

After 5 years had passed, originally he thought that Tigress would come back within 2-3 years, but in the end, even after 5 years already passed, there was still no news. The only thing which could be confirmed was that Tigress had already safely returned back to her home, returned back to the place where her people were at.

According to the Anna Mercenary Group's report, during the time when Tigress entered into the tiger race's tribe, she was very quickly welcomed by a group of the tiger race's warriors. And at the same time, those warriors sent them off from their territory.

Of course, Anna Mercenary Group only left after confirming that Tigress was all right, this was also confirmed by Tigress herself.

In these 5 years, Ye Lang had also entrusted someone to bring a letter to Tigress, but the only reply he got was only just one letter of Tigress, telling him to wait for her for a few more years as she still had some things which she needed to handle, and lastly also reminded him to take good care of himself.

……

"Don't pretend, aside from the time when you are thinking of Tai Ya, you would not sing songs and play some musical instruments. Usually, even if there was a knife held onto your throat, you would be too lazy to do anything about it." The person who came, straightforwardly exposed Ye Lang's lies.

"Cough, cough. The weather today is not bad. Seventh brother, is

there anything you are finding me for?" Ye Lang put away his piano and asked. Yep, he was indeed putting away his piano. For people who owned a spatial ring, this matter was as simple as turning over your hand.

Seventh brother. The person who came was precisely Ye Lang's older male cousin, Ye Family's seventh son. Right now, he is one of the empire's major officials who manages some things, as for what those things specifically are, Ye Lang was also not clear about it. It was seemingly stuff related to the empire's military.

"Oh, that's right! Almost forgot about the important matter. Did you buy up A La Si Mountain?" Seventh brother asked somewhat anxiously.

"A La Si Mountain? I can't remember. Why?" Ye Lang's reply made seventh brother feel speechless. However, it was also within his expectations, as he had already known from the start that this brat would definitely not remember about it.

"I knew that you would definitely not know! Quickly search your assets, see if A La Si Mountain is under your name or not." Seventh brother urged.

"Oh, let me search……" Ye Lang took out a big pile of things from his space which had a bunch of messy certificates. For example like land leases, business association share certificates, and so on. All these were all the result of those years of him being prodigal. Possessing who knows how many assets, and in between all this,

who knows if he was actually losing or earning money.

Looking at this circumstance, seventh brother was only able to sigh, sigh as to why this thirteen is so mystical. Obviously, he was being prodigal, but his assets were, however, increasing more and more. And moreover, who knows when some important thing will come out that will be under his name, for example this matter today.

A La Si Mountain was originally a barren mountain, and the geographical location of it was also remote, a place which was of no interest to anyone. Thus this mountain was also not really worth much money.

However, the empire's research department had however recently discovered that this A La Si Mountain actually possessed an extreme abundance of war mineral resources. Thus, they began to negotiate with the owner who possessed this mountain. But in the end, they discovered that this mountain was already sold by the original owner very long ago, and moreover, it was sold at an extremely unreasonably high price.

Of course, right now, that original owner was currently crying and shouting with regret. This so-called high price of his, if you calculated in the mineral resources which the mountain possessed, it was completely just one hair from nine oxen only.

The empire would naturally not care if the original owner regretted it or not, only asking him who he sold it to. And the answer the original owner gave was that he didn't know. After all, it was a matter from quite a few years ago, and moreover, it was a

business deal made through a middleman, and that middleman was also not able to find it.

Thus, the empire had a headache, and began to use every kind of means to find the new owner of the mountain. But in the end, they were still not able to find the person. Even after announcing an extremely high reward for the owner to show up, there was still no one showing up.

Originally, for a mountain like this, after the transaction, the new owner would register at the empire, so that incase he lost his certificate, he would still able to get a new one.

But, this new owner had however never appeared from the beginning to register, and thus left others to not know where to start investigating to find this new owner.

Chapter 40 – The Godlike Prodigal Son (3)

After many days passed, the empire started to discuss if they should expropriate the A La Si Mountain by force, but if they were to do it, the effect it may cause may be very big, and maybe even create a turmoil in the empire.

Private property was given extremely high protection in this continent, and if someone were to break the rule, then he would receive the unanimous hostility from all the nobles and rich peoples of the continent. Even the 3 big empire would not be able to bear this consequence.

Without any other choice, the empire could only go find the original owner and chat with him, hoping that they would be able to find any clues, and in the middle of all of this, a clue which could not be counted as a clue appeared in front of everyone.

At that time, after understanding the situation, the original owner said a sentence, and that was his evaluation of the new owner:

“I don’t know who the new owner is, but in any case, I think that he is a super spendthrift. The mountain was obviously a rubbish mountain……in the past of course. But this spendthrift still used such a high price to buy it, and moreover, had never come look for trouble with me at all. This kind of person, if he is not an idiot, he would be a typical prodigal son!”

That’s right, if it was a normal person, why would they still buy

it. Especially after they knew that there was a problem with the mountain, they would definitely not buy it. And even If they buy it, they would also lower the price, and buy it at an extremely low price instead.

And this person instead used an extremely high price to buy it. Could it be that the person knew the worth of this mountain? But even if he knew the worth of this mountain, according to that situation, he would also buy it at a low price!

The person must definitely be a prodigal son, and also is not an ordinary prodigal son!

Seventh Brother, who got this report, wrinkled his brows and said somewhat vexed: “That’s right, even if he knew the worth of the mountain, he should also not buy it with such a high price, unless……Wait, what did you say? Prodigal son? This……fuck, could it have been bought by Thirteen, that prodigal son?”

Thinking of Ye Lang, the godlike prodigal son, Seventh Brother immediately ran back home to look for that legendary prodigal son.

This was absolutely not him just trying his luck. Seventh Brother was 80% certain that it was Ye Lang who bought it. History had always proven this point, when Ye Lang was being prodigal, there would always be a few things which he bought that would earn him a lot of profit.

Take another recent matter for example: Three years ago, he

bought a big piece of the poor civilians' land and houses, and moreover still even built new houses for those poor people to live in. At that time, this matter caused quite a sensation. And according to the reason, although it was said to be doing a good deed, but many people knew that it was just because he was very bored for quite a long at that time, and wanted to spend a huge amount of money and be prodigal. To buy houses and build new houses, that's plenty being prodigal isn't it.

At that time, he spent a total of a few hundred thousand gold coins, and then afterwards said two words, so comfortable!

This matter did not conclude just like that though. Two months ago, the empire issued a new plan to want to set up a new noble district, and very coincidentally, that new noble district was being set up at that piece of poor civilians' land which he bought three years ago. And thus, that piece of land became a hot item, and a bunch of people were fighting to want to buy the land from him.

This was merely just one of his prodigalities which he profited from. There were still a lot which couldn't be clearly said or even known. Others couldn't but say that Ye Lang, this brat, was being cared after by the goddess of luck.

"Oh, found it. Take a look, is it this?" Ye Lang found something, then casually passed it to Seventh Brother.

"When did I buy this... It should be 5 or 6 years ago I guess, Tigress was still here at that time....."

Seventh Brother totally did not hear Ye Lang's words, and just

said excitedly: “That’s right, it’s this one, Thirteen, I will help you get the highest price I can for this, I will go first!”

After finishing speaking, Seventh Brother disappeared like lightning, running towards his workplace, and I believe, at that place, there were also a few number of people who were waiting anxiously.

“……”

Please, I just want to be prodigal, why does this situation always appear. Whatever, I’m going to earn a huge profit again…… Haaah……

Ye Lang sighed helplessly. If his thoughts were to be known by others, they would surely have the urge to want to beat up someone. For the chance to earn a huge profit, others had to think with all they had, racked their brains, but in the end, they might still not succeed either. But he himself actually obtained it time after time.

Of course, there were also times where his prodigalness would succeed, and the amount would also not be small either. However, in overall, he was still not successful in being prodigal. Thus, his assets kept on increasing, to a point that he himself did not know how many assets he now possessed.

Moreover, this was still only just talking about right now, who knows if similar situations would happen again in the future. And within his list of assets, there would be other cases of one of his

assets miraculously turning back to life from a dead fish.

Don’t forget, the matter of just now was also from 5-6 years ago. Many things all happened after a few years, and he would always not forget about being prodigal for even a day. Thus, the end result of this may be beyond of one’s imagination, and become quite interesting.

Perhaps, this was that one within the millions, this was destined by fate!

“Forget it, I don’t care anymore. I should mix those materials first, those are all materials which are hard to come by, I must try……” Ye Lang also no longer cared about those things. If it was all destined by fate, then there was also no need to care about it anymore. Since it was destined by fate, there was no use being bothered about it, the result would still be the same.

But if it was not like this, it would be something that Ye Lang would want to see. Don’t forget, all he did was all for the sake of being prodigal.

“Little brother, it is a rare holiday today, and the weather is also good. Why are you nestling yourself at home and fiddle with those things. Aren’t you going to go out and be prodigal?” Ye Lan Yu honored Ye Lang with her presence, directly entering into Ye Lang’s little private room, who was still fiddling with the materials.

“Not going, no mood! I have failed again today……” Ye Lang replied while feeling a bit depressed.

“What thing failed? Could it be that you have earned a huge profit again? How much did you earn this time?” Ye Lan Yu thought for a while, and very quickly she understood what it was. She was very clear about the things regarding Ye Lang. Thus, naturally being able to understand what he was depressed about.

“Still don’t know, will only know after Seventh Brother comes back.” Ye Lang replied casually.

Ye Lan Yu sat at one side and stared at Ye Lang for a while, then afterwards asked curiously: “Little brother, I have a question to ask you, and you have to answer honestly.”

“What question?” Ye Lang asked while feeling puzzled.

“You confirm that you are not actually investing and earning money right?” This was too suspicious already, a prodigal son was actually able to earn more money than others doing business.

“……Of course I am not. I’m not that bored. Moreover, I am not earning every time, majority of the time I am the one losing money.”

“Still, saying that you are not bored when take the time to think of ways to be prodigal, and be a prodigal son!”

“This is the aspiration of my entire life!”

“Aspiration your head, who would even take this as their aspiration!”

“Aren’t I one of them who would?”

“……”

Chapter 41 – The Courage Of Love (1)

Imperial Academy.

It was the afternoon meal time.

Majority of the students all came to the dining hall of the academy, or it should be said, the overwhelming majority did.

Within Imperial Academy, no one would make any special request for themselves, wanting to bring some exceedingly luxurious lunch. Reason being naturally because if they were to do this kind of thing, it would affect their image, and would make others feel disgusted towards them.

At the same time, this was also something which the academy prohibited. If not, if every student here was like this, just what kind of situation and scene would it look like.

Of course, if it was something like a lunchbox which would not affect others, it was still allowed. Except, in this kind of environment, there were very few people who would bring a lunchbox, as it would make them feel like losing face.

In the general situation, there were 3 type of people who would bring a lunchbox. The first type would be those that wanted to save time, the amount of people in this category was in the majority. The second type would be those that were not able to adapt with the food in the academy, the people in this category were in the minority. The third type would be those that wanted to

save money, in other places, there would be a lot with this reason, but at Imperial Academy, they were however in the extreme minority.

In this Imperial Academy, where everyone was upper class nobility, there were very few people who knew about saving money. And as for prodigal sons and daughters, they could be seen everywhere, for example, a certain person who we all know.

As Ye Family's young lady, Ye Lan Yu naturally did not need to save money, and would also do things which stood out from the masses. Every time, she would have her lunch at the academy's dining hall, normally together with two people. But of those two people, one of them was someone who she liked, and the other one was someone who she disliked.

Those two people were exactly Ye Lang and Princess Qi. And as for who she liked and who she disliked, I believe there is no need to say it, and everyone knows the answer.

But recently, for quite a long period of time, one of the two people was no longer having lunch together with her anymore. If this person was Princess Qi, she would definitely raise both her hands and celebrate, but unfortunately, this person was Ye Lang, her most treasured little brother. Recently, Ye Lang continued not eating lunch together with her, and this made her feel really unhappy.

"Ye Lan Yu, where is Ye Lang. Is he not eating together with us again today?" Princess Qi entered the dining hall, and once again saw that there was only Ye Lan Yu there, and there was no sight of

Ye Lang.

If Ye Lang still hadn't shown up by now, it represented that he would not show up once again today.

"That's right, no matter how I call him, he just doesn't come, and absolutely insists on eating the food that woman makes. As the wife, you are seriously not the least bit useful at all, not even able to keep hold of your own husband." After sighing, Ye Lan Yu immediately carried out her usual attacks against Princess Qi.

Although these two people often saw each other. And moreover, understood more and more about one another. Even to the point of understanding the opposite party more than they understood themselves. But the enemy status of these two had however always never changed at all. Always quarreling upon meeting each other, one saying right and the other saying wrong. And even if one was really correct, the other would still raise a different opinion.

Of course, they also have times when they have identical views too. And that was when it was about Ye Lang. And what caused them to often be together was also because of Ye Lang.

"I am only his fiancé right now, how can I take control of him. Right now, it should be you, as the big sis, who has to take control of him. You are the one that is the most useless……" Princess Qi struck back without any mercy. Between the two of them, there was no misgivings at all, they would often use the engagement between Ye Lang and Princess Qi to talk about.

In all these years, Princess Qi seemed to have never objected, seemingly agreeing about this relationship of hers with Ye Lang. and it was instead Ye Lang who would sometimes raise objections. Of course, it was just sometimes only, and it also happened very seldom.

“You should be glad that he is together with her, if it was changed to some other girl, I reckon that you would not be able to protect your status as a fiancé. Although I dislike you a lot, I don’t object you being together with Ye Lang in the future.” Ye Lan Yu said very unwillingly, unwilling that that her own little brother would marry this woman, who she would quarrel with every day.

But she, however, understood Princess Qi very well. Knew that she really cared about her own little brother, and this kind of care also came from her heart, it was real. And as long as she treated her little brother well, no matter how much she disliked her, she would also not reject her.

Of course, this was only saying about not rejecting, not representing approval. Also, she knew that the feelings Princess Qi had towards Ye Lang was not love, and it was instead a type of special and complicated feeling, a kind of feeling which can’t be clearly said or understood.

Although Ye Lang and Princess Qi were often together, and their feelings had also always been very good. There had however never been any spark between them at all. At this situation, the family heads of both sides were also very vexed by it. But there was also nothing that could be done about it. After all, things like feelings could not be forced.

“Hmph. Even if it was changed to some other woman, they also can’t make me lose my position. And even if they are better than me, they also cannot!” Princess Qi snorted. As for this sentence, no one knew if it was just angry words or if it was serious.

And very quickly, she immediately changed the topic, not giving others the chance to probe deeper into this question.

“Ye Lan Yu, you say. Why does Ye Lang like to be together with her, Is it just because of her food?”

“If not, what else do you think there is? With her conditions, nothing other than food would be able to attract my little brother. My little brother’s taste would not be that bad.” Ye Lan Yu said very naturally.

“It may also not necessarily be like that. He had always liked strange and odd things, perhaps he……” Princess Qi raised an objection. After all, Ye Lang’s preferences were very peculiar, and his standard was also very odd. Sometimes, towards things that others said were good, he disapproved, and as for things which were bad, they would in contrary get his approval.

Thus, this made her suspect that it might be because of his peculiar taste. He might have started liking that woman which they were talking about. Of course, this was just merely a suspicion, a kind of suspicion which others felt that was impossible.

“Ptuh, ptuh, children’s words carry any harm! If he really likes her, I will immediately lock him up!” Ye Lan Yu immediately opposed, her tone being very resolute.

“Hehe, I’m just joking. What are you being nervous for, do you think that this thing is possible?”

“Not possible, definitely not possible!” Ye Lan Yu shook her head, and then continued on with eating her lunch.

What kind of girl made the two of them feel that it was impossible, and moreover, it was still not possible in the slightest bit at all?

That was the girl who Ye Lang was together with right now. Despite her outer appearance, she was indeed a youthful girl at the age of 18.

Of course, she was not a beautiful woman!

Within Alchemy Academy, the classroom where Ye Lang’s class was at was currently playing out a show, this was a show which would appear every day recently.

“Ye Lang, you snatched my lunchbox again. Quickly return it back to me!” A voice rang out, seemingly having anger in it, but what let others feel strange was that, in the voice, there was much more helplessness and already have become used to it.

The owner of this voice was a girl whose body volume was huge, precisely the girl in their class which was called Zhen Xiao Yan, and she was also the definitely impossible girl which Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi talked about.

In this very long period of time, Ye Lang had been eating his lunch with her, and the reason was as what Ye Lan Yu had said, because of food.

Chapter 42 – The Courage Of Love (2)

Zhen Xiao Yan is a girl who very much liked to eat things, and what's more, the food that she ate were all cooked by herself. Looking at her body size, you would know just how much she can eat, and also see just how many dishes she had cooked before. Under the tempering of her cooking, her accomplishment in cooking will surely be extremely high.

That's right, it's because of her cooking skills. That's why Ye Lang likes her, eh, her food. Ever since the first time he ate her food, he had started to snatch Zhen Xiao Yan's lunchbox every day.

"I will return it to you later, I'm still eating it right now." Ye Lang replied unclearly as he was eating.

"Return later? At that time, it will have been finished by you already, leaving only an empty lunchbox." Zhen Xiao Yan said petulantly.

"Of course I will return it to you after I have finished eating it, if not, how would you be able to bring it back again tomorrow?" Ye Lang said somewhat shamelessly, and this sentence made the opposite party feel somewhat angry and speechless.

"You, you……" Zhen Xiao Yan was once again speechless.

"Hmph, I will let it pass today, you are not allowed to snatch my lunchbox tomorrow." Zhen Xiao Yan said a final sentence to Ye Lang, and this sentence of hers was practically something which

she would say to him every day. But the next day, the same thing would happen again.

"I want to eat fish-ball thick-noodles tomorrow, remember to make it a bit better." Ye Lang seemed to not have heard what Zhen Xiao Yan had just said, and straightforwardly suggested what he wanted to eat tomorrow.

"Got it already. You always want to eat this every day, aren't you tired of it? Wait a minute……why should I make it for you!" Zhen Xiao Yan spoke and spoke, then suddenly discovered that something was a bit wrong.

"Xiao Yan, you are also odd. Obviously, if you don't want to make anything for him, then don't make anything for him." At one side, a female student who was relatively close with Zhen Xiao Yan said.

It was like this every single time. Zhen Xiao Yan would say she would not make anything for him, but every day, she would still prepare one portion to give Ye Lang. The reason was of course not that she liked Ye Lang, she couldn't even wait to wring up Ye Lang.

The real reason was –

"If I don't make anything for him, he would still snatch my portion, then I would not have enough to eat. Anyway, he also doesn't eat that much, so it's not really much of a matter." Zhen Xiao Yan stared ferociously at Ye Lang and said to her good friend in a low voice.

“This is also indeed true. Compared to you, he indeed doesn’t eat much.” Her good friend smiled and said, very obviously having the intention of teasing her.

“Alright, you are laughing at me aren’t you. See if I don’t squash you to death!” Zhen Xiao Yan immediately replied, and moreover used her body advantage to threaten.

Although Zhen Xiao Yan’s body size was large, she however did not feel inferior because of this ,and had a cheerful heart. Perhaps, it could be because she had not come across any mental trauma’s.

“Ah, don’t, I won’t say it anymore, okay. To get squashed by you, even if I don’t die, I would only be left with half of my life.” The good friend pretended to be afraid and said.

“What afraid, I don’t want to talk with you anymore. I’m going to start eating my food.” Zhen Xiao Yan smiled, and then afterwards, began to eat, preparing to empty out her lunch which was spread all over the entire table.

“Eat food, eat food……” The good friend also followed after her and said, starting her own meal.

In this classroom, it was not only them who ate from lunchboxes, there were still many others too. Within Alchemy Academy, the majority of the people did not want to waste time to go to the dining hall to have their meal, and they would rather eat from a lunchbox, then afterwards use the time which they had saved to do their research.

Just when everyone was having their lunch, the arrival of a handsome youngster made something unusual happen in the originally common time.

This handsome youngster was Prince Mo Ya, who was called as one of the four princes of Imperial Academy. Not only did he possess a handsome outer appearance, he also had profound strength, and at the same time, also had a strong family background too. [Not a real prince, just a title]

He was the prince charming of many girl's hearts. In this academy, who knows how many girls had fallen in love with him. Just take for example now, there were a few within Ye Lang's female classmates, and one of them was Zhen Xiao Yan.

From when Prince Mo Ya had arrived, her eyes had never left him even once. That love struck look of hers was just lacking her eyes turning into a heart shape now.

"I apologize, I came late!" After Prince Mo Ya arrived at the classroom, he ignored all those love struck gazes and directly walked towards the front of a girl, then spoke while feeling somewhat sorry.

A girl who was able to make Prince Mo Ya be like this was of course not an ordinary girl. She was a stunningly beautiful woman, and also the only girl in the class who was able to come out and brighten the picture, she was exactly Sha Lan.

At this time, Ye Lang could not help but somewhat respect the insights of those ‘professionals’. Because as just as they had said, this Sha Lan had indeed become this generation’s sexy and beautiful woman. If it was not like this, why would this Prince Mo Ya have picked her?

“It doesn’t matter, I just finished packing up a while ago, let’s go.” Sha Lan said forgivingly, then gently held on Prince Mo Ya’s arm, and left the classroom under everyone’s envious gazes.

“He’s already gone, what are you still looking at!” Zhen Xiao Yan’s good friend shook her awake from her love struck state.

“Sigh, if it was changed to me, just how blessed would I be.” Zhen Xiao Yan said enviously, she was envious of Sha Lan, and had a very strong wish to change spots with her.

At this time, Ye Lang, who was returning the lunchbox, said without giving any face at all: “If it was changed to you, then it would not be a blessing, it would be a tragedy.”

“You go and die!” Zhen Xiao Yan took the lunchbox and threw it towards Ye Lang.

“Aiyo!” A scream rang out, but it was not let out by Ye Lang, and was instead a pitiful male student who was innocently implicated, and the lunchbox was crowned on his head.

With Ye Lang's quick agility, how would he even be hit by such a small lunch box. Thus, as the lunchbox was not able to hit him, the person behind him was instead the one who was hit by the lunchbox.

"Ah, I'm sorry, I did not do it on purpose." Zhen Xiao Yan immediately apologized.

"I know that you did not do it on purpose, but you know perfectly well that you can't hit him, so why do you still take things to throw at him every time. And every time it is us who get hit instead." The tragic male said very pitifully. Very obviously, this was not his first time getting hit, and what's more, he was not the only one who had been hit before.

"I'm sorry, I just did it in a moment of impulse. I guarantee it won't happen next time." Zhen Xiao Yan apologized.

"For how many months have you said this line already?" The tragic male asked back.

"It is not a few months, but one year and three months!" Ye Lang who was at the side said. And right now, he was reading a book while sitting at the side, as if everything had nothing to do with him.

"Isn't it all still because of you!" Zhen Xiao Yan and those people who had been innocently implicated before, all shouted at Ye Lang with anger against a common enemy. This situation just made them feel that it was just too maddening.

“Eh, this alchemy formula……” Ye Lang directly ignored the anger of those people and continued researching a alchemy formula. This was not that he was changing topics, but he instead that he was often just like this, would suddenly become serious and ignore everything.

“……” Everyone knew that in this situation, even if they continued sending a punitive expedition against him, there was also no meaning anymore. And thus, they all started eating their lunchboxes again, and discussed about things about free times.

Few days later, similarly in the afternoon.

It was still the same with Ye Lang snatching Zhen Xiao Yan’s lunchbox, still the same where Prince Mo Ya would show up at the classroom, preparing to go eat lunch with Sha Lan. A male and a female who were in love, you could really describe it with those 4 words – Stuck together like glue!

Chapter 43 – The Courage Of Love (3)

“Hey fat woman, if you really like him then go and confess to him.” Ye Lang looked at the love-struck Zhen Xiao Yan, then gave a suggestion that others wouldn’t dare to suggest.

“Confess? He will reject me, how could he fall for a fat girl like me?” Zhen Xiao Yan said faintly.

“Although I can’t be deny that the probability of him falling for you is very low, but if you were to confess to him, there would at least still be a possibility. But if you don’t confess to him, there won’t be any possibility at all. Love must be said out courageously!” Ye Lang gave Zhen Xiao Yan a strike unrestrainedly, and at the same time, he also instigated Zhen Xiao Yan. No, it is encouraged. Everyone has the right to confess.

Except, he himself also did not think that Zhen Xiao Yan would actually really go and confess!

“That’s right, if I don’t confess, I will forever not have a chance.” Zhen Xiao Yan mumbled. Not sure if she was muddle-headed, or she was just being impetuous, she actually stood up and walked towards Mo Ya.

“Xiao Yan, don’t listen to him nonsense!” The student who was watching at the side, seeing how everything was developing, immediately shouted out, wanting to stop Zhen Xiao Yan, but was not able to make Zhen Xiao Yan stop.

Zhen Xiao Yan came to the front of Prince Mo Ya, then said very seriously: “Mo Ya, I like you, can you date me?”

“Ah……” At this time, except for Ye Lang, everyone was in a daze, as they absolutely did not dare to believe what they had just witnessed. And at this time, Ye Lang immediately turned his head and took out a book to pretend that he was reading, and moreover, also very magically took out a pot of tea and slowly sipped it.

“Hey, did I see or hear wrong? Did that fatty Yan actually confess to Mo Ya, and moreover, confess to him in front of Sha Lan?”

“I also wanted to ask that, but since you also saw it, then I believe that we did not see or hear incorrectly!”

“Waah……” The entire classroom began to go into an uproar, and a bunch of people began to discuss the reason as to why Zhen Xiao Yan confessed. Some said that Zhen Xiao Yan ate a wrong medicine, some said Zhen Xiao Yan had high fever today, some others said that Zhen Xiao Yan was currently still sleepwalking.

Although everyone came up with different reasons, but regarding the result, everyone had the same view, believing Zhen Xiao Yan’s confession would surely be rejected, and this was certain.

Just think for a while, how would Prince Mo Ya fancy a girl whose body size was so large that it shocked others? About her confession, him not throwing up was already very polite.

“I apologize, I already have a girlfriend.” Prince Mo Ya was indeed someone who came from a distinguished family, and one of the princes of Imperial Academy’s four big princes. Towards a confession which the average person would not be able to bear, he was still able to preserve his gentlemanly elegance.

“I know that, you don’t mind having one more girlfriend right?” Zhen Xiao Yan said very straightforwardly.

“Pfff……” Ye Lang, who just a moment ago pretended to not have seen anything, pretending that it had nothing to do with him, and was drinking tea at the side, after hearing this sentence, he immediately spit out the tea in his mouth. Because this sentence was said before by him, which also meant, Zhen Xiao Yan saying this sentence was all thanks to him.

At that time, he was also talking to Zhen Xiao Yan about the matters regarding Prince Mo Ya. He said that, since she liked Prince Mo Ya, then she should go and hit on him. No need to be shy, since in any case, your skin is thick.

At that time, Zhen Xiao Yan asked, then how should I hit on him? At that time, the original words were—

“Like this I guess, you go over and ask him: Handsome, do you have a girlfriend? If he says he doesn’t, then you say: Then I can be your girlfriend.”

“Then what if he says he does?”

“Then you say: You don’t mind having one more girlfriend right.”

“……”

“This, I mind……” Prince Mo Ya was dazed for a while before saying.

“Zhen Xiao Yan, what is the meaning of this!” And at this time, Sha Lan’s expression became very ugly as she spoke while grinding her teeth.

“I want to snatch your boyfriend.” Zhen Xiao Yan said straightforwardly.

“Snatch from me? You? Don’t say that I didn’t give you a chance, if there is one person here who says that you can snatch with me, I will allow you to try.” Perhaps Sha Lan was a bit infuriated, or perhaps she was revealing another side of her heart, for those words would gravely hurt Zhen Xiao, this was different from her usual gentle and gracefulness.

“You said it yourself, don’t regret it when the time comes! You say……” Zhen Xiao Yan was excited for a while, then she went to find her good friend as she thought that her good friend would definitely support her, but she was however disappointed.

Zhen Xiao Yan’s good friend looked at her and used a persuading

expression that said ‘Don’t fantasize too much, it is not possible for you two. The difference between both sides is just too big’.

Her good friend was only thinking for her sake, why chase after a matter which you know perfectly well is impossible, it would only bring her pain. Thinking of this, the good friend couldn’t help but ferociously glare at Ye Lang, as the cause of this matter was all him.

“Hmph, a toad also dares to dream of eating swan meat. Doesn’t even look in the mirror.” Sha lan said very disdainfully. Usually, toad referred to the male, but this metaphor could similarly mock the female.

At this time, Ye Lang stopped ignoring the matter, as he opened his mouth and said: “I do, I feel that she can snatch him from you, this is the right that she should have!”

“Ye Lang!! Stop adding more trouble already. Do you feel that there is any meaning to this?” Zhen Xiao Yan’s good friend immediately shouted. She felt that Ye Lang being like this would only bring harm to Zhen Xiao Yan.

“I know that this will wound her, but since she wants it, then we should support her. Let her give her all without any hesitation, even if the result would make her feel pain. At the very least, she would not regret it in the future.” Ye Lang said calmly, and his words also made others contemplate, thinking about the meaning of those words.

The good friend actually wanted to say something, but before she had the time to say anything, she was cut off by another sentence of Ye Lang.

“Suffering from wounds would only others become stronger, I believe she is not the kind of weak person that cannot endure this kind of pain!”

Therefore, because of Ye Lang’s support, Zhen Xiao Yan was able to obtain a chance. And just like this, Sha Lan hated the busybody Ye Lang. However, she doesn’t know it, but Ye Lang, in the future, would only make her hate him more, and this was only just the beginning.

“Alright, then I’ll give you a chance. Bring it on, I want to see just how you will snatch him away from me.” Sha Lan suddenly changed her tone and said very indifferently, because she realized that she did not have to be afraid at all, as how would Zhen Xiao Yan even be able to snatch away her Prince Mo Ya.

Taking a look at Zhen Xiao Yan’s looks, it would be impossible for her to even snatch away the boyfriend of an ordinary girl, let alone hers, unless Prince Mo Ya’s hobby was special, but this was obviously not the case.

The meaning of those words, practically everyone was able to sense it. And everyone believed that Zhen Xiao Yan was completely seeking humiliation by herself, it was a totally impossible matter.

However, at this moment, everyone admired her courage. After

all, the courage needed to do this was not little.

Chapter 44 – What Business Does It Have To Do With You (1)

"How to snatch? Is there still a need to say! Of course it would be robbing away your boyfriend and kicking you out of the scene!" Ye Lang at the side said without a care.

"……"

Everyone present was speechless, and many people were suspecting that Ye Lang was deliberately stirring up trouble. If not, why would he instigate Zhen Xiao Yan? Also why would he go and support Zhen Xiao Yan?

Just that, with everyone's understanding of Ye Lang, they knew that he was the type of person to not care about anything, and would only occasionally be hot-blooded. Could this be one of the 'occasional' situations?

"Don't look at me like that. I know what you all want to say, but I'm too lazy to bother with you all. It's time to read my book! About that fat woman, I think highly of you, therefore you must believe in yourself!" Under everyone's suspicious gazes, Ye Lang once again entered his book reading state after declaring to everyone that he would temporarily be cut off from the rest of the world.

Zhen Xiao Yan became very courageous after she received his support. Courageous to a point where Sha Lan was afraid, and pulled Prince Mo Ya to leave the scene. Zhen Xiao Yan only

shouted out loudly that she would fight for her promise, and didn't chase after them.

Normally, after a person was done being impetuous and passionate, they would start thinking over their actions. After a while, the hot-blooded Zhen Xiao Yan calmed down, and her look began to change, becoming more and more ashamed and resentful.

"Ye Lang!!" Zhen Xiao Yan used her huge palm and slammed on the table, giving a shock to Ye Lang, who was reading his book.

"What's the matter? Your look like you want to eat someone..... I'm so thin, it's not enough for you, you should go look for your that....." Ye Lang looked at Zhen Xiao Yan's eyes which were burning with anger, and said looking left and right.

However, Zhen Xiao Yan seemed to be immune to it, and totally didn't fall for his words. She said straightforwardly: "Don't you think about changing the topic. Explain, why did you confuse me, and made me do such an embarrassing thing?"

"About that, actually.....Hehe. I only said it casually, and didn't think that you would actually go and confess. You can't place the blame on me, it was because the desire in your heart was already too strong." Ye Lang held onto the book and used it to block Zhen Xiao Yan as he spoke whilst smiling.

That's right, at the beginning before all this, it wasn't his intentions to give Zhen Xiao Yan a push. It was just him only joking around casually. He himself also didn't think that Zhen Xiao

Yan would take this kind of action, and it all could be seen from the time when he pretended that everything had nothing to do with him.

He wasn't deluding someone who couldn't see the reality of the situation. Although what he had said previously was very beautiful, but those were only beautiful words, and anyone could say them!

"You……What do I do right now? I don't even have the face to meet these people!" Zhen Xiao Yan said whilst feeling ashamed and resentful.

"Since it has already begun, you can only persevere to the end now." Ye Lang said indifferently. This sentence wasn't said casually, he was the kind of person that either doesn't do anything, or if he does something, he must see it to the end.

"I'm afraid……" Zhen Xiao Yan said hesitatingly.

"Afraid of what, you have already thrown all your face, so there's no need to be afraid of throwing a bit more. In any case, throwing a bit more or a bit less doesn't make a difference. What's more, your skin is so thick, there is no need for you to be afraid at this point." Ye Lang said very irresponsibly. Anyone would be very relaxed whilst talking about another person's matter.

"I'm not afraid that……*cough cough*. What did you say? Are you trying to say that I'm thick-skinned and shameless?" At the start, Zhen Xiao Yan was still going along with Ye Lang, but she

very quickly changed her reaction towards the end.

“Only thick-skinned, not shameless. Don’t tell me that your skin is not thick.”

“The thing that is thick is my face, not referring to that face!”

“Isn’t it all still face?!”

“……”

Zhen Xiao Yan remained silent, not wanting to tangle on this question with Ye Lang. Since in any case, there would surely not be a conclusion, so she only said faintly: “I will persevere. But I don’t think that he will accept me!”

“Why care about whether he accepts you or not, you also don’t need his approval to like him!” Ye Lang said without a care at all.

“??” Others did not understand this sentence that Ye Lang said, and were trying hard to think about the meaning in this sentence. What does it mean that you don’t need his approval to like him, if he doesn’t approve, what is the use of liking?

“Your meaning is……the same as you and Li Yue at that time?” This sentence made Zhen Xiao Yan remember about a matter, which was an interesting story regarding Ye Lang and Grand Marshal Li’s granddaughter.

“……” Ye Lang remained silent, because he knew that everyone would laugh next, laugh about this matter which was already forgotten.

“Haha, we all forgot about this matter. That’s right, at that time, Ye Lang, this brat, was seriously too awesome. During the time when he was pursuing Li Yue, who knows how many times he had been rejected, and in the end, Li Yue also got angry, but still didn’t have the means to get away from him. I still remember one sentence which he said: Liking you is my problem, what business does it have to do with you!”

“That’s right, that’s right. This sentence has so much temperament, straightforwardly letting Li Yue not have any temper anymore, and allowing him to pester her as he liked!”

“……”

“Fuck, such a long ago thing. You all still remember it so clearly!” Ye Lang could not help scolding out very depressedly

This matter happened at the time when Ye Lang’s soul still had yet to merge. At that time, he suddenly liked Li Yue, and kept on tangling and pursuing her. Only when his soul merged, did it all come to an end.

Speaking about the cause of this matter also made him feel very

speechless. The reason as to why he suddenly liked Li Yue wasn't because of a descending love, and wasn't even him liking her at all. Instead, it was all just because of a prediction which he heard from a fortune teller, which spoke about the situation in which he would meet the girl of his life.

Unfortunately, the situation just so happened to bump into Li Yue, and thus, he began to consider Li Yue as the girl of his life. He began to 'like' her, and start pursuing her.

At that time, this matter also let Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi feel strange. Why did it happen so suddenly, and after they got this answer, they became very powerless, extremely powerless.

However, they also didn't prevent him. Not that they don't want to, but they didn't have the the means to prevent him. No matter if it was the Ye Lang of the past or the current Ye Lang, as long as it was a thing which he had set his mind on, unless it was he himself who changed his own mind, even nine oxen wouldn't be able to pull him back.

"I understand! I will be the same as you at that time, even if I get rejected, I won't give up!" After a while passed, Zhen Xiao Yan said very resolutely.

"……*cough, cough* Alright, persevering is victory!" Ye Lang appeared to be a bit awkward as he spoke. After all, he himself also didn't think that he would be provoked.

"Then you tell me what I should do next?" Zhen Xiao Yan looked

at Ye lang, with her eyes letting out a radiance of expectation. A radiance which would make others be captivated. If it was just simply saying about her eyes, her eyes would definitely be able to be deemed as beautiful.

“What should you do? Just do what you should do, how should I know?!” Ye Lang waved his hand, an attitude showing that the matter wasn’t his concern.

“You’re not helping me?” Zhen Xiao Yan said while feeling puzzled.

“Help you do what? Help you hit that Mo Ya, then you force yourself upon him?” Ye Lang held onto his book and said very indifferently.

“Go away! Don’t joke around I’m being serious!” Zhen Xiao Yan pushed away Ye Lang, the force almost knocking Ye Lang down on the floor.

Chapter 45 – What Business Does It Have To Do With You (2)

Ye Lang stabilized his body and held onto his book as he said unhurriedly: “I’m just speaking the truth, others can’t help you with this matter. I’m also not a matchmaker deity, you can only depend on yourself to fight for it!”

“……Ye Lang, could it be that you have never intended to help me from the start, and your so-called support is just all moral support?”

“That’s right! You have my unlimited moral support!”

“……”

“You, go and die!” Zhen Xiao Yan bellowed angrily as she took an object and threw it towards Ye Lang.

“Ouch……Zhen Xiao Yan, can you not stop throwing things around!!” Another innocent victim shouted out, while Ye Lang took on an appearance that said that it had nothing to do with him.

“Fine! I won’t make fish ball thick-noodles for you anymore tomorrow!”

“Then, I want fish ball rice-noodles!”

“……”

And the next day, Zhen Xiao Yan still gave Ye Lang the food she prepared, not knowing if it was because she was used to it or if it was because she was afraid of him snatching away her food. But in any case, it was still the same as in the past, where the same scene would be played out.

However, after yesterday, there was also a different scene that would be played out. And that was that Zhen Xiao Yan also began to prepare food for Prince Mo Ya, launching love attacks towards Prince Mo Ya.

And because of this, later on, Prince Mo Ya and Sha Lan did not meet up in the classroom anymore. At first, they changed the meet-up place to the gate of Alchemy Academy, then afterwards straightforwardly changed to the dining hall, then afterwards they began to move about in the campus according to the situation, until the end where they changed it back to the dining hall.

Why would there be those changes? Nonsense, it was all because of Zhen Xiao Yan, no matter where they went, Zhen Xiao Yan would appear. Not sure where she got the information from, but until the end they were helpless. So, because they felt that they can’t hide from her, they thus changed back to the dining hall.

This matter let everyone understand one thing, which was that love was able to make a person become crazy, crazy to a point where they would stop thinking, crazy to a point where any obstruction could be eliminated, and at the same time, also do some unimaginable things.

Zhen Xiao Yan was crazy, she crazily chased after her dreams, not caring about other people's opinions or views anymore, including those of the person involved, Prince Mo Ya, she also did not care about his opinion!

"Ye Lang! It is all your fault!" Prince Mo Ya and Sha Lan recently would frequently clench their teeth and say this sentence. Although they hated Zhen Xiao Yan a lot, they also hated Ye Lang who incited the incident.

If it was not for Ye Lang, Zhen Xiao Yan would also not be so crazy. If it was not for Ye Lang, Zhen Xiao Yan would also not have the attitude of disregarding the person involved, using the sentence "Liking you is my problem, what business does it what to do with you!" to break down the person involved.

……

"Don't use that kind of scorching gaze to look at me, I'm innocent!" Ye Lang waved his hands and said towards Sha Lan who was staring at him.

"Humph!"

……

This kind of situation carried on for a very long period of time, and towards this matter, everyone's opinion was all naturally different, there was disdain, despise, approval, support……

But everyone all agreed on one point, which was that Zhen Xiao Yan's spirit was laudable. And moreover, they also felt that if in the future they were to meet someone which they liked, they should also follow and learn from her.

Along with the passing of time, Sha Lan's hatred towards Zhen Xiao Yan became deeper and deeper, and Ye Lang seemed to have been neglected by her already. After all, aside from Ye Lang inciting at the start, he did not have any other actions, and also did not help Zhen Xiao Yan, only really giving her moral support!

Perhaps it was also because of this, Sha Lan did a thing which made Zhen Xiao Yan land in a hopeless situation.

"What?! You're participating in the beauty contest?" After Ye Lang received the news about this, he looked at Zhen Xiao Yan with a face full of astonishment.

"What beauty contest, it is 'Imperial Academy's Incomparable Girl Talent Competition'." Zhen Xiao Yan corrected Ye Lang's words.

"More or less, you could say that it is a talent contest, but those that go on stage, which one of them is not a beauty. At the same time where they look at your talent, they also look at your appearance and behavior. It is pretty much no different from a beauty contest." Ye Lang said without a care.

In Imperial Academy, there would be a beauty contest every 3 years. Oh, wrong, it should be Incomparable Girl Talent Competition. Every time, the competition would attract countless of people to come and watch. This was already not a grand occasion within the campus, but was a grand occasion within the city, even so much that it would also attract some people from afar to specially come and watch this competition.

And as for why it would attract this many people, just as Ye Lang said, this was a beauty contest. The majority of the talented girls who showed up were all big family's young ladies who were beautiful and alluring, had good temperament, and also possessed a talent.

Normally, there would not even be a chance to see those big family's young ladies, but because of the competition, all of them however simultaneously made a public appearance. Thus naturally, this competition would attract the eyes of many people, and would make people flock to see the competition.

At the same time, this situation also indicated one thing, which was that if Zhen Xiao Yan were to go and participate in the competition, she would have to make a public appearance in front of many people. With her conditions, it was bound to create a very big sensation, of course this was all about the negative aspects!

"Why would you participate in this, isn't you going up basically you seeking humiliation for yourself?" Ye Lang asked very straightforwardly. This was something which everyone would think of, just that no one would be like him and say it straightforwardly.

“Mo Ya and Sha Lan said that, only if I participate in this competition and win the competition, would I be allowed to be together with Mo Ya!” Zhen Xiao Yan said with a very complicated emotion. Perhaps, she herself also understood that this was just other people making fun of her, wanting her to suffer humiliation, but however, she still agreed with it.

This was perhaps her last struggle, her last craziness. And after this, she would also give up and not dream of anything anymore!

“So it is like this. Did she say whether you only have to win over her or that you have to win this competition?” Ye Lang began to admire Zhen Xiao Yan a bit right now, his evaluation towards her also raised to another level.

“I don’t know, but I think it’s all the same.” Zhen Xiao Yan shook her head and said.

“That’s right, in any case, you are dead for sure!”

“……”

Zhen Xiao Yan said a bit unhappily: “Can’t you give me a bit of support?”

“Support? That’s right, I remember that someone opened a betting market for this beauty contest competition, I will go and place a bet on you to support you. However, before this, I want to

confirm one thing, singing, dancing or playing a musical instrument, which one do you know?" Ye Lang asked.

"Don't know, I don't know any of them." Zhen Xiao Yan shook her head and answered.

"Then what other talent do you have other than cooking." Ye Lang asked once again.

"None!" Zhen Xiao Yan shook her head.

"I remember that your noble etiquette is also very sloppy, basically having not learned it at all." Ye Lang said while looking at Zhen Xiao Yan. Within the academy, she was also counted as a special person. In Alchemy Academy, even though etiquette was not really paid attention to, but the female students of the Alchemy Academy would still go and learn it.

"That's right……" Zhen Xiao Yan said embarrassedly.

"Very good, I will immediately go and bet one hundred thousand gold coins on you winning, see just how much I support you." Ye Lang prepared to run outside as he spoke.

"One hundred thousand gold coins?" Zhen Xiao Yan was dazed for a while. This sum made her be astonished, even if he were to support her, there was also no need for this much right.

Although she knew that Ye Lang was a bit prodigal, and this

degree was also a mere trifle for him. But after all, she wasn’t that close to him, there was no need to support her that much like this.

Chapter 46 – What Business Does It Have To Do With You (3)

“Do you think that it’s too little? If so, I will bet a million gold coins.” Ye Lang obviously misunderstood Zhen Xiao Yan. However, he himself had thought that the bet was indeed too little. For such a rare opportunity, how could he only bet a hundred thousand gold coins.

How could a hundred thousand gold coins even be enough for such a prodigal son like me?

“No, no, it’s too much. Don’t bet, you won’t be able to win. Wait a minute… Ye Lang… Could it be that you are trying to use me to be prodigal?” Zhen Xiao Yan suddenly thought of Ye Lang’s prodigal habit. He was the kind who would try to be prodigal when he saw something that he could be a prodigal at.

Could it be that? Him betting this time was to……

“That’s right, such a good opportunity, how could I miss it? This time, I’m one hundred percent sure to be successfully prodigal! Haha, I want to see what kind of accident could stop me this time!” Ye Lang said very excitedly. He didn’t noticed that Zhen Xiao Yan’s fury had already began to emit outwards.

“Ye Lang, what is your meaning? Are you saying that I will lose hundred percent?!” Zhen Xiao Yan’s furious roar flooded the entire classroom.

“Nonsense, of course it is like this. You are lacking in all 3 departments. You, who doesn’t have neither appearance, figure nor talent. Don’t even talk about winning, I think that the moment you go on stage you will be kicked off!” At this time, Ye Lang had already ran out of the classroom. Only words were heard, but no one saw the speaker.

“Ye Lang!!” Zhen Xiao Yan’s incomparably angry roar reverberated and resounded in the entire academy building. At this moment, a certain person was pretending that he didn’t hear anything. Later on he excitedly left, running to place his bet.

Zhen Xiao Yan bit her teeth, and within her heart, she understood that Ye Lang wouldn’t give her any help in this matter because he wants to be prodigal, even longing for her to be kicked off the stage.

She really wanted to strangle Ye Lang to death, but she knew that there was no mistake in what Ye Lang said. She was indeed lacking in all 3 aspects. Who doesn’t want appearance, figure and talent?!

This kind of her, how would she even be able to defeat those talented girls?

However, if you wondered if she regretted it or not, she certainly would not regret!

For her, as long as she had love, even if she suffered from pain but made an effort, it would all be enough!

……

“Little brother, what happened, your mood seems to be especially good?” When Ye Lan Yu returned home that evening, she discovered that Ye Lang’s mood was very good, and a brilliant smile was hanging on his face.

“Big sis, let me tell you about a happy matter! In a month, I will be able to successfully squander away a million gold coins. Haha, this time it would be certain for sure!” Ye Lang smiled and said. That happy look seemed to say as if he had gained a million gold coins, and not lost a million gold coins.

If a normal person were to lose a million gold coins, they would cry their heart out and would want to die, even if it was a prodigal son. They wouldn’t be able to bear this loss. This showed that Ye Lang was different from the ordinary people!

He was indeed worthy to be called a super prodigal son!

“…… Seriously can’t do anything about you! However, perhaps you will earn again this time.” Ye Lan Yu shook her head and said very helplessly, only this darling little brother of her would feel that losing a million gold coins was something to be happy about.

“Won’t, this time definitely won’t!” Ye Lang shook his head and said decisively.

No matter how small an accident had happened before in the past, and how good his luck was, it would also not let Ye Lang feel that an accident would happen this time. Because this time, there was no way that an accident could happen, definitely not able to happen!

“You always say that, but in the end, many accidents would still happen.” Ye Lan Yu said petulantly, and knocked on Ye Lang’s head.

“There won’t be any accident this time. I ask you, if Zhen Xiao Yan were to participate in the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition, do you think that she will be able to win?” Ye Lang asked.

“No! It should be impossible for her to even participate, but if she were to participate, she would be laughed at by others for the rest of her life. Her recent actions have already made other people ridicule her.” Ye Lan Yu shook her head, when talking about Zhen Xiao Yan, she seemed to have a bit of sympathy.

And she probably did not know that this little brother of hers actually made this pitiful girl to become even more pitiful!

“She is already participating in it. I have bet on her to become the champion. You say, will I be able to lose a million gold coins or not?” Ye Lang smiled and asked.

“She is already participating in it? How could this be, doesn’t she

know that this matter will make her unable to raise her head and look at others in the future?" Ye Lan Yu asked while feeling astonished.

"Sigh, she knows that, but she still agreed to participate. The courage of a woman who has been muddled by love cannot be stopped, even if she was asked to go and die, she would also not wrinkle her brow at all." Ye Lang shook his head and sighed.

Actually, he also know what the effect of this matter would be. However, he knew that Zhen Xiao Yan right now would not listen to others' advice. And he also thought, isn't it just throwing face for one time, what is there to be afraid of this little bit of setback!

To do something crazy for someone who you like, I believe that this is something that many people would be able to understand. And the things that she does also don't harm anyone, and was just her trying to show her feelings with all her heart only.

"Since it is like this, why do you still use this matter to joke about. You shouldn't have gone and bet." Ye Lan Yu said with a somewhat blaming tone.

"Where did I joke about this matter, I'm being serious! Those are both different matters, she loses by her own, and I'm being prodigal seperately!" Ye Lang said very seriously.

For Ye Lang, these were two different things, even if Zhen Xiao Yan was miserable, he would also still place the bet!

“What you said is right, but this just sort of doesn’t feel good.” Ye Lan Yu said.

“It’s alright, she won’t hold a grudge at all. This point of hers is very cute, which is also the point that I like most about her.” Ye Lang said without minding at all. From the start up until now of him knowing Zhen Xiao Yan, he doesn’t even know how many times he had offended her, but every time, she would only just be angry about it for a while, and then forget about it later on.

And this matter was also indeed like this, after offending her today, the next following day, she would still prepare the things which he liked to eat the most. And then later on it would still be the same, smiling and quarreling about.

Just like this, a few more days passed by, and Zhen Xiao Yan seemed to not suffer from the mental influence from the competition, which was getting closer and closer. Of course, she was also preparing, thinking about what things she should do, but she did not want others to feel anxious because of her.

Seeing Zhen Xiao Yan being like this, Sha Lan, who was preparing for the competition all the time, was a bit on edge.

Nonsense. For this competition, Sha Lan had been preparing every day, every hour, every moment, in order for her to display herself even a bit better in the competition.

Practicing her talent and preparing for the competition’s program. Needless to say, of course all talented girls who

participated in the competition were all preparing, but she was much more hardworking than the other people!

Other than this, she also exercised and went on a diet so that this perfect body of hers would be able to become even more perfect.

This kind of suffering and hard work, I believe everyone would also be able to understand and know about it!

And right now, she instead saw that Zhen Xiao Yan was being relaxed and carefree, as if nothing was the matter. And moreover, was still unrestrainedly eating things, and that big body seemed like it was getting bigger and bigger.

Even if she felt that Zhen Xiao Yan did not have any chance, it still made her feel very unhappy. And seeing that Zhen Xiao Yan was like this every day, she was even more unhappy!

Chapter 47 – Lifelong Cook (1)

Sha Lan's bad mood, which had been accumulating for such a long time, finally erupted, and she coldly said –

"Humph, still laughing and giggling over there, it seems that you simply did not even think about winning right? Well, what else, such a fat woman like you, how could you possibly be able to win? I think that you should quit before it's too late, don't come out and make a fool of yourself."

Those words which Sha Lan said were very ordinary, yep, compared to those words that Ye Lang said, what Sha Lan said was not much at all. But those words however provoked Zhen Xiao Yan, because the person who said those words was a different person.

No matter how provoking Ye Lang's words were, Zhen Xiao Yan would also not take them to heart, because she knew that Ye Lang did not have any ill intent behind them. But if it was changed to someone else, it would be different, needless to say if that someone was her rival in love.

"You can be at ease, I will not give up and I will also win. I will not only win against you, I will also win the championship!" Zhen Xiao Yan said without being outdone by Sha Lan.

"……" Silence. At this time, everyone was silent.

"Haha……" And what followed was everyone roaring with

laughter. Although everyone knew that Zhen Xiao Yan was participating in the competition, they however also knew that the reason as to why she was participating in the competition was also because of being provoked, and thus no one laughed at her.

However, the situation right now was different, as Zhen Xiao Yan actually said that she wanted to win, and moreover, still said that she wants to win the championship. This made everyone feel that it was funny, as if they had just heard the funniest joke in the world.

“Haha. You? With your looks, do you think that you can win against me, even win the championship? Only if everyone’s eyes are blind, if not, then you can only wait when you have reincarnated and have a new look, then say it again. Haha……” Sha Lan laughed absolutely unrestrainedly, ruthlessly trampling on Zhen Xiao Yan.

And this was not the most hurting thing, Sha Lan still continued to stab her with words: “In this lifetime, you can only be compared to a pig, only fit to go to a pig pen! Zhen Xiao Yan, you should be called Zhu Wu Yan!” (The Zhu Wu Yan said by Sha Lan was 猪无颜, meaning – pig without shame.)

“You……” Zhen Xiao Yan was hurt to a point where she was unable to speak out anything, and within her eyes, there seemed to be tears which were trying to force their way out.

Suddenly, everyone in the classroom became silent. Although they were laughing at Zhen Xiao Yan before, but they did not approve of these kind of humiliating words. After all, everyone

was classmates who had been together for so many years already, more or less also had some feelings towards one another.

It could also be said that Zhen Xiao Yan's relations with people was quite good, having not offended anyone before. A person's distinctive feature does not obstruct the feelings between classmates, instead, character was the crucial point between all those, and Zhen Xiao Yan's character was generally acknowledged by everyone as being quite good. You could see it from just looking at her attitude towards Ye Lang.

"That's right, that's right, she was indeed comparing with pigs, that's why she participated in this competition." Ye Lang's voice rang out.

"....." Everyone was dazed for a while, not being able to understand the meaning of those words in a short moment, but very quickly, they understood.

"Pfft....."

Some people were not able to restrain themselves anymore and began to laugh, as they sighed in their heart that this counterattack sentence was simply perfect, making others pick up a stone and smash it on their own feet.

"Ye Lang! Who did you say is a pig?!" Sha Lan said angrily.

"You!" Ye Lang replied very straightforwardly, "This was only

according to what you said, she was comparing with you, that's why she went to a pig pen to compete!"

"Ye Lang, don't say anything more, you will offend others like this." Zhen Xiao Yan said at the side.

The offending others here was of course not referring to Sha Lan. After all, Ye Lang had clearly already offended her countless of times. What it was referring to was Ye Lang taking a bamboo pole and hitting everyone off the boat, saying that all of the girls who participated in the competition were all pigs.

"What is there to be afraid of if I offend others, who dares to come find trouble with me. I am the magnificent Ye Family's thirteenth prince, a tiger doesn't show its might so you guys take it as a sick cat?" Ye Lang said very arrogantly, displaying out the hedonistic son-of-rich-parents side of him.

This sentence also reminded everyone who was present, that this brat was Ye Family's thirteenth prince and was someone which couldn't be offended. Even if he pointed towards those noble young ladies who participated in the competition and said that they are pigs, they could only tolerate it and not say anything.

For the past few years, Ye Lang's identity had been often neglected by others. Reason being that, other than him being low-profile, he also often made muddle-headed mistakes, which made other not to know whether to laugh or cry. Making others feel that they were very close to him, and the most important thing was that he would very rarely use his identity to scare others.

And the people in this classroom would even more neglect his identity. After having interacted with one another a lot, they would also naturally not regard Ye Lang as an outsider, but as a classmate.

At this time, Sha Lan's face became very ugly, seemingly also having noticed this point. Although her boyfriend Mo Ya was known as the academy's one of the four big princes, but those four big princes added up together were perhaps not even enough to be compared to Ye Lang's identity.

To explain in short, Ye Lang was seemingly like a type of hidden boss!

"This is indeed true, you are indeed not someone which the average person could afford to offend. But others can set you up secretly, and you would also often be muddle-headed, making you easy to be plotted against!" Zhen Xiao Yan also said straightforwardly without giving Ye Lang any face.

"Go away, go away! I'm so shrewd, how am I muddle-headed? Those who want to plot against me can only wait till their next life!" Towards Zhen Xiao Yan's statement, Ye Lang only shook his head and denied.

"Shrewd? Then who was it that muddle-headedly went into the female's changing room and got treated as a pervert, and got chased after for half a day."

“..... This cannot be blamed on me, who told them to not repair the sign, I thought it was all for boys.”

“Anyone would know that both females and males would each have one room for themselves, if it was all male, then there would not be a need to separate both the rooms. You are precisely muddle-headed, and this is also not the first time!”

“Fuck, if you continue talking, then I won’t help you anymore. I originally still wanted to help you win against that group of pigs, but right now i have to reconsider it.” Ye Lang said as he flew into a rage out of humiliation.

Zhen Xiao Yan said petulantly: “You’re still saying that they are pigs, like this will.....Wait a minute. What did you just say?”

“Nothing much, just that I will reconsider if I want to help you or not.” Ye Lang waved his hand and said.

“Help me? You have a method to help me?” Zhen Xiao Yan asked suspiciously.

“There are a lot of method, just depends on what method you choose only.” Ye Lang pretended to be an expert as he placed his hands behind his back, raised his head, and glanced at everyone.

“What methods do you have?” At this time, Zhen Xiao Yan did not pay any attention to Ye Lang’s actions, and only asked

somewhat nervously. She of course wished that she herself would be able to win, even if this was seemingly impossible.

“The first one is simple and doesn’t need any effort. The other one is complicated, and would make one suffer. Which one do you choose?”

“The simple one!” Zhen Xiao Yan said straightforwardly. Everyone would choose this choice.

“The simple method is that I will spend money and bribe those judges and audience. Then I will threaten them a bit. After making threats and promises, at that time, the champion would be as simple as stretching your hand and grabbing it.” Ye Lang said out a method which made everyone fall onto the ground, only he would dare to do so.

“……”

Zhen Xiao Yan remained silent for a while, then said: “I think it’s better to change to another method, this one is not good.”

Although this method made others feel speechless, but no one doubted that Ye Lang would not be able to do it. With that prodigal personality of him, this kind of thing is what he liked to do the most, no matter if it succeeded or not.

Chapter 48 – Lifelong cook (2)

“The other method would be a bit cumbersome. In this method, you just have to procure a way to get rid of the competition, making them unable to participate in this event anymore. You could abduct them,threaten them, disfigure them or drug them, just to name a few of such methods. Any of these methods could be said as being completely unscrupulous!” Ye Lang thus suggested yet another scheme, however this method seemed to even be a bit more intense than his previous one.

“Stop, stop right there. This method also isn’t feasible, change your plan once again. I want a method which doesn’t harm others, and is a bit more in the realm of normalcy!” Zhen Xiao Yan couldn’t stand Ye Lang anymore, she was afraid that he would really go through with his eccentric plans.

“Alright, then let’s skip over all the other methods and arrive at the final one. However, this method will be very tough, and there is a risk of lack of time. Thus, I suggest we go ahead with this plan immediately! Come, let’s set off right now, we will return on the day of the competition. You guys, help me inform my family for me, and also assist me in requesting a leave of absence from the academy.” Ye Lang said while preparing to leave, and unhesitatingly entrusted others to help him inform his family.

“??” Zhen Xiao Yan was muddle-headed right now, unable to understand what Ye Lang wanted to do.

“Let’s go, don’t just stand there like a fool! Believe me, you will surely become the champion this time! Sigh, seems like I won’t be

able to act like a prodigal son again this time.” Ye Lang shook his head somewhat dejectedly.

Zhen Xiao Yan stood up suspiciously, and just left with Ye Lang, half-believing and half-doubting.

At the final moment, Ye Lang smiled devilishly and exclaimed to Sha Lan: “That pig over there, you better be a bit more careful during this period of time, don’t blame it on me when something suddenly happens to you!”

“What do you want to do? I don’t fear you!” Sha Lan forced herself to be calm and said.

But Ye Lang did not pay attention to Sha Lan anymore, and left with Zhen Xiao Yan. In the following 20 days, until the beginning of the competition, the two of them did not appear.

After departing……

“Ye Lang, why do you want to help me?” Zhen Xiao Yan was very puzzled, she did not understand why Ye Lang would suddenly want to help her. With his character, there wasn’t any reason for him to meddle in this matter, more so in the situation after he had bet that she will win the competition.

Ye Lang replied casually: “If want to help, then I’ll help, what why. Don’t assume that I’m helping you for nothing, you have to promise me one thing.”

Although he said it casually, but Zhen Xiao Yan slightly felt that he had helped her because he did not like her being humiliated like that. Not liking her being taken lightly by others, and thus stepping forward to aid her.

“What thing?” Zhen Xiao Yan smiled and asked.

“In the future, you must cook food for me every day, and one more pastry!” Ye Lang said. Regarding this subject, Zhen Xiao Yan’s pastries were excellent, just that she rarely made pastries because of the troublesome procedure . Although she felt that the pastries were delicious, the amount was too little, not enough to even satiate her own hunger.

“So long as you help me win this competition and let me have a chance to be together with Mo Ya, I will cook food for you in this lifetime. All the pastries you want to eat, I will make however many for you!” Zhen Xiao Yan said. She didn’t care about the consequences at all. In any case, as long as she is able to win the competition, she would be willing to do anything.

“Then it’s settled!” The muddle-headed Ye Lang would also naturally not feel that those words were weird, and was just pleased that he had conned a lifelong top grade private cook for himself.

“Ye Lang, what are you going to do?” Only now did Zhen Xiao Yan enquire of just what method he planned to use.

After Ye Lang heard those words, he became very solemn and said very seriously: “Fat woman! There’s still time if you want to regret this right now, if not, in the following 20 days, you will experience hell. And moreover, the method doesn’t guarantee success either. After all, the time we have is too short, and you are in too poor a condition already!”

“No, even if it’s hell, I will have to go through with it!”

“Since you are this determined, then be prepared to endure suffering. Sigh, if only your condition was slightly better, but unfortunately, your condition is bad to such an extreme. Having no knowledge of either one of the four arts, nor did you go and learn any noble etiquettes. Your height ,too, is a meagre 1.6m, but you actually have 200 kilos of fat. I’m afraid that there is not even enough time for you to lose weight……” Ye Lang said while shaking his head, and Zhen Xiao Yan’s face, who was at the side, was getting redder after every passing comment.

“That’s enough, if you speak further, I will squash you to death!” Finally, Zhen Xiao Yan flew into a rage out of humiliation.

“It’s an emergency, so we can also only use drastic measures right now!” Ye Lang sighed.

……

After this matter, in the following few days, the development of things became very interesting. Many people were paying attention to Ye Lang who had vanished into thin air, of course,

everyone's point of view on this matter differed to some extent.

"Cheng Tian, that brat of yours has still not been located yet?" When going to the imperial court, the emperor asked Ye Cheng Tian in a straightforward manner, seemingly intending to make this the nation's prime matter to discuss.

It was not that the emperor was using his official authority for private interests, but that recently, Ye Lang had caused him a bit of a headache. A matter which was originally fine, had catapulted into a situation where everyone couldn't decide whether to laugh or to cry.

If Ye Lang just merely took Zhen Xiao Yan and left, it would at most be the Ye Family being a bit anxious, but Ye Lang was already such a famous person that there was also a high degree to the Ye Family's anxiousness. Moreover, the Ye Family also knew of Ye Lang's character, which could accurately be deduced by the following words –

"Not yet. We can't find him until he comes himself. You know this too. If this brat wants to play and disappear, if he does not appear voluntarily, no matter how painstakingly we look, we still won't be able to locate him. But one thing which can be said for sure is that he is definitely in the vicinity, just that we can't pinpoint him exactly." Ye Chang Tian said somewhat helplessly.

Ye Lang had also disappeared many times before, and every time, it would be him appearing voluntarily. What's more, this time he

had stated himself that he would disappear. Thus, Ye Family also naturally did not worry too much about him, and did not erupt in a huge movement like in the past.

The problem was that those words which Ye Lang had said before disappearing had made many people feel afraid this time around.

And this group of people was those who were participating in the pig pen competition, no, the girls who were participating in the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition. After they had received the news, they were in trepidation that Ye Lang would do something that would cause harm to befall them.

No one could say with absolute guarantee what kind of thing Ye Lang would do. According to his past actions, he could be described as a silly person doing silly things. Thus these kind of people were the ones who caused others to fear the most, knowing that he didn't care about the consequences.

After hearing that Ye Lang said that he could have them kidnapped, threatened, or, to everyone's deepest fears, disfigured, these girls began to grow very nervous, and started to mobilize the powers they had power over to protect themselves, incessantly day and night!

And because the families of those girls were not able to find Ye Lang, they sought the aid of the emperor. And right now, their only request was that the emperor would call the shots and help search Ye Lang's whereabouts!!

And this situation caused the emperor an endless headache. Ye Lang publicly threatening them like he did was indeed a bit over the top, And moreover, he also couldn’t dare to confirm that Ye Lang, that brat, would not go ahead and do those things which he said, thus he was also only able to ask those girls to look out for their safety.

Chapter 49 – Lifelong Cook (3)

If, at this time, the emperor could find Ye Lang, then everything would be solved. However, he also knew it was almost impossible to find him. If it was possible, the Ye girl and his sweet daughter would have stopped being angry.

To him, it was unbelievable. Although everyone knew Ye Lang was around, and never really left, they just couldn't find him. This was not the first time. Every time, he was able to find a place that other didn't think of.

Although Ye Lang didn't mean to hide from them, they just didn't know where he was.

"I hope he won't do anything outrageous, so long he frightens them a bit is fine. I hope he doesn't do those other things." The emperor was having a headache.

Why did he have to go and scare those people. Now he was gone, but we have to suffer!

"I…I think he won't…" Ye Cheng Tian was not confident.

"…." The ministers were in silence. Those whose daughters or granddaughters were in the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition seemed to realize that they must protect their girls as much as they could themselves and not rely on the Royal Family or Ye Family.

They were thinking, if Ye Lang really did those things, would the Emperor and his parents really punish him? Maybe they would, but it wouldn't be serious.

"Hey hey, he is your son. How could you not know?" The Emperor didn't notice the people's faces and continued to talk bullshit with Ye Cheng Tian. Oh, no, it was a serious conversion between an emperor and a minister—according to him.

"How could I know. Don't you know him? Hasn't he done plenty of silly things since childhood?" Ye Cheng Tian shook his head.

"Right. Alright, forget it. We will see when it happens. One thing I feel strange is that who is Zhen Xiao Yan. Why is the silly boy helping her?" The Emperor suddenly thought of this important person.

"I checked. She is the granddaughter of Earl Zhen Tian Ming." Ye Cheng Tian said. He knew the Emperor was asking about her identity. He should have already heard the other things from people.

The Emperor had a deep thought and said, "Oh, him. I have a bit of an impression. Zhen Family have been doing restaurant business for many generations. Are they still doing it?"

Zhen Family were not in the core of the imperial power. It was not even at the edge of it. So they were not related with them. If not this incident, they shouldn't have even noticed the existence of Zhen Family. This was actually a good thing for Zheng Family.

Their future would be brighter.

The reason why the Emperor remembered the Zhen Family was because they used to be the royal chefs. They were granted the hereditary ‘Earl’ title because one of the former emperors liked them.

No wonder everyone wanted to approach an emperor. As long as an emperor liked you, you and your descendants would live a good life. Of course, sometimes bad blood disasters came, but people were willing to take the risk.

“Yes, Zhen Youwei Restaurant. It is a traditional and old restaurant.” Ye Cheng Tian said.

Zhen Youwei was that royal chef, and the restaurant was named after him. His cooking was the number one of the world so the restaurant was prosperous for a long time.

However, like some other family businesses, the capabilities of the person in charge were a variable. The restaurant was declining in the recent several years. But in the ordinary people’s eyes, the Zhen Family was still a big family. Right, in ordinary people’s eyes!

“This is not important. I wonder whether Zhen Xiao Yan is able to cook as well as her ancestor? If not, why does your silly boy care about her so much? He hasn’t cared about anything these years, even his own stuff.” The Emperor doubtingly said.

“I heard her cooking was amazing. And only her cooking is amazing.” Ye Cheng Tian’s answer was not straightforward but clear enough. Apart from her cooking, none of her stuff could attract his son.

“Cheng Tian, shall we bet on her?” The Emperor was getting excited and forgot he was in the court.

“You are thinking of this too! I already sent people to bet ten thousand gold coins for fun!” Ye Cheng Tian laughed.

“… You are shameless!” The Emperor gave him a despising look. After all, he was in the court, so he had to care about his image.

Ye Cheng Tian seemed to understand him and answered him with eye contact: “You too…”

“Emperor, why do you think Zhen Xiao Yan will win. How could she win with her conditions?!” One minister was upset and angry, because one of the participants was of the younger generation in his family.

Some other ministers were like him. They were not happy with the Emperor and Ye Cheng Tian’s opinions. Of course, they couldn’t express their feelings too visibly.

“Zhen Xiao Yan wouldn’t win considering her condition. The point is that miraculous boy from Ye Family. The result will be

hard to tell.” The Emperor shook his head and laughed slightly.

“Emperor, please stop Ye Lang from doing nonsense. If you don’t, I will ask my granddaughter to quit!”

“Right. If so, we should quit. It’s better to quit than have our daughters get hurt.”

.....

“Don’t worry. I won’t let him break the rules. I will keep the fairness of this competition. If you are still worried, then I will allow you to be the judges, so no one will be bribed. Rest assured! I will send the top guards to protect you!” Said the Emperor immediately. He needed to prove that he didn’t take sides for anyone. In fact, he hadn’t planned to do so at all, but those ministers had misunderstood him.

What’s the point of protecting? That silly boy slipped away from the tight guard again and again. If he meant to give you trouble, I can’t promise anything.

Ye Cheng Tian laughed in his mind when seeing those ministers become relieved. He was kind of proud of this thing. Of course, he pretended to be serious outside— with a look that he would try his best to protect these ministers.

Chapter 50 – Delicate And Pretty Young Lady (1)

“Emperor, who do you think has the highest odds? Is it…” The previous minister started talking again and gave people his granddaughter’s name.

“Your granddaughter is nice, but my daughter seems to have higher odds! My daughter is very good at playing the lyre, chess, calligraphy and painting…” Another minister said.

“What’s special about playing the lyre, chess, calligraphy and painting? Those are just ordinary skills. My daughter is different. She learned the essence of dancing!”

“So what? My granddaughter…”

That was how they started their debate in the court. Maybe this is the warm-up of the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition, an off-court game.

“Cough cough!” The Emperor coughed and interrupted their debates and said something to their surprise.

“Your daughters and granddaughters are very good. No wonder they are the talented girls of the country. If not for Ye Lang, I would choose from one of them. But this time, I bet on Zhen Xiao Yan!”

“Why? Under a fair competition, she won’t win.”

“You don’t have to worry about fairness. If I say it’s fair, then it is fair. Although you think it isn’t possible for her to win, it is hard to tell since Ye Lang already bet on her.” The Emperor knew they were still doubting about the fairness. He clarified again and made a promise.

“Why? Emperor, do you believe Ye Lang is capable to change the result, making Zheng Xiao Yan, a fatty and good for nothing girl, to beat those pretty girls under a fair condition?”

“No, I don’t believe so!” The Emperor shook his head, and Ye Cheng Tian seemed to agree with him. Because Zhen Xiao Yan’s conditions were so unbelievable, even God wouldn’t be able to help her, let alone a silly boy like Ye Lang.

“Then…” Before the ministers finished their discussion, the Emperor spoke in a serious and truthful tone.

“But, I believe in his luck!”

“…” Everyone was silent.

“You can certainly doubt his capability, but you can never doubt his luck! The goddess of luck has always favored him. So envious!” The Emperor spoke sincerely, and he really seemed to be a bit envious.

People had no words to say. They all had heard of Ye Lang's luck, and he always encountered good things while he was trying to dissipate his family fortune.. Those good things were unattainable to others.

In fact, they didn't know that besides with spending his family fortune, he also had good luck in other matters. For example, he never got hurt by accidents. Otherwise, with his confused way of walking, he might have been gotten injured many times.

Before, Tigress was taking care of him. But in the recent five years, for example, he would be walking alone and not see the pit ahead, but somehow mysteriously just walk barely walk over the edges of the pit. Sometimes, things fell from high above that were supposed to hit him, but they just fell behind or in front of him, or somewhere nearby. He would just look at them curiously and then leave...

The only explanation for that were the Emperor's words: The goddess of luck favored him, and could not bear to let him be hurt even a bit!

"He is not always lucky. Most of the times, he is very good at being a prodigal son. How can you be so sure that he will be this time."

Someone was doubting his luck, and this had some truth in it. Otherwise, people would just rush to buy everything he was buying.

“Either success or failure. His aim is to be prodigal!” Ye Cheng Tian made a correction, and added, “We are betting for small money. It is all up to the god’s will!”

“Right. The difference with Ye Lang’s betting is that it can turn a thing from impossible to possible. We are not saying it’s 100% possible, but if you’re going to bet against us, you’d better prepare to lose!” The Emperor laughed.

Although the Emperor clarified the risk, and everyone understood it, they still didn’t think Zhen Xiao Yan would win. Still, many people bet on her. She became popular as a dark horse.

The reason was simple; because the Emperor bet on her, and many people did so trying to flatter him. It was more a spending on social familiarization than betting.

And the focus was still Ye Lang: Where was he, what was he doing, and what was his strategy?

At the beginning, people were waiting for Ye Lang to cause some silly troubles or something crazy. They wanted to see those crazy things. They felt excited thinking about it.

Many people thought that the only strategy to make Zhen Xiao Yan win was to ruin all the competitors. This was the only possible way. However she tried, she wouldn’t be able to become a phoenix from an ugly chicken in such a short time.

She might be able to improve in a few months, but that was still unlikely. And now she only had 20 days. Unless she was not a mortal.

However, everyone became disappointed eventually. Ye Lang did nothing. Everything was in peace!

Or was it the calm before the storm?

Those talented girls and their families were still worrying. How could they relax before the last second? So when the competition started, it was like an oncoming battle. Fully armed guards and security forces were making the scene even more tense!

“What is going on? Are we in the wrong place? Is this the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition or Magical Martial Arts Competition?” Asked some people in the audience.

“You are in the right place. This is the preliminary of the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition!” Someone answered.

“But why…”

“You must be curious why there are guards and soldiers here, right? Because somebody is challenging the safety of the talent girls, so they are very nervous about keeping them from danger.”

“What?! Someone wants to harm them? Who? Tell me. I am going to kill him!” One person boasted as if he was some kind of big shot.

He thought people would support him, because after all, they were all here for the talent girls, and no one wanted to see something happen to them.

But he was wrong, totally wrong. He didn’t gain support but got laughter and despise instead!

Chapter 51 – Delicate And Pretty Young Lady (2)

“Just based on you…? I advise you that it is better for you to be a bit more careful about what you say. If not, and what you just said was heard by others, you will attract trouble to yourself.” Someone said somewhat disdainfully.

“? ?” At the start, that person was still not able to figure out the situation and went into a daze for a while before finally responding back, “What is wrong if it’s me, I am……” That person was about to announce his own identity, seemingly very formidable, just that, this was for some people only.

“Who you are is not important, unless you are someone who belongs to one of the imperial families of the 3 big empires, and also a person that has big authority. If not, you should just watch the competition quietly and not say these kinds of tremendously ignorant words!” Just as before, someone mocked him disdainfully.

“What kind of person is he?” At this time, that person could not help being a bit curious. He also knew that at this kind of place, randomly any person who came out could pressure him down to death.

“He is our Ye Family’s thirteenth prince!” A simple answer which did not need much explanation at all.

“……” That person became silent at this point. Although he had

not heard about the things about Ye Family's thirteenth prince, and also did not know who Ye Family's thirteenth prince was, but just the Ye Family part alone was enough to silence him.

However, he was very baffled about one point. Which was that when those people talked about Ye Family's thirteenth prince, there seemed to be a kind of closeness, which could not be explained. Shouldn't those people hate this Ye thirteenth prince for threatening those talent girls?

This occasion being put into this kind of state, according to the normal course of events, no matter who the person was, they would all hate this Ye Lang, who caused this outcome. However, the reality was not like this. Just like how this person felt, the majority of the people all felt that this was just merely a joke, and they would not go and blame Ye Lang for anything.

And their closeness towards Ye Lang, I believe that many people present were all able to understand it. Although Ye Lang only knew how to be prodigal all day long, but in the process of his squandering, he had, however, also given help to quite a few people.

Adding on to that, the foolish character of his in the past. Although many people still felt that he is also not anywhere good right now, but it was this kind of character of his which made a lot of people feel that he was very amiable, and not like those kind of hedonistic sons of rich parents, who only knew how to oppress the people and attract loathing.

Also, because of this, his support level among the people was also

considerably high. And compared to those people who specially cultivated their support level, his support level was don't know how many times higher than those people.

To be a prodigal son, being able to be a prodigal son of Ye Lang's standard, it could really be said to have surpassed all others of its kind before and since!

Originally, because Ye Lang was low-profile these past few years, most of the people seemed to have forgotten about him, but when he appears in front of people, that kind of feeling would once again come back. Although this feeling was not very deep, or accurately speaking, it was very very mild, and it was very easily neglected by others.

However, what was contradicting was that, sometimes, the milder this feeling was, the more unforgettable it was for other people.

Similar to many other competitions, the Incomparable Talent Girl Competition also had a pre-selection competition. This was not a competition where just anyone was able to participate in. Take Zhen Xiao Yan for example, with her conditions, she would be very straightforwardly eliminated in the pre-selection competition!

Today was the beginning of the pre-selection competition, where 10 girls would be selected to enter the final competition. And because there are a lot of girls in the pre-selection competition, how long the competition would continue would be determined by the amount of girls performing, and what kind of performance the

girls were going to give.

The pre-selection competition this time continued for three full days. The performance of the girls let the people who were watching become dazed, and each and every girl all had their own support group. In the end, when the name list came out, some families were happy and some family were sad.

However, the girls which had been eliminated, were also very appreciated by the people, as long as they have true talent and goods!

And as for who those 10 people are, it was not the thing which everyone cared about. What everyone cared about was why Ye Lang and Zhen Xiao Yan still had not appeared?

Could it be that Ye Lang was just playing around with them, and was just merely scaring people only? Or was it that even he himself really had no ways to help Zhen Xiao Yan, and his extreme method had failed?

No, that was not the case!

At the final moment, just when everyone was feeling somewhat disappointed, a person appeared, causing everyone who was present to suddenly become excited!

The person who appeared was a very very beautiful youthful young lady. Light dressing, no makeup, lucid and elegant, free

from the world's vulgarity. Even if she was at this place, where there were girls all around, her radiance was not weakened in the least bit as she gave everyone a kind of delicate and pretty feeling. And as she ran to that location, she used her beautiful voice to shout a sentence –

"Wait! I……Zhen Xiao Yan……" Because the pretty and delicate young lady ran too fast, when she spoke, it sounded a bit as if she was gasping for air, and what she said was also not very clear.

She is Zhen Xiao Yan? That huge girl who was over 200 pounds?

"Zhen Xiao Yan? It can't be right, she is Zhen Xiao Yan? This is also too ridiculous right?"

"It can't be, this is definitely fake!!"

"Ye Lang, this brat, is actually this shameless to find someone else to substitute Zhen Xiao Yan, this is obviously bullying us isn't it?"

……

At the scene, waves of shouts immediately erupted, expressing their protest towards the kind of actions of Ye Lang.

And very quickly, everyone understood that is was just a 'false

alarm', because this delicate and pretty young girl softly protested coquettishly: "Who told you all that I am Zhen Xiao Yan, I am just here to pass a message!! Which point of me do you all feel that looks like Zhen Xiao Yan. Hmph, I am many times prettier than she is!!!"

"Oh, so it is just a misunderstanding. I say, how could Zhen Xiao Yan change into this kind of look, this would also be too unimaginable!" At the protest of the delicate and pretty young lady that she is many times prettier than Zhen Xiao Yan, everyone all approved deeply!

"Who's message might this lady be helping to pass on, and what message is it?" The host of the competition asked that delicate and pretty young lady.

"The thirteenth prince told me to tell you all that he would show up at the competition with Zhen Xiao Yan. As for the pre-selection competition, they will not participate in it, and want you all to add Zhen Xiao Yan's name into the list!" The pretty and delicate young lady said very calmly.

"I'm afraid this is not possible, this is not conform to the rules……" The host and the judges all felt that this was not possible. Just that, they felt that if they were to straightforwardly say that it is not possible, they would offend the Ye Family's thirteenth prince, and the consequences would be very serious.

"I knew that you all would say this. The thirteenth prince also said this, the name list would continue normally, and Zhen Xiao Yan would just be a special increase to the list only. He will not let

you regret making this decision! If you all do not agree, he said that he will eliminate one person from the list and then add in Zhen Xiao Yan to the list afterwards!!”

“……”

A threat, this was a straight up threat!

Towards this, some people started to raise protest and wanted to disregard this kind of threat, shouting that they are not afraid of this kind of threat. However, the majority of the people chose to accept it as they did not want to take the risk, and also did not want to offend Ye Family.

After all, in any case, to them, there was actually not much difference between 10 and 11 people. And most importantly, they did not feel that Zhen Xiao Yan would be of any threat towards them.

Under the ‘harmonious’ discussion between the majority and minority, in the end, it was decided that there would be an additional spot in the final competition, allowing Zhen Xiao Yan to not need to go through the pre-selection competition, and just straightforwardly entering into the final competition.

This was also counted as unprecedented in the history. It is not that no one had not thought of this method before, but just that no one had this kind of power to use this kind of method. And as for those people who had the power to use this kind of method, they disdained doing this kind of thing, which they felt was ‘low grade’.

Chapter 52 – Delicate And Pretty Young Lady (3)

“Ah, you all agree to it already? I was still preparing for my next few lines too… Forget it. It’s better like this, there is no need to say anything else anymore.” The delicate and pretty young lady appeared to be somewhat disappointed. Originally, she thought that there would still be a short while of verbal sparring, and she had also specially prepared a lot of arguments to persuade those people to make them agree.

But in the end, she have however discovered that those people easily agreed, making those preparations of hers to go to waste!

“Alright, I will take my leave first!” The delicate and pretty young lady waved her hands and walked away with graceful footsteps.

“Stand right there!!”

Would everyone just let this pretty and delicate young lady leave like this? Very clearly, this was not possible. Even if they were willing, two young ladies that were present were definitely not willing.

Those two young ladies are precisely Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi, who were both waiting for Ye Lang to appear!!

“You should be young lady Ye Lan Yu right? You can forget about

finding the thirteenth prince's whereabouts from me, because even I myself also do not know where he is!" The pretty and delicate young lady smiled lightly as she spoke. And the expression with which she looked at Ye Lan Yu seemed to be a bit strange.

The delicate and pretty young lady continued talking: "However, you don't have to worry. He told me to pass a message if I were to see you or Princess Qi, that at the final competition, three days later, he will definitely show up!"

"The way you smile is very strange, are you deceiving me?" Ye Lan Yu questioned the delicate and pretty young lady. When she saw the strange smile on her face, she felt that the girl seemed to be hiding something.

"The reason I smiled is because by the thirteenth prince's words, he originally thought that they would not agree with his request very quickly, so thus, he sold the two of you away....." In the pretty and delicate young lady's expression, there was a bit of cunningness, as if she was undergoing some kind of plot.

"Sold us away? What do you mean?" Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi asked confusedly.

"He said 'If they felt that Zhen Xiao Yan did not have enough qualifications to enter the final competition, I would let my big sis go up on stage to dance, I believe that there should be many people who would want to see that.....And if this was still not enough, then let Princess Qi go up on stage to sing....."

“Damn! Why didn’t you say that earlier!!” A group of people was regretting why they agreed so quickly, and were all thinking that they should have insisted on not agreeing. All of them seriously wanted to watch Ye Lan Yu dance and Princess Qi sing, that scene would really be……

And at this time, Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi had already turned black, and they both bellowed in unison: “ Ye Lang, little bastard! See if I don’t pull out your skin when you come back!!”

Why did they both have this kind of reaction? The reason is very simple. Many years ago, when Ye Lan Yu danced for the first time, that imposing manner seriously shocked the heavens and made ghosts cry, was what Ye Lan Yu herself thought. As for her dance, it can be judged by using the dialog of that time.

……

“Big sis, were you having a cramp just now?” Ye Lang asked with concern.

“……! I was dancing!!!” Ye Lan Yu said somewhat speechlessly.

“Ah, so you were dancing just now. But, why were your movements so stiff, and your expression so dull, just like a block of wood!” Ye Lang asked foolishly. He finally understood that it was dancing.

“Are you courting death?” Black lines appeared on Ye Lan Yu’s

forehead.

“..... Actually, your dance is pretty good, but I am stupid and not able to tell. You look at everyone else, they are all very supportive and are all laughing. Just that, I don’t know why they are holding their stomach for. Could it be that the food today was spoiled!” Ye Lang said very honestly, and those words of his shifted some of the rage onto other people.

“Little bastard, no one will take you as a mute even if you don’t speak! Xiao Yu, your dance is very good, mom supports you. But it is best for you to not dance in front of other people in the future.....” Long An Qi held onto her stomach and was already almost lying on the floor.

“.....”

.....

As for Princess Qi’s singing, similar to Ye Lan Yu’s dancing, they were different tunes played with equal skill. Although Princess Qi’s voice was very pleasant and enchanting to hear, but the moment she starts singing, she would immediately go out of tune, and even two tiger would not be able to pull it back.

Because of this, the both of them would never mention singing or dancing, and whoever mentioned it, they would be very short with them, much less talking about going on stage and perform. It can be easily imagined just how high the anger of the two of them was towards Ye Lang!

However, in many peoples' hearts, they wanted to watch and listen to their unconventional talent as it would also have another kind of taste. Since after all, the two of them were one of the few absolute beauties of the world!

However, they would never give anyone a chance to watch or listen to their unconventional talent at all. Of course, Ye Lang was not included in those people!

"Hee hee, remember to properly give him a lesson okay. Best if you two were to help me give him a few bites too!" The pretty and delicate young lady smiled wittily, feeling somewhat joyful for having succeeded with her plot. Then afterwards, she disappeared into the crowd, which was filled with anger, anticipation and excitement.

Due to the place being somewhat chaotic at that time, and there also being many people, the delicate and pretty young lady's trace also disappeared subsequently. Thus, from the start to finish, no one knew who that pretty and delicate young lady was.

However, there was also a portion of people who suspected that this delicate and pretty young lady was a certain person, but they however immediately shook their heads and denied it, because the image between this delicate and pretty young lady and the person that they suspected differed too far from one another. That person which they suspected was widely known as pretty and flirtatious, this contrast was just too big!

The reason for their suspicion was because the voice of the delicate and pretty young lady was just too similar. But then again, it also felt dissimilar, because the voice of this girl had a wittiness and closeness feel to it. And comparing to the voice of that seductive and haughty person, it was completely different!

“Why did I feel that it was her, this is just too strange. Could it be that I am thinking too much? Alright, at night, I will go there……”

At this time, Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi were also regretting. Regretting that they should not have just gotten angry at that time, and should have made the delicate and pretty young lady stay behind so that they could ask her clearly about Ye Lang’s whereabouts. Even if they did not find the whereabout of Ye Lang after asking, at the least, they could also know how he was previously.

According to that delicate and pretty young lady’s tone, before all this, she was still together with him!

Now, they had no other choice, and could only wait for three days, then see how things go. At that time, they must surely break his bones and pull off his skin!!

At this moment, at a certain place……

“Achoo……Who is thinking about me? Come come, fatty, make the final sprint! Three days later, it will be the time to decide your fate, and those 20 days of suffering of yours will finally have some worth!” Ye Lang sneezed and then continued reading his book as

he sat on a rocking chair, while at the same time, speaking calmly.

“Hmph, easy for you to say! Those 20 days, it was like I was not a human anymore. And from the beginning to the end, you have just been watching the show at the side!”

“Other than watching the show, what else can I do? This kind of thing, I am not able to help you at all!” Ye Lang replied naturally.

“At least, you should give me some support, let me feel that you are working hard with me……”

“Oh, then, go fatty! I support you! You will succeed for sure!!” Ye Lang said very seriously. Furthermore, he took out a sign and wrote a few encouraging words on it and placed it at the side, then afterwards, continued shaking his rocking chair and reading the book……

“…… Why don’t you just go and die!!”

“I have died already, if not, how am I able to see you……”

“Hmph, you’re saying that I look like a ghost right now?”

“I didn’t say that, you said that yourself!”

“……”

Chapter 53 – Liu Fei Yan (1)

Three days later, at the location of the place where the Incomparable Girl Talent Competition was held, the competition was finally about to begin…

But the two people who everyone was paying the most attention to – Ye Lang and Zhen Xiao Yan, still had to show up!

“I say, the competition is already about to begin, why is that little brat still not here? This time, it should be unlikely for him to go so far as to say that he wants to directly crown Zhen Xiao Yan as the champion, and saying that if they don’t give the championship to Zhen Xiao Yan, he would get rid of the original champion right?” Seeing that Ye Lang still hadn’t shown up, the judges and the seniors of those girls who were present all began to start randomly speculating for a bit.

“Based on what he said last time, there is a possibility that this might happen……”

“This should be impossible, Ye Family would definitely not allow him to mess around like that!” Someone said very firmly.

“The question lies in whether this brat would even listen? If he really did it, what can Ye Family even do to him at that time? According to past experiences, Ye Family would only cover up for him, and at most, only give him a tiny bit of punishment!”

“This……”

“You tell me, why is it like this? For no good reason, this brat ran into this competition and stuck his nose into it to do some weird thing. Isn’t that Zhen Xiao Yan very fat and very ugly? Why would he help this kind of person?” Many people who were present were all still not able to understand this, why would Ye Lang help Zhen Xiao Yan?

If it’s because of Zhen Xiao Yan family background, but she had no family background; maybe her figure, but she had no figure either, and as for looks, that was something that she even less had. But of all things, this type of person who should not have any interactions with Ye Family’s thirteenth prince, however, very luckily received his help.

Actually, within those present here, majority of the people also thought about that. If their daughter or granddaughter had been favored by Ye Lang, perhaps it would be much better than becoming the champion of this Incomparable Girl Talent Competition.

Although Ye Lang was a publicly known prodigal son who did not have any good qualities, but he was someone who had a strong family background, and this point was enough to make up for all of his shortcomings!

Even if he was now just like he was in the past, being an idiot, there would also still be many who would fight to get close with him. But of course, the precondition being that Ye Lang not having Princess Qi as his fiancée.

“About that, I don’t really know. I just know that, if not for that Sha girl, Zhen Xiao Yan would not have participated in this competition, and we would also not have this current situation with Ye Lang to worry about!”

At this time, everyone in the vicinity all turned their eyes and stared at the pitiful Sha Family’s head. Originally, he already was not someone who was powerful, but right now, he was even weaker as he got shunned and resented by others.

The Sha family head was also very very aggrieved. Although he also understood that this could not be blamed on Sha Lan, but this matter, however, made many of his relationships turn sour. And for someone who has been struggling in this noble social circle, this was definitely fatal!!

Previously, at home, he had already bellowed at Sha Lan, asking her why she let Ye Lang, this super prodigal son, slip through her fingers and not want him. Why did she not understand the meaning of the pavilion closest to the water enjoys the moonlight first, to have actually let ‘the early bird catches the worm’ happened by Zhen Xiao Yan!

Although Mo Ya was not bad, but compared to Ye Lang, he was still lacking too much. If you said that Sha Lan’s affections for Mo Ya were because of love, then what had happened was nothing much. But if her purpose was for relationships and benefits, then that would mean that she had indeed suffered disastrous loss!

No matter what was said, no matter what the result will be, even if Sha Lan becomes the champion, she would also not feel good.

And as for Zhen Xiao Yan, it doesn't really matter for her, as no matter whether she wins or loses, she would still not suffer any losses.

Using Ye Lang's words to say, "You are barefoot, is there even a need to be scared of her wearing shoes?"

And the question right now is, 'Why has Ye Lang still not shown up?'.

After a few more contestants, the entire competition would come to an end already. Then by that time, even if he has an enormous privilege, he would also not be able to change the result.

Could it be that it is just as what they had speculated? That he would just get rid of the champion and then afterwards let Zhen Xiao Yan substitute her?

The more they thought about this, the more logical this guess of theirs became. Because, after waiting for all the female talents to finish performing, Ye Lang was still not here……

"Fool, stupid fellow, idiot……Why are you still not showing up?" Ye Lan Yu looked at the exit and mumbled, the concern in her expression could be seen.

"Ye Lan Yu, don't worry! Since he said that he will come, then he will come. Although he is a bit stupid, a bit foolish, but he has never gone back on his words before!" Unprecedentedly, Princess

Qi consoled Ye Lan Yu for a bit.

“I know that, and that is why I am worried. I’m worried that maybe he has met with some accidents……” Ye Lan Yu said worriedly.

“…….” Princess Qi remained silent. She had also thought about this, however, she optimistically believed that in Soaring Sky Empire, no one would dare to do any harm to Ye Lang at all.

“Ah, that woman…… Princess Qi, isn’t that the person of that time……” Suddenly, Ye Lan Yu pointed to an area. That area seemed to be a VIP seating area, and at that place, there seemed to be someone that she had seen before.

“That……she……That’s right, she is that woman from three days ago, but her look today seems to feel different! Ah, Ye Lan Yu, where did you go?” Princess Qi suddenly discovered that Ye Lan Yu had already jumped out, not caring about her image in the slightest bit, straightforwardly jumping from the stage towards the area which she pointed out previously.

Princes Qi went into a daze for a while, then made an action which made others feel dumbstruck as she jumped towards the area with Ye Lan Yu. Both of them used their magic power to jump, and the control of their magic was to the point of perfection, letting others be surprised about their strength.

“What are those two girls trying to do, not caring about their image and jumping around like that. Right now, there are a lot

people watching. It is okay if it's just your daughter, why did my daughter also follow after her too." The Emperor, who was sitting on the main seat, said towards Ye Cheng Tian.

"Right, just what is going on? Normally, those two wouldn't be lacking in manners like this. To make the both of them lose their manners at the same time can only be because of Ye Lang, that little bastard! Could it be they have news of him?"

"It should be, they seem to have gone there to find a person……"

"It's not that it seems like, it is precisely that. Look, they even caught that person already! Also, what did you say just now, why is it that it is ok if it's just my daughter?"

"Cough, cough……"

……

"Princess, Lady Ye, we meet once again! But, could you loosen your grip a bit." The young lady who had been caught by Ye Lan Yu said very politely.

"Tell me, where did my little brother go to?" Ye Lan Yu got right to the point and asked.

The young lady smiled bitterly and said: "I also don't know about that, I was still looking for him just a while ago. I know that you will suspect me, but I can also only tell you that, three days ago, I

was still together with the thirteenth prince. However, the next three days afterwards, I don't know where he went to."

"Three days ago, he……" When Ye Lan Yu wanted to ask another question, a person suddenly appeared and interrupted her.

"Princess, Lady Lan Yu, the Emperor asked you two to go over to him, and to bring along this young lady too, he has some questions he wants to ask!" The person who came was one of the Imperial Family's imperial guards.

When the Emperor noticed Ye Lan Yu's and Princess Qi's actions, he had already given an order to make someone bring them over here. As for the reason, the first reason was that he was afraid that the two of them would do something that would make others feel astonished, and the second reason was that, he also wanted to know the identity of this mysterious young lady.

The Emperor and Ye Cheng Tian had sent people to check the details of the young lady before, but they were not able to check this young lady's identity. This surprised them, as within the Imperial Capital, there was actually someone who they were not able to check out.

Chapter 54 – Liu Fei Yan (2)

“Let him wait, I still haven’t properly asked yet!” Ye Lan Yu said with no trace politeness at all. Those words of hers made others feel astonished, but it was seemingly also within expectations.

“Lady Lan Yu, superior Ye also instructed you to wait for a bit, they also want to know the same thing as you two.” The imperial guard added on.

“I don’t care about you all……” As before, Ye Lan Yu rejected. Within her heart, Ye Lang was the biggest, everyone else must move aside.

“Ye lan Yu, it’s better to listen together with them, everyone wants to know, there is no need to be in a rush for just a short while.” Princess Qi wrinkled her brows and pulled Ye Lan Yu.

“All right, let’s go together then! Quickly!!” After finishing speaking, Ye Lan Yu pulled the young lady and rushed towards the place where the emperor was currently at. If people did not know her, she probably would have been blocked by quite a few people on her way.

……

When Ye Lan Yu and the other two arrived at Ye Cheng Tian and the emperor’s side. When the emperor straightforwardly asked who the delicate and pretty young lady was, and when that young lady said her name, all the men who were present were

dumbstruck, having a look of disbelief on their faces.

“This…how could this be possible? How could it be her? Which point of her is alike?”

“You say that you are Liu Fei Yan? Impossible, this is definitely impossible!!” The emperor and Ye Cheng Tian both spoke in unison, and all the males present agreed unanimously with their words.

“Why is it not possible?” Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi asked unclearly.

“Liu Fei Yan is Romantic Floor’s star of the year. She is the representative of flirtatious and charming, and furthermore, she subdued the majority of the imperial capital’s males, how could she possibly be such a delicate and pretty little girl!!” The emperor explained.

“This is just a rumor I guess, you all also have never seen her before…….”

“Who said that we didn’t see her before, we……” Ye Cheng Tian said next.

“Cough, cough!!” The emperor immediately coughed, cutting off Ye Cheng Tian’s words.

“Dad/Father emperor! You……”

Ye Cheng Tian immediately corrected himself: “That, about that, although we haven’t seen her before, but our information is definitely reliable. Let’s not talk about whether this Liu Fei Yan looks delicate and pretty, she doesn’t have even a bit of seductive feeling at all. Just talk about her current age, she only looks just 17 or 18 years old, so how could she be that Liu Fei Yan. I presume that Liu Fei Yan should at least be 25 or 26 years old.”

“Then, it could be that they maybe have the same name.”

No, I am that seductive Liu Fei Yan that you all are speaking of. However, that is only the look which I show to all you men when I perform at Romantic Floor. Don’t you men all like that kind of woman? Also, I am not 25 or 26 years old, I am even younger than the thirteenth prince okay. It is only when I dress up that I would appear a bit older.” Liu Fei Yan smiled and said.

“Young lady, don’t think of bluffing us, if Liu Fei Yan really has this side to her, we should have known already. Her daily life, who knows how many people followed her. Moreover, a young lady who is in her teens, how would she even be able to have that seductive and mature side to her?” The emperor and the others still did not believe.

“Romantic Floor is the imperial capital’s most top-notch brothel, and I have been there since I was little. You say, would I not be able to have that kind of side? As for this current look of mine, isn’t it all because of the thirteenth prince, saying that he doesn’t like that side of mine, making me wash up before accompanying him……” Liu Fei Yan protested coquettishly, and those words of hers seemed

to be very ambiguous.

“What did you say!! My little brother wants you to accompany him?! If you dare touch him, I will kill you!!” Said Ye Lan Yu furiously. She definitely could not accept her little brother mixing together with a brothel woman.

But those words of hers seem to have made Ye Lang be the girl and Liu Fei Yan the big pervert!

“Young lady Ye, don’t misunderstand, he only made me accompany him to train Xiao Yan only.” Liu Fei Yan said faintly, and a complicated look flashed across her face.

“It’s good as long as you understand. Next time, you are not allowed to get close to my little brother!” Ye Lan Yu did not have any sort of sympathy or pity at all. In order to protect Ye Lang, even if it was to harm others, she would still choose to harm them without the slightest hesitation.

“Why is he together with you? Could it be that he went to Romantic Floor again?” Princess Qi took hold of the crucial point of the problem.

“All right, didn’t you all want to know where he has been all this time, and what has he been doing? Just as Princess Qi said, he has indeed once again come to our Romantic Floor again after 13 years. Starting from over 20 days ago until 3 days ago, he has been staying at my courtyard, together with Xiao Yan!” When Liu Fei Yan said the part about 13 years having passed, there seemed to be

a bit of emotional fluctuation.

At this time, Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi also noticed that emotional fluctuation of hers, a thought flashed passed in their minds. Could it be that she has seen Ye Lang 13 years ago?

But at this time, the both of them did not have any thoughts to care about that, and they both also perhaps felt that it was completely not important at all.

But the emperor and Ye Cheng Tian however thought about one matter, no wonder we weren't about to find him, so the reason was because he ran to Romantic Floor. This little brat is really nothing good, going there and not even notifying us, we could have at least gone together……

"Why did he bring Zhen Xiao Yan to that place of yours?" Everyone was not able to understand, completely not able to understand just what Ye Lang is trying to do.

"The reason was to make Xiao Yan learn the etiquettes a woman should have, to let Xiao Yan have a bit more temperament. Before all this, Xiao Yan's condition could only be said to be a spectacle too horrible to endure!" Liu Fei Yan smiled. Thinking of the situation of that time, she immediately felt that it was funny.

The first time she saw Zhen Xiao Yan, she straightforwardly said that it was impossible, but she never thought that the result would however go beyond what she had expected.

“She indeed needs to learn those, but the question is, why did Ye Lang bring her to your Romantic Floor? Others could also teach her those, why was there a need to choose that place of yours?” Princess Qi asked confusedly.

“There are many people who can complete this task, and perhaps you all also can. However, to be able to complete this in such a short time, there are only two places, and those two places, one of them is the imperial palace, and the other is a brothel! This is what the thirteenth prince himself said.” Liu Fei Yan said while smiling.

“……” Those words made the emperor’s face to become a bit unnatural. This little bastard, to actually compare the imperial palace with a brothel equally!

However, those words were also reasonable. To cultivate a girl’s temperament in such a short time, at least on the surface, there were only the imperial palace and a brothel, these two special places. And to complete it in such a short time, it is also not something which an ordinary imperial palace and brothel is able to do!

Just on the basis that this delicate and pretty young lady in front of them is able to transform into that seductive appearance, it shows the strength of Romantic Floor on this aspect. As for the imperial palace, it is a bit hard to say.

“Since he knows that the imperial palace is also possible, why did he go to that place of yours, it is not like he can’t come to the imperial palace.” Princess Qi still could not understand, could not understand why Ye Lang would choose that place out of those two

choices.

Chapter 55 – The Birth Of A Miracle (1)

Liu Fei Yan smiled and said: “I also asked him about that. He said that, according to the previous Incomparable Girl Talent Competition, the dominant judges and spectators are all males, and if Xiao Yan is to be able to attract those males’ gazes, of course she had to come to Romantic Floor. He said that, as long as Xiao Yan is able to attract that group of males, then she would 100% get number 1.”

“……”

This—it is truly indeed like this, although this competition is said to be some talent competition, but the matter of fact was, however, that it was an appearance showcase, and sex appeal was really a huge proportion in the winning factor.

However, the majority of the talent girls disdained this point, because they felt that the most attracting point of them was their talent, and thus there were very few people who would use their sex appeal. As for Ye Lang, he didn’t care about all those, as long as it was possible to win, all is good. What’s more, it was also not him himself using his sex appeal, thus him even more not having any scruples at all.

But there was however a problem in the midst of all those things, does Zhen Xiao Yan even have sex appeal? If she was to use her sex appeal, how many people would even be willing to buy it? No, it should be that, would anyone even be willing to pay for their bill?

“If it is you, I believe it is possible, but as for Zhen Xiao Yan, even if a miracle were to happen, it would still be very hard to do.” The emperor spoke out everyone’s thoughts.

“That’s right, that appearance of her, perhaps spending one or two years would be possible to fix it. But just a mere 20 plus days… Even if there are any improvements, it would still be too lacking compared to those other girls.” Said Ye Lan Yu very straightforwardly.

“About this, my thought was the same as all of you at that time, but in those 20 plus days, I started feeling that it is also not impossible. Thirteenth prince and Xiao Yan, the two of them have a side to them that everyone is not able to imagine.” Liu Fei Yan lamented.

A side which everyone is not able to imagine? Just which kind of side is it?

Just when everyone wanted to ask clearly about this thing, wanting to question Liu Fei Yan, Liu Fei Yan softly said –

“I believe that they will be able to succeed this time! Even though Xiao Yan had to suffer from that kind of inhuman pain, she still persevered on. Just based on this point, I deeply believe that she will succeed!”

Inhuman pain? From this word, everyone was able to more or less guess some things. That is, for this competition, Zhen Xiao Yan has paid a price with normal people would not be able to pay

out!

“I also believe that the thirteenth prince is able to change a person, and I myself am a very good example. If not for him, I would also not have this side of me! I also hate him really really much……” The more Liu Fei Yan spoke, the softer she got, and at the end, only she herself was able to hear her voice.

In those 20 plus days where she had been in contact with the thirteenth prince, at the same time where she changed Zhen Xiao Yan’s temperament, she herself was also slowly changing. And in the end, she also seemed to understand, maybe the person who changed Zhen Xiao Yan wasn’t Zhen Xiao Yan herself, but it was instead Ye Lang, who also changed her at the same time.

Being together with Ye Lang, she would always feel a kind of naturalness and closeness, making her slowly let go of her seductive and icy arrogant outward appearance, and slowly recovering that side of her deep down in her heart. Letting her body emit a kind of delicate and pretty feeling.

“What?!” Everyone was not able to understand what Liu Fei Yan was saying, and even if they were able to hear everything she said, they would still not be able to understand it, never mind not even having heard all of it.

Liu Fei Yan seemed to have woken up from a dream, letting out a laugh, then shook her head and said:” Nothing much, you all just watch properly, Xiao Yan will give all of you a big surprise!”

“Can’t you just straightforwardly tell us just how Zhen Xiao Yan looks like right now, and what did Ye Lang do to her?” Said Princess Qi while furrowing her brows. She did not like to guess like this, especially on the matters about Ye Lang, she wants to clearly understand what the matter is.

“What the thirteenth prince is doing?” Liu Fei Yan shook her head, “I also don’t really know. I just know that he used some very mystical alchemy to let Xiao Yan’s body have a miraculous change. However, this alchemy also brought forth a lot of pain for Xiao Yan, and at the same time Xiao Yan endured this kind of pain, she had to undergo our training.”

“Miraculous change?” Everyone was not able to understand just what kind of change it was, and what kind of mystical alchemy did Ye Lang have, that even they didn’t know about.

Although everyone knew that Ye Lang knew alchemy, but what everyone knew about was however only confined to the degree at the standard of an ordinary alchemy student.

However, everyone did not think that Ye Lang’s alchemy had any astonishing point to it. And this was also perhaps because Ye Lang had always been staying low profile, and not having displaying his alchemy skill before.

Thus, at this time, many people were astonished by his ‘alchemy’.

“Yep, very miraculous. Miraculous to a point where it is able to

make a person not able to believe it. In these 20 plus days, Xiao Yan she……" Liu Fei Yan was just about to say something, but she suddenly stopped, because at this time, a change appeared at the place, a change which arose from the arrival of a person.

At this time, the Incomparable Talent Girl Competition on the stage was about to come to an end, and if no accidents were to happen, the competition this time would also be finalized.

However, at this final moment, an accident, no, it should be said to be a thing which everyone has been all along looking forward too, just like this, expectedly happened!

"I'm sorry, I have come late, my apologies, my apologies!" A young man pulled onto a young lady and dashed towards the stage from the outside, apologizing while running at the same time.

Who was the young man? Everyone present was all able to recognize him, he was exactly that person who everyone had been waiting for and speculated about, that Ye Family's thirteenth prince, who had disappeared for 20 plus days –

"Ye Lang!!"

But, who is that young lady he was pulling along? This question was something which everyone really wanted to ask, along with asking him just where Zhen Xiao Yan was, why did they not come together?

No one felt that this young lady could be Zhen Xiao Yan, because this young lady had figure and looks, and was definitely not that Zhen Xiao Yan who had ‘none of the goods’.

“My apologies, I have come a bit late because of a bit of accident. But it seems like I have come just in time.” Ye Lang straightforwardly went up to the stage and spoke calmly while apologizing to the crowd.

Thump!

Suddenly, Ye Lang was knocked on the head by a small fist.

“Ah……big sis, what are you doing?” Ye Lang looked at the person who knocked his head and said painfully.

Big sis? Then is that Ye Lan Yu? Strange, wasn’t she just by Ye Cheng Tian’s side a while ago?

“? ! How did this little girl ran away so fast?”

At this time, the emperor and the others only then discovered that Ye Lan Yu had disappeared from their side and ran onto the stage. And during this process, there seemed to be not one person who had noticed it, and at the same time they also discovered that Princess Qi had also disappeared from their side and appeared at Ye Lang’s side.

“What am I doing you say? Next time, if you dare to play hide

and seek without informing me at all, I will beat you!!" Ye Lan Yu raised her fist to show off her might.

"Aren't you already beating me right now?" Ye Lang asked confusedly.

"This is only just a very very small hit, it is still very far off from a real beating!" Ye Lan Yu snorted, while at the same time, beginning to give Ye Lang a body check, carefully looking if there were any changes from before, checking If he had suffered from any injuries or hardships during that period of time.

"....."

Chapter 56 – The Birth Of A Miracle (2)

“You are being foolish again, quickly tell me, why did you come so late?” Ye Lan Yu used her finger and lightly tapped on Ye Lang’s forehead.

“It’s all because of this fat woman for keeping procrastinating. Women just like to dawdle like this.” Ye Lang waved his hands and looked at the young lady at the side.

“Fat woman?”

Following Ye Lang’s gaze, Ye Lan Yu attentively examined that young lady. Only now did she pay attention to this young lady, and after taking a look, she wasn’t able to understand the meaning of ‘fat woman’.

The young lady before their eyes wore a black tight shirt and a black short dress, revealing her perfect figure in front of everyone. That definitely did not have any relation with the word ‘fat’ at all. If something were to be called fat, it would only be the young lady’s chest and butt, that which would make females be jealous and males be captivated.

Matching with her small slim waist and her slender legs, it was basically the representative of a devilish figure!

Adding on the young lady’s white and exquisite skin, jade-like little face, and black elegant long hair, this young lady’s charm was able to attract the gaze of any person!

And this young lady's hairstyle was also very unique. It was a hairstyle which Ye Lan Yu had never seen before, and was also a hairstyle which she sort of wanted right now. A bun was combed up from the back of the young lady's hair, with some white feather inserted at the top, and the hair was straight, but the part of the hair which was hanging down was curly.

Everything made this young lady seem to be a noble little princess who brought forth a bit of cuteness and a bit of lovable daringness.

"Hmph, isn't it all still because of you! To have not even helped me prepare my clothes properly, making me still have to alter it!" The young lady snorted lightly, showing her protest towards Ye Lang.

"Please, I have helped you prepare from the start. But who would have known that your chest would become so much smaller……" Ye Lang said unrestrainedly.

The young lady's face became red and said in shame: "I have told you many times, it is every part of my body that has become smaller, not just my chest!!"

"Isn't it all the same……" Ye Land said with an indifferent look.

"How is it all the same?!"

“It’s more or less the same!”

“No, it’s not, don’t always just try to mix it all up, this is far from being more or less the same!!”

Ye Lang and the young lady began to argue endlessly, and when others heard those words, they felt a bit muddle-headed, totally unable to understand just what they were arguing about. However, one point which they could confirm was that they were arguing about the young lady’s chest problem.

“You two, stop arguing! Little brother, from where did you deceive this cute little princess from? Not bad, she’s just lacking a bit compared to your big sister, and equally matches with Princess Qi!” At the same time that Ye Lan Yu stopped the two from arguing, she also gave the young lady a very high evaluation.

“Hey, hey, it is that she’s lacking a bit compared to me, and equally matches with you!” Princess Qi corrected Ye Lan Yu.

“She?! Little princess?! The eyes of the two of you must surely have a problem, how does she look like a little princess, and which part of her is cute.” Ye Lang felt that this young lady’s appearance belonged to the sexy type, and did not even remotely have anything to do with the word ‘cute’ at all. This appearance was designed by him, in order to let her seduce all the man here to death!

Except, he was not very specialized in the aspect of designing, and the end result became somewhat different from what he

thought of. But luckily, the effect was still okay!

"Alright, stop chatting already, we have to take part in the competition. Fat woman, the rest is on you now." After Ye Lang finished speaking, it was time to go into today's main topic.

"Competition? Zhen Xiao Yan is not even here, what competition are you even going to take part in?" Ye Lan Yu asked strangely.

"Who says that she is not here, isn't she just right by my side." Ye Lang pointed to the young lady at his side, and the young lady also smiled slightly, seemingly agreeing with what Ye Lang said.

But, towards those words, no one present here believed it. Even Liu Fei Yan, who had seen Zhen Xiao Yan three days ago, was also doubting Ye Lang.

"Little scoundrel, to dare to deceive your big sis!" Ye Lan Yu said very unhappily, and furthermore knocked on Ye Lang's big head ruthlessly.

"Ye Lang, don't take it too far, don't think that just because you are Ye Family's thirteenth prince, it means that you can do what you want and find a person to come and substitute Zhen Xiao Yan!!"

"Your majesty, you said that you would maintain the fairness of this competition, can he do this sort of thing?"

In a short time, the scene began to surge up violently. Everyone all believed that Ye Lang found someone else to substitute Zhen Xiao Yan in the competition. They would definitely not believe that this young lady in front of them, who looked like a beautiful little princess, could be that fat and ugly Zhen Xiao Yan!

No, it is definitely not possible!

Thus, they violently opposed to Ye Lang using this kind of dirty method to win the competition, although in their heart, they also wanted to see the young lady perform.

“Ye Lang, although we support you helping Zhen Xiao Yan, but you also cannot use this kind of method, it will give rise to public anger.” The emperor smiled bitterly then spoke afterwards.

“Xiao Lang, even if you want to win, you must also have to win fairly!” Ye Cheng Tian followed after and spoke, the meaning of his words were also very evident, he also did not believe that the young lady at Ye Lang’s side was that Zhen Xiao Yan.

“I will win the competition very fairly! The her right now does not need to use any other method to win the competition!” Ye Lang seemed to not have discovered the problem, and this made the few other girls at the side shake their head and think in their heart –

“Fool, stupid fellow!”

A judge began to howl indignantly: “If she is Zhen Xiao Yan,

there is of course no need to use any method! But the problem is that she is not Zhen Xiao Yan, but is a helper which you found. This act of yours looks down on all of us present and also the existence of the emperor!!”

“If you want to do it like this, we will withdraw from the competition!!”

“Emperor, you can’t spoil him like that!”

In a short while, the scene began to surge up violently again. Those judges, which were also those girls’ family members, all of them began to shout their catchphrases, and conveniently dragged the emperor into this mess.

“Ye Lang……”

“What kind of rubbish are all of you talking about? Although she changed a bit, but she is indeed fat woman…Zhen Xiao Yan! Fat woman, quickly give your greetings to everyone, and take note of your manners!” Ye Lang seemed to have discovered that he hadn’t made Zhen Xiao Yan introduce herself, and he also seemed to very obtusely think that it was because of this that everyone was doubting that she was Zhen Xiao Yan.

Zhen Xiao Yan lightly gave a bow, then afterwards talked with a very gentle and beautiful voice: “Erm, hello everyone, I am Zhen Xiao Yan!”

“……” The elegant and noble mannerisms made everyone feel a light suffocation, and also caused everyone to go into deep silence for a short moment!

And after a moment of silence, what followed after was another big eruption!!

“Fuck, I will definitely not believe that this young lady is Zhen Xiao Yan! Even if you kill me, I will still not believe it!!”

“Even if you find someone to substitute Zhen Xiao Yan, can you please find a much more reasonable one, this difference is just too big! Do you take all of us as idiots?”

“……”

“Ye Lang, you are too shameless! However, I support you……”

“I also support you!”

“? ?”

After bursts of scoldings and curses, not sure who shouted out his support for Ye Lang, it suddenly made the scene, where everyone was on a punitive expedition against Ye Lang, to have also another ‘inharmonious’ supporting cheers. Moreover, these supporting cheers seemed to be getting louder and louder.

This made the scene become a bit strange……

Chapter 57 – The Birth Of A Miracle (3)

Why support? No more nonsense, what are we here for? To see a beauty, oh, no, for the talented girl.

No one cared who the girl really is. As long as the girl is beautiful and graceful enough, with a little talent, it is enough.

Now, Zhen Xiao Yan, whether she is a fake or not, it doesn't matter. After all, her appearance, her elegance, and her charm can rival the previous girls, even be superior to them. Why care about whether she is the genuine one or not?

Thirteenth Prince, just be bold, we are here for you!

It is better to find more stunning beauties.

"Oh, this... Interesting, Chengtian, your son is wonderful! Well done!" Seeing what happened, the emperor praised Ye Chengtian from the bottom of his heart, patting his shoulder.

"My thanks." it seemed that Ye Lang hadn't observed that there was something off with the cheers. As for these cheers, it didn't mean that the girl next to him was recognized as Zhen Xiao Yan.

"Ye Lang!! You..." an experienced lord stood up, reprimanding him, who was one of the judges. But he couldn't speak out the following words.

You…You what?

He couldn’t find any words to express his thoughts, for words like bold, shameless, and so on were used to reprimand him by many other people.

“Any way, you cannot do that! We won’t allow this behavior. Go, call Zhen Xiao Yan and make her come here for the match, with her own ability.”

“What have I done? What are you taking about? I have told you that she is Zhen XiaoYan!” Ye Lang said impatiently, “Match, match, fat woman, defeat this Sha Lan pig. Oh, right, has she entered the finals?”

“……”

You even don’t know whether she entered the finals, so arrogant! Really, you!

“Ye Lang, you said she is Zhen Xiao Yan, then evidence, what’s the evidence? Prove it!” A person doubted him, and shouted, many other people consented with him.

Ye Lang frowned, “I said, she is, so she is. My words, that’s the evidence.” He said calmly.

Although the tone was soft, but no one could retort it. It was an unstoppable tone. I am the law, no one can doubt me! No one can

doubt me!

These words shocked other people, it was the first time for them seeing Ye Lang speak out such strong words. But naturally, coming from Ye Lang's mouth, all the people thought it was reasonable.

"Fat woman, go, sing a song, end it quickly, I don't like to stay here" Ye Lang said impatiently, unhappy. How dare they doubt what I said, who am I? I am an honest prince!

Meanwhile, he stepped down and left the stage.

"Oh, I see. Wait, won't you accompany me on the stage?" Zhen Xiao Yan nodded her head at first, but she noticed that Ye Lang left the stage, leaving her along, thus she called him back.

In his plan. Ye Lang planned to accompany Zhen Xiao Yan with her performance, and he would play an instrument as background music for her, to optimize her voice so she could sing a perfect song.

"You just sing casually, your charm has already attracted most of the people here, no need for my help." Ye Lang informed the attitude of the crowd to Zhen. There was no worry about her match, as long as nothing extraordinary happened.

"No, No, you cannot leave me alone on this stage, I am not brave enough to sing a song without you." Zhen pulled Ye Lang's sleeve, speaking in a diffident manner. Ye Lang, seeing her look and her

expression, wanted to open his arms and hold her in his chest gently, and enjoy the time with her, and only her.

Gosh! Jesus. I am dying! So pretty, so charming. I will vote for you being the best belle of the contest without singing. No need to sing!

The crowd became fervent, crazy, shouting out the name of Zhen Xiao Yan. They didn't even care about the evidence whether she is the genuine one. And they believed the words of Ye Lang, that the belle in front of them is the true, the genuine, Zhen Xiao Yan. Besides, in their view, Ye Lang never lied. Even if it is quite extraordinary, but no one will doubt it.

"Under these circumstances, fat woman, it is difficult for you to lose." Thought Ye Lang. He had made the decision to leave the stage. Someone wanted to listen to his music? His play? It is too cheap if he played his music now.

"Ummmm, I forgot to bring my guitar....." Ye Lang uses this pretext.

"....." Zhen frowned, repressing her anger. Muttered: "You liar. Even though you didn't bring your guitar, But this time, the song we planned to sing, is you playing the flute, and me singing, no business with a guitar.

"I play the flute?"

“Of course.”

“Are you sure?”

“Absolutely!”

“Alright, hurry up! Women!”

“Hmph.”

“Hey, brother, you....” Ye Lan Yu reminded Ye Lang at this moment. She thought that Ye Lang forgot her existence.

“Yiii? My sister, you are still here? Come with me? You sing, and you dance...”

“Fuck off!!!” Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi beat Ye Lang. If Ye Lang didn’t mention this, they wouldn’t have recalled that.

“Since you are not willing to dance with me, then go. Don’t impede our performance.” Ye Lang said, searching for his flute in his ring, where there was another space.

“Hmph! You will realize your fault!” Ye Lan Yu waved her little fist, and went down the stage with Princess Qi.

Before leaving the stage, they asked the same question: “Is she

really Zhen Xiao Yan?”

“Yep. The genuine.” Answered Ye Lang, nodding his head.

“Maybe it is unbelievable, but I trust you, and you wouldn’t lie to me. After this, tell me what happened.” These words were left behind by Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi.

They believed Ye Lang without doubt, they just wanted to make sure whether Ye Lang was lying, but didn’t doubt the truth of his words.

It is true, the stunning belle on the stage, with her charming appearance, her fabulous and elegant figure, and her graceful beauty, was the obese girl without any attractiveness, no manners, and no etiquette, the fat girl from twenty days ago.

The change shocked everyone, it was unbelievable. No doubt that the crowd did not believe it was that girl.

And what they definitely couldn’t believe is that she could do it, transform from a fat and rude girl, to a belle. How could she do that? It is impossible.

“I have to know how she did it. Then I wont get fat any more, and not worry about obesity!” Ye Lanyu thought. That is the most important thing she cared about, she didn’t care about any other thing.

It seems that after the confirmation of the identity of Zhen Xiao Yan, a large part of girls, no, all the women, of all range of ages, were wondering what method Ye Lang used to transform Zhen to such a beauty.

Especially the woman with a little obesity. They were dying to know the method.

But now, everyone was astonished by the music Ye Lang played, the song Zhen Xiao Yan sang. Their heart was attracted by the rhythm, the sound. They couldn't even think about any other thing. The music was infectious, they were affected by the atmosphere, they were absorbed in the ocean of song, it immersed their mind, and washed away their thoughts, without words.

Now, they witnessed the birth of a miracle.

……

"My grace?" At this time, it seems that someone still wanted to reject Ye Lang.

"See? I believe him, he won't deceive my daughter, and even his sister!" The emperor said affirmatively.

"But…"

Meanwhile, a melodious sound from a flute arose, announcing that everyone needed to be quiet, just listen to the play, which

narrated of romance, of love, whispering near their ear.

On the stage, Zhen Xiao Yan closed her eyes, bowed her head, seeming to sense something. Ye Lang kept a distance from her deliberately, to emphasize her existence and foresee the following performance.

Today, she plays the predominant role!

After a part of prelude, she raised her head slowly, opened her eye, with a soulful gaze towards the front.

It is the melody about a story of romantic love. It was also considered to be the best suitable song by Ye Lang for Zhen Xiao Yan to sing, to express her thought, her love, to touch everyone in their heart.

And this song, are the words she wanted to let Prince Mo Ya know. Let him know!

Of course, this song was polished by Ye Lang, to enhance the attraction of Zhen Xiao Yan’s voice. To make everyone remember her song, remember her love of Prince Mo Ya.

Now, everyone could feel it, that in the past Zhen Xiao Yan hid in the shadows, buried her emotions and her love. She dared not to speak out her love, she was just a fat girl, staring at Prince Mo Ya with her honest prays, her wish.

At this time, the truth beneath the water rose up, her love was known by the people watching her performance, listening to her song.

“The furthest distance between us, is not between life and death.

But when I stand in front of you, yet you don’t know that I love you…

Chapter 58 – Behind The Miracle (1)

The melody came to its end, and everyone stood silently.

At that moment, one of the main characters in this event, Mo Ya, appears publicly, in front of the stage.

As for Sha Lan, she knows she had been thoroughly defeated. What she now wants is for Zhen Xiao Yan to be fake, the beauty who won the match to not be the fat girl from twenty days ago.

If not, the only choice left for her is to accept that she has to share Mo Ya with Zhen Xiao Yan. She could only hope for her status in Mo Ya's mind to not be lower than Zhen Xiao Yan.

After this match, everyone believes that the end of the story is obvious.

With the best wishes from everyone, Zhen Xiao Yan and Mo Ya stared at each other, fondly, and soulful, ignoring the passing of time.

Several minutes later, they still just gazed at each other.

"Fatty, go, go for your love. You had to go through a hell of a difficult time, the frustration, the insinuation, all these difficulties that you've overcome, this is your reward, with the strength you've gotten. You deserve it. Just go." Said Ye Lang.

He noticed that Zhen Xiao Yan stood still on the stage, without stepping close to Mo Ya, so Ye Lang reminded Zhen Xiao Yan.

“Then…Then…Aye” Zhen Xiao Yan hesitates, shy and diffident.

“Oh…Woman, why are you hesitating? It’s so hard to understand women, I’m going home!” Ye Lang was puzzled. He didn’t understand why she didnt’t step forward towards her love, Mo Ya was just in front of her, so close! Ye Lang walked off the stage, shaking his head, going back home.

“Brother, you…you’re just going home? Don’t you want to stay here, and watch what happens to them?” Ye Lan Yu asked, curiously. She was waiting for a long time outside the stage.

“Boring. It’s just a couple of lovers whispering their affection. I am not interested in it. I’m tired now from the twenty days’ intensive work, sparing no effort to succeed… I need to relax, you know.” Ye Lang says casually, seemingly not caring about his achievements at all.

“Tired? Alright, you can go home, the carriage is waiting outside, you can doze off for a while.” Ye Lan Yu said, soft and gentle. When she hears Ye Lang saying that he is exhausted, she wouldn’t ask any more questions, no matter how eager she was to know the answer.

A sound arose.

“Heee, you liar, you were lazing around all these days, doing nothing, watching Zhen Xiao Yan struggling, working hard. You never encouraged her, not even trying to ease her suffering…”

“Hmm? Liu Fei Yan, you are here?” Ye Lang was surprised to see Liu Fei Yan standing next to him. She was as comely and attractive as she used to be. Of course, it was not his impression, but the public’s.

“Why can’t I stand here? I was snowed under the tasks you two gave me over the past twenty days, I must see how great my achievement is. Although, I did believe you could do it, but I am surprised to see the ultimate effect. Three days ago, Xiao Yan was not as attractive as what she is now. What else did you do to her, to transform her to such a beauty?” Liu Fei Yan said with a smile.

Meanwhile, her words made everyone understand why such tremendous change happened to Zhen Xiao Yan. Ye Lang had his reasons to disappear during the past three days. The reason is that he had to try his best, to make Zhen Xiao Yan perfect, without any flaw. At least, he had to ensure that Zhen Xiao Yan would be perfect for the competition.

“And, you’re just leaving? Don’t you want to know the result of this competition?” Liu Fei Yan asked the question again.

Ye Lang yawned, “No need to see the result. The performance by fatty was perfect, victory is hers, unless there is bias from the judges. But they wouldn’t dare do so. Besides, even if she is not No. 1, look at Zhen Xiao Yan and Mo Yan now. She is happy with what happened, reputation and fame won’t matter.”

“Zhen Xiao Yan and Mo Ya???”

“Yep, don’t you see that? Look they’re already looking a husband and his mistress.”

“Mistress? How can you call Xiao Yan mistress?”

“Why not? Sha Lan and Mo Ya are a couple, and now Xiao Yan will tell everyone her affection for Mo Ya. Poor Sha Lan! And Mo Ya, fickle in affection, loving the new and hating the old.” Ye Lang said deliberately.

“No, you are wrong. In this continent, you can have more than one wife. On the other hand, Mo Ya hasn’t married Sha Lan yet. He has to choose who will be his wife, you know.”

“Leave it alone, you little brat.”

“Then, I leave it alone. After all, fatty has realized her dream. Other things don’t matter.”

“Aye, Xiao Yan fought for Mo Ya. As long as she gets the acknowledgement of Mo Ya, all these struggles and difficulties she went through will be meaningful. The fame of the No.1 belle is just redundant.”

Princess Qi interrupted, “Ye Lang, how did you do that?

Transforming Xiao Yan to such a beauty. Amazing, it is like, like the power of a god."

Ye Lang sighed, shaking his head, "It is not how I did that, it is how she could achieve it. What I did is just make pills, and let her immerse into water mixed with herbs, providing a little help. It is she who transformed into a brand new person, with hard work, sparing no effort to realize her dream. If she didn't realize that her persistence is the only thing that can change her future, I couldn't have helped her even if I have the power of a god."

Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi became silent, speechless. But Liu Fei Yan knew what Ye Lang meant, she witnessed the transformation Xiao Yan went through, as well as the price she paid, which was hard for normal people.

As for Ye Lang, what she saw was that he was always leisurely and carefree, and took it easy, it seemed that he didn't care for the consequences of the transformation. But she knew, Ye Lang's support for Xiao Yan, was known by Xiao Yan herself, and no one else.

As for the relationship between Ye Lang and Zhen Xiao Yan, it became strange and ambiguous. Originally, they were good friends, and they would quarrel with each other, but soon they would reconcile, returning to harmony.

Chapter 59 – Behind The Miracle (2)

“What herbs did you use to transform and change her into such a beauty, becoming so gorgeous, and the skin so smooth and delicate in such a short time?” Both, Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi were curious about the truth. As for the reason why they were wondering the answer to the question, it is because the method to be slim and pretty is important for girls. Women are always attracted by anything that can make them look better.

The two bright girls knew that even if a girl could lose weight from a 100 kilos down to no more than 50 kilos in twenty days, her skin would be wrinkled, sagging, and ugly with this method.

Let alone Zhen Xiao Yan, whose skin didn’t look as delicate and smooth as that she has now. With the comparison, it is obvious that she used another method to make up for the disadvantages of quick weight loss.

It was not only the skin, even her hair.

Ye Lang was complacent about the changes: “Umm, for this, it is my secret prescription. I made it before by coincidence, which hadn’t been experimented. Fatty was an excellent and perfect sample!”

“……” Those who listened to his words were in silence.

“You used her as an experiment, what if your experiment failed?” Ye Lan Yu snorted, as she was a little angry about what Ye Lang did

imprudently.

"No worries. If she hadn't taken the risk to transform, she wouldn't have succeeded to what she became. The result demonstrates that my medicine works efficiently and within my expectations." Ye Lang shook his hand with confidence in his face.

"Aye, it was effective." Everyone nodded their heads in consent to what they saw. The words Ye Lang spoke abruptly changed the attitude of the people to the medicine he made.

"What I don't know yet is whether there are any sequelae, if she will turn back to what she looked like, or that maybe her body will mutate……"

"……" Complete silence again.

It seems that bravery was needed to transform yourself, especially for a method which hadn't been tested before.

"Well, we can only wait. Now, I just want to go home and sleep, so tired." Ye Lang yawned, the sleepiness was clear on his face.

"……"

Just like this, Ye Lang lightly explained this matter. His own role in what follows was very low. In addition to not wanting to explain, there was also another important factor. Which is that he used several medicines he learnt from the martial arts treasury, so

even if he wanted to explain it, it would be very difficult for him to do so.

And if it is just for the pills, he can use alchemy as a pretext. As he said before that it was created by coincidence, no one would doubt this. Because alchemy is such an amazing ability, that whatever unbelievable pills were made, people would tend to trust them.

But this time, what Ye Lang used was not just a simple therapeutic pill, for the previous Zhen Xiao Yan was too obese, the changes required were quite big.

Thus, Ye Lang used another technique for the transformation of Xiao Yan. The most magical Chinese technique, which is also what he was most proficient in, acupuncture.

He used acupuncture to change some Zhen Xiao Yan's body's functions. Her nutrition absorbtion from food was temporarily blocked, while her body was simultaneously burning fat.

With this method, she could become slimmer in such a short period.

However, this has very serious consequences, placing a heavy burden on the body, and possibly leaving unknown sequelae.

When Ye Lang said that there might be sequelae, he wasn't joking, merely stating a fact.

And this is from acupuncture alone, who knows what other conditions may occur.

So, Zhen Xiao Yan's body was now like beautiful but brittle glass, which may break from the slightest touch.

Did Ye Lang hide something this important from Xiao Yan? How else would she agree to such a thing?

Nope, all the possible consequences were explained to her at the beginning, when the treatment hadn't started yet.

Zhen Xiao Yan had the right to choose, she could've refused this approach, but she didn't, and her reaction was quite unexpected.

Ye Lang still remembers when he reminded her:

"Fatty, you have to consider it seriously. I can transform you into a stunning beauty. In the competition, you will be unsurmountable for the other competitors. But your beauty might be temporary, and I cannot predict the sequelae. It can make you realize your dream, but it can destroy your life at the same time. You may regret taking this treatment for the rest of your life. I believe you understand what I am saying right now, after all, you are also an alchemist."

Although Ye Lang's medical skills and alchemy were totally different, but in alchemy there were many medicines, many of

which leave horrifying sequelae. This is known by everyone, especially Zhen Xiao Yan, who is also an alchemist.

Zhen Xiao Yan smiled softly and said with a calm and steady voice: “I understand, and I won’t regret it!”

At that that, Ye Lang gave her many different choices, some of which would not harm her body and would still be worthwhile, but she choose the most risky and painful option, which would give her the most chance.

Because only this way would she feel that she won with her own efforts. For Ye Lang’s other methods would have worked one way or another, but only this method would be her own true effort, no tricks.

She wanted her love to be true,

Without any deceit.

She wanted her love to be pure,

Without the least bit of flaw.

This is a lot of girls’ dream too. For this purpose, they would do some stupid things without any regrets, just like the Zhen Xiao Yan now.

She is not the first girl in love to something stupid, nor will she be the last one to do so.

Of course, she also knows that this is the most difficult and painful method, and will bring her a lot of pain. It may cause something irreparable to happen, but she will still do it without a second thought.

Even if only for a moment, she still wanted to obtain this fraction of happiness, even if the price is a lot of misery.

This may make people feel silly, but she has no regrets.

Ye Lang could only shake his head and sigh, “Silly, woman!”

Ye Lang was about to leave. His intention was noticed by Zhen Xiao Yan, who was staring at Mo Ya just now. It seems that she was concerned about Ye Lang leaving at this ambiguous time.

“Ye Lang, where are you going?” Leaving behind Mo Ya, Zhen Xiao Yan shouted and ran towards Ye Lang.

This situation surprised everyone for a moment.

Zhen Xiaoyan, what are you dong? Why do you disregard your Mo Ya and go to Ye Lang?

You should now mind your own things, fall in love, embrace Mo

Ya.

Why do you care where that prodigal son goes to.

In the end, who are you more concerned with? Your lover? Or Ye Lang?

Chapter 60 – Behind The Miracle (3)

Ye Lang obviously did not think too much about the previous issues, but replied very casually: “I’m going home to sleep. You go and spend some time with your Mo Ya. After that, come to my house. Pay attention to your body, if there’s something wrong, come immediately to me.

Go to your house? What do you mean? You want to make Zhen Xiao Yan live with you? Haven’t you had enough of being together for the past twenty days?

Oh? Are you saying the reason why he’s helping her is to live together with her?

Different suspicions appeared in many people’s brains from Ye Lang’s words, promptly ignoring his last sentence.

“I understand. What do you want to eat tomorrow?” Zhen Xiao Yan nodded her head. She knew what Ye Lang meant. Ye Lang was worried about any side effects, he needed to stay with her for observation, and to take proper measures in case of if something wrong happens.

Ye Lang shook his head: “No, I don’t need anything to eat, I want to sleep for a few days. Don’t bother me. Date with your boyfriend for some days. And remember to take your medicine regularly. Do not forget it!”

“I understand. I know you have put in a lot of effort the past 20

days, but you just didn't want to let us know." Said Zhen Xiao Yan gently as she looked at Ye Lang.

How could she not know the price Ye Lang paid for transforming her to such a cute young girl. How could that be easy?

For instance, the potions Zhen Xiao Yan needed everyday for her bath needed to be prepared differently every day, since her body changed from day to day.

Then there are the medicines and other things, which needed to be prepared in advance in order to keep up with the changes and progress of Zhen Xiao Yan. Ye Lang would generally prepare them at night. Because in the day, he needed to observe Zhen Xiao Yan to prevent accidents.

So, for more than 20 days, he almost did not rest properly, and he didn't want to let Zhen Xiao Yan know of this, afraid that it might affect her progress. Naturally, he would not let Liu Fei Yan and the others know either.

Because of this, the world only knew of Zhen Xiao Yan's perseverance. Only knew that for more than 20 days, Zhen Xiao Yan withstood inhuman suffering. But no one knew what Ye Lang went through these past 20 days, except for Zhen Xiao Yan.

"Who says I suffered for you? I didn't, I was very relaxed every day." Ye Lang said so with a chuckle, he didn't want to get too much into it, since it was already in the past.

“I knew you would say that. Anyways, you go and rest.” Zhen Xiao Yan did not say anything more. For some things, as long you appreciated them in your mind, they did not need to be spoken.

After Ye Lang had left, Zhen Xiao Yan really won the competition without incidents. No one dared to cheat.

It wasn’t just because of Ye Lang. It was more so because of the emperor. Remember, the emperor bet on the victory of Zhen Xiao Yan, and he didn’t dare to leave, lest she lose because of that.

Even if Zhen Xiao Yan wasn’t that talented, she would’ve still won.

Of course, Zhen Xiao Yan’s performance was much better than any other competitor. No doubt that Zhen Xiao Yan deserved the reputation of first belle.

Zhen Xiao Yan left the stage with Mo Ya, no one knows where they went, and not everyone wanted to know, for they didn’t want to interrupt this moment as it belonged to just them.

……

There was a small scene in Zhen Xiao Yan’s home.

“Xiao Yan, is it really you?” Zhen Xiao Yan’s mother walked around Zhen Xiao Yan, carefully observing the changes in her daughter who she can barely recognize.

As a mother who is familiar with her daughter, she has more reasons to doubt that the person in front of her is fake, because she knew and understood the most about Zhen Xiao Yan.

It really is like what Ye Lang said:

“Even your mother won’t recognize you!”

“Of course, mom, it’s me! Aren’t I pretty?” Zhen Xiao Yan pulled her mother’s hand, smiling.

“Yeah, you are pretty. But are you really my fat and cute little Yan, my daughter?” Her mother touched her cheek softly, not believing that this smooth cut-like-a-jade little face was that once round and fat face.

“Heh, of course. I am your fat little Yan, but I’m not fat anyore, maybe I might become fat again later, but who knows.” Zhen Xiao Yan spoke while giggling. According to Ye Lang, she might only stay like this for a small period of time.

“This is uncredible, unbelievable.”

“Incredible right? Can’t believe your daughter would become like this. It’s just like a dream. I’m also afraid that this is just a dream, but even if it is a dream, I’m still satisfied.” Zhen Xiao Yan spoke with a smile.

“……” Her mother didn’t say anything, but only looked at Zhen Xiao Yan with a puzzled look.

“Mom, do you remember, when I was still a child, I was hungry and I ate mud as a snack….” Zhen Xiao Yan began to reveal some of her private stories. But the answer she received was:

“Everyone knows about this. Besides, it wasn’t just once or twice…”

“…… Do you remember, I stuck in the bathtub once?” This was one of her embarrassing moments that only a few people knew. At that time, her bathtub was broken, so she used her previous bathtub to take a shower. The problem was, the bathtub was used when she was still little, as a result, it was too small for her now. As expected, she got stuck in the bathtub.

“About this, although not many people know, but if one inquired about you, they would also know. Only you don’t know that this matter was spread.

“What! You… Fine! Then, is the matter about the birthmark on my chest also revealed by you?” Zhen Xiao Yan spoke in anger and shame. After she was finished, her face flushed red.

“No, only you and me know about this…. Little Yan, are you really little Yan!” Her mother seemed to have confirmed it now, she embraced Xiao Yan and spoke excitedly.

“Of course! Mom, how can you not recognize your own daughter. Hmph.

And don’t embrace me so tightly, I can’t breathe…” Said Zhen Xiao Yan while struggling.

Zhen Xiao Yan would be embraced by her mother like this before, with similar strength. She could bear the tight embrace in past, but she couldn’t now.

“Oh, you became so delicate now. You can’t blame me. You changed so much, even a mother wouldn’t be able to recognize you!”

“Hahah.”

“Quickly, tell me, how did you do it? Tell your mother the secret. Your mother wants to lose want to lose weight too, become beautiful and young. Come on!”

No woman could resist this temptation, especially a woman at the age of Zhen Xiao Yan’s mother.

Chapter 61 – Dreams (1)

Zhen Xiaoyan shook her head, saying: “Don’t ask me about that, I only followed Ye Lang’s instructions. I ate whatever he gave me, and I did whatever he instructed. Oh yes, mother, I have to stay at his house for a period of time after a few days. He has given me a vacation during these few days, and I intend to spend it with you all.”

“You want to stay at his house? Didn’t you like Mo Ya? Daughter, who do you really like? Mo Ya’s character is good, the strength of his ability and insight is all really not bad. Thirteenth young master of the Ye Family is really a no no, he is an attributeless person, but him being the Thirteenth young master of the Ye family, this can make up for his weaknesses, it’s okay if you want to choose him…” Mother’s mouth was like a machine gun, shooting off endlessly.

“….. Mother, I am only going to Ye Lang’s home because my condition still has to be monitored. If there are any harmful side effects to the drugs, I can be treated as soon as possible.” Zhen Xiaoyan had finally found a chance to interrupt her mother’s chatter.

“So that’s it. Then why do you still want to wait for a few days, wouldn’t it be much better if u went right now.” Her mother worriedly said.

“These few days… I… I want to… have a date with Mo Ya…” As Zhen Xiaoyan spoke, her face grew redder, and her voice had become small, really small.

“Oh... So it was because of this...” Her mother smirked whilst speaking.

“Humph! If a person has already spent so much effort for this day, and endured so much pain, wouldn’t even a single date be okay?” Zhen Xiaoyan slightly trudged, lightly jogging towards inside.

“Xiao Yan, do not run, I didn’t say that you couldn’t. This is your first date, do you want your old mother to teach you a few tricks?”

“I don’t, I don’t...”

.....

“Mother, does the birthmark on my chest look like a phoenix now?” Zhen Xiaoyan stared at her own chest, asking in disbelief.

“Hmm, you were too fat before to see anything, but it is pretty clear now, it looks like a flying phoenix!”

“I also said so, but that idiot,Ye Lang, had said that it looked like a big fat chicken, and even said it looked ugly...” Zhen Xiaoyan said, as if talking to herself.

“That’s because he is stupid, he doesn’t have good eyes... Wait, how did he know about this, you...?”

“Ah, what, I don’t know about anything, don’t ask me… “

“……”

During those days and nights together, the interactions between them during that period included her soaking in the medical tub in her bare naked body everyday. There was once she unintentionally got shocked by something, and stood up, exposing everything.

Yet a certain idiot, had no reaction or whatsoever at that moment, only observing carefully for a while, and said that her progress was not bad, her body and skin was better than expected.

Apparently up until now, this idiot still didn’t react. What was this kind of situation!

……

In any case, concerning Zhen Xiaoyan’s identity, after this had happened over and over again, there wasn’t anyone who had any suspicion, actually they themselves had also believed it, only because of Ye Lang’s words had a hint of tyranny, thus his words was the best evidence!

This may also seem strange, that the absolute majority had felt that since he was so sure, then it would never be fake. This was a type of unfathomable mystery of trust.

As for Ye Lang himself, after creating this miracle, he had disappeared once again from everyone's sight. Perhaps everyone was accustomed to this, so they had quickly put him in the back of their minds, awaiting for his next appearance.

It wasn't that no one had searched for Ye Lang, this had sparked curiosity in everyone's minds, but Ye Lang had started to sleep for a few days, and then, with an excuse of needing to nurse himself, he asked for a month's worth of sick leave. Naturally no one could contact him.

And after a month, everyone had basically figured out this matter, and had no reason to ask again, only other "small business" that needed Ye Lang's help, and of course it was "a small minority" of people.

During this month, Zhen Xiaoyan had of course not followed Ye Lang's action of not going out. She woke up in the morning to prepare a huge course to eat, and it obviously was meant for her to eat most of it, leaving a small portion for Ye Lang.

Then, Ye Lang would wake up to feel her pulse, examine her body for a while, decide whether to give her some medicine afterwards, and also acupuncture and moxibustion.

Following that, she then went to class. She would head for Ye Lang's small courtyard after she was released from school, and let Ye lang check her body for a while, and prepare something to eat afterwards.

But of course, if she needed to go for a date in the middle of it, she would just push back this whole entire course!

If you want to state their relationship, it's very simple. Firstly they were of course friends, secondly, a patient and doctor relationship. Apart from this, they didn't have any impure relationship, at least for now.

But of course, it wasn't so simple in the eyes of others, there were many people who had suspicions of the relationship between those two!

Ye Lang had of course never cared about other people's opinions, he only did his business, like confirming Zhen Xiaoyan's body condition, confirming what were her side-effects.

What is it?

"Fatty, after a month of observations, many carefully deliberations, and already a brazen assumption, also..."

"??" Zhen Xiaoyan confusely dazed at Ye Lang while he was talking, understanding absolutely nothing what he had just said, but she didn't make any sound to interrupt him, afraid of saying something wrong.

After saying a heap of presage, and the process of how he proved it, Ye Lang finally solemnly said, "I am determined, that you have a very serious side-effect!"

Zhen Xiaoyan was not scared, but rather she smiled and said, ”Just tell me, I’ve already prepared myself. This period of a month has been more than enough…”

That’s right, it exceeded her expectation by a huge margin. She originally had only wanted a small period, it was enough so long as she had a date with Mo Ya, and yet it had already been a month. Even if she didn’t have 10 dates with him, she already had 8.

But, did this dating truly make her happy?

Perhaps it will. At least on the surface she was happy, but she didn’t even know, what was this happiness. Was it that she finally could be with her beloved one, or was it that she finally achieved her long desired dream!

Maybe precisely because of this, even if she changed back to her original state as a result, she wouldn’t be afraid, and wouldn’t feel it was a pity, because she had it all before!

“Well then, I’ll just say that, your side-effect is— indigestion. Due to this degree of confinement of your digestive system, it left irreversible damage, and your digestive ability will not be like a normal person’s.” Ye Lang said while looked at Zhen Xiaoyan, slightly knitting his brows.

Zhen Xiaoyan was blank for a while, and she couldn’t figure out what the side-effect was, so she opened her mouth to ask, “Will I return to my original state? Will my skin become black and ugly?”

“No, it will be hard to get fat from now on, even if you want to!” Ye Lang shook his head while speaking.

“Yeah! That’s great, I won’t return to my original state!” Zhen Xiaoyan had of course cheered excitedly, only after that she then thought about other things—

Chapter 62 – Dreams (2)

“Erm, Ye Lang, what did you mean ‘from now on’? What do you mean ‘even if I want to get fat’?”

“Because your ability to absorb has been reduced to a portion of the norm, you have to eat ten times the amount of food in order to maintain your current weight. Only if you exceed this amount, will you get fat!”

“Haha, that’s great, I will not get fat later, and I will also be able to eat to my heart’s content!!” To Zhen Xiaoyan, this was absolutely great news.

“The problem lies in the fact that if you ate any less, you will become slimmer day by day, and also, it will cause you to faint, and also……never mind. Even if I told you this, you won’t understand it. In conclusion, it’s very troublesome. But it’s okay, it can be slowly adjusted, after 3 to 4 years, it will be possible to recover to about a normal person’s digestive system. That should probably be enough.” Ye Lang spoke whilst looking at the smiling Zhen Xiaoyan, and was frowning his brows because he realized Zhen Xiaoyan was smiling oddly.

“…You dead fatty, don’t even think of asking me. That’s right, I have the medicine to help you maintain your body, but those are very expensive!” Ye Lang looked at Zhen Xiaoyan’s smiling face. It seemed like there was no other way.

“It’s better if it’s expensive. Don’t you like being prodigal?” Zhen

Xiaoyan laughingly said.

“That’s true, then that’ll be it! If you compare yourself to your previous body, which was filled with fat, you’re better off like this.” Ye Lang waived his hand, and threw this matter aside.

Actually, even if he didn’t adjust Zhen Xiaoyan’s body, it would still slowly heal itself. But after this, no matter how much Zhen Xiaoyan ateate, even if it exceeded the past records, she wouldn’t gain any weight, maintaining her current figure at all times.

But although it was very strange, no one appeared to care. So was there a need to be concerned with it?

“Well, there’s nothing else, you can go home now. You do not need to stay here in the future.” After Ye Lang had arrived at this conclusion, he said a very realistic sentence.

Since there was no real need for observation, why would Zhen Xiaoyan still be here. They weren’t really cohabiting, either. It was only for an extraordinary period, under an extraordinary situation. Once the extraordinary matter had passed, the situation had also disappeared .

“...you didn’t have to say it so directly, you’re really a fool that doesn’t understand my mood.” Zhen Xiaoyan became dazed for a moment, and then she spoke in a grouchy manner.

“What mood? Forget it, I’m too lazy to chat about this hideous

mess. Remember that you have to prepare some good food for me tomorrow, I need to return to school after the vacation. And also, you have to pay attention to carry food with you at all times, don't forget to eat. If you really faint on the broad streets, no one will take care of you."

"Understood." Zhen Xiaoyan replied, and also said with a soft mutter—

If I fainted in the broad streets, no one would have bothered before, but it's different since I'm now a beauty. You're the only idiot that says that I didn't change, and also calls me a fatty the whole day!

However, I like the way you call me. Because I'll know that, no matter how I look, you'd give me the same type of treatment!

"Then why aren't you walking away faster, I don't have time to talk with you!"

"....."

So it's like this. You wouldn't treat me better just because I have become beautiful, and when the moment's right, you'd throw me away, not hesitating at all...

Perhaps this is a true friend, one that doesn't care about your outer appearance...

So, Zhen Xiaoyan said goodbye to Ye Lang with a smile on her face, and on her journey home, she thought of what to cook for Ye Lang the next day. Then she thought of the strange progress with her boyfriend, Mo Ya!

After Ye Lang had shooed...no, sent Zhen Xiaoyan away, he talked with Ye Lan Yu for half of the day. After that, he had his dinner, and went to sleep.

“I’m going to sleep, who knows whether I’ll meet that woman. Today I must clarify who she is!”

Who was the woman Ye Lang was talking about? He himself didn’t know.

Nonsense, if he knew who she was, he wouldn’t be saying that wil find out today.

He never told anyone about her, because this was too extraordinary, and he had a hard time exlaining it.

However, because it was a dream, a place that perpetuated, the mystery couldn’t be broken!

Maybe, this was just a dream, or possibly, there were some other reasons.

After Ye Lang had entered the dream world, he arrived at a beautiful flowerbed. And at the middle of the flowerbed plateau,

there was a hidden, little clear lake!

There he saw a maiden dressed in white, standing beside the little lake, both feet placed in the icy water. But of course, this sensation was only felt in the mind, and whether it really existed was unknown.

“You’ve come?” The maiden said, looking at the lake’s surface. She wasn’t afraid of her voice being too soft, because she knew that even if her voice was very soft, Ye Lang could hear her here.

“Mhm, I’ve come. Why does the location change whenever we meet? Yesterday was a beach, and today it changed into a flowerbed.” Ye Lang moved beside the girl, and sat naturally at her side.

Although they only met each other in their dreams, this dream had persistently occurred for a few years already, and both parties were very familiar with each other.

“Isn’t that fine? If this was the only place, it’d be so boring. We would definitely get tired of it.” The maiden gently said, whilst her pair of fair and translucent legs rippled the surface of the lake.

Ye Lang casually replied, “I don’t think so, there’s hardly any difference for me. And also, I would think that you have nothing better to do if you changed the location every single time. Can’t you just make a garden pavilion, so that we can drink tea while we chat?”

“Oh, then I’ll make a garden pavilion for you next time, what kind do you like?” The young girl softly asked.

“I’d like a small bridge with running water, a rockery pond, a bonsai garden, melodious birdsongs entwined with a crisp floral aroma…”, Ye Lang casually said all his likes, whilst the maiden noted down quietly, thinking of how she would be able to design a garden pavilion that would satisfy Ye Lang and her.

Following that, she began to talk with Ye Lang about the details of the garden pavilion, and then they talked about other topics. It could be said that astronomy and geography had a lot to be talked about.

The weird thing was that the two had not talked over the details of their identities. Who knew whether there was any bit of information, it just seemed like the conversation Ye Lang had had before went in and out of the ears.

“Woman, I didn’t know that you actually know about everything. Who are you really?” Ye Lang casually asked. But after he said this sentence, his face immediately changed. It seemed that he was waiting for something, and it seemed that he was feeling helpless.

“I…” The girl wanted to speak, but—

Instantly, the scene suddenly disappeared…

Chapter 63 – Dreams (3)

“Shit, it’s like this every time, I wake up the second it reaches this topic, even if it is a minor detail, it also can’t be asked!” Ye Lang awoke from his dream and cursed, this wasn’t the first time he had such a tirade.

After that he…

He obviously continued sleeping, but this time, he did not see the maiden again, and it was only a night devoid of dreams until daylight.

This situation had persisted for around 3 years. At first, he didn’t care, it was only having idle chats with a maiden, and he just treated it as a dream!

At that time, he had still thought that the maiden was an incarnation of Tigress. Coincidentally, the dreams came right after Tigress left. So, they probably only appeared on the nights when he was missing her!

But later on, he had understood that wasn’t her. After every time he awoke, he couldn’t remember how the maiden looked like, it was like this even til today, this was also the reason why he couldn’t figure out the meaning of these dreams, unable to confirm whether the maiden was a real person.

However, he could confirm that she wasn’t Tigress, because he understood Tigress quite well, and he couldn’t find any similarities

between them, so this notion was quickly rejected by him.

Although he forgot the maiden's distinct traits of her appearance whenever he woke up, but every time he entered into the dream environment, he could easily recognize that maiden, clearly remembering the maiden's appearance, and it was this what made him find this odd.

However, focusing on the moments where things get a little odd, Ye Lang would start thinking about strategies to investigate any information about the maiden's identity, but the problem is that whenever the maiden wanted to reply, the dream environment would always be abruptly cut off.

Even if it was a miniscule information obtained by beating around the bush, it would also make the dream environment be cut off, and this situation was awfully like the procedure of adding another safety lock, and you couldn't pass the limit of this safety lock even by a little, if not, you would break the procedure.

Under such helplessness, Ye Lang could only let nature take its course, and he would always talk with that maiden about matters around the world, not caring about the maiden's identity anymore.

In reality, he also had no other options, unless he didn't sleep, otherwise he would definitely meet the maiden again, but of course, he could also inquire the other party's identify to cut off the dream environment, followed by a night devoid of dreams.

However, he did not do it this way oftenly, he liked chatting with

the maiden in the midst of the dream environment, and when he was tired, he would go and sleep...

That's right, sleep in the dream environment, you could also sleep as per normal, but only he supposingly could do it!

In a similar fashion, whenever the maiden asked about Ye Lang's identity, it would also cause the dream to be cut off, it was as if this dream brought these two people together, but it didn't allow them to get any information concerning the opposite party.

Of course, concerning the issue whether this maiden is actually real or not, no, to be say accurately, whether the existence of the maiden is real or not, it was still a mystery.

Because this situation was too strange, Ye Lang had never talked to anyone about this, this dream and the maiden in the midst of this dream, only he himself knew about them.

Perhaps, this was a special type of soul connection. Two people from 2 different places, even from different times and space, united together, meeting in their dreams!

Perhaps, this maiden was merely a maiden in the dream environment, and she had hidden techniques, which manifested as a fairy within the dream.

No matter what it was, after awakening from the dreams, Ye Lang needed to do his own things, and had thrown this problem at

the back of his head momentarily, treating it purely as a dream!

When would this dream be deciphered? That, only God knows!

Maybe it would be resolved soon, maybe, even after a lifetime it still wouldn't be deciphered……

The second day, Ye Lan Yu dragged Ye Lang in the morning to go to the academy together, as per normal.

There weren't only two people that were going to the academy as per normal, there were other people as well, and seeing Ye Lang arrive everything was as usual, as if nothing had happened.

This was certainly not because someone had ordered all lips to be sealed or any of that sort, but it was that people were used to it, accustomed to Ye Lang's grand short appearance, and immediate disappearance after that.

In the midst of the classroom, it was still the usual noisiness…

"Ye Lang?!" When Ye Lang had appeared in the classroom, everyone froze all their actions, dazed for a moment, of course it was only for a moment!

"Student Ye Lang, welcome back……"

Quickly, a few of the faster reacting girls had rushed forward,

extremely enthusiastic with Ye Lang, to the point it was unbearable, and this completely different as compared to before.

"Wah, thanks!" Ye Lang had politely nodded and said his thanks, completely oblivious to the girls' common request.

As Ye Lang's classmate, they were naturally different from others. They wouldn't pretend that nothing happened, they would always gossip a bit, and even talk with Ye Lang for a while, especially similar to this situation.

Zhen Xiaoyan had a sudden drastic change, and transformed into such a beauty, this made them want to curry some favor with Ye Lang, of course, many had this idea.

If Ye Lang hadn't left for his house stayed inside, then he would have "drowned" in the tides of vain women!

Now the craze had somewhat receded, added by the fact that everyone knew about Zhen Xiaoyan's metamorphose method, it had already made the majority retreat, leaving only a small bunch still holding other wishes, but amongst this bunch of people, those that could have contact with Ye Lang was extremely small, and it didn't really create any problems for Ye Lang.

After Ye Lang had entered the lecture room, he had walked straight to Zhen Xiaoyan's side, and sat down at that empty seat that seemed out of place.

Why was it out of place? Simple, the surrounding area was full of people, and it was crowded. Under this situation, there was exactly one empty seat, thus it naturally appeared out of place.

And the reason that caused the overcrowding was naturally because of Zhen Xiaoyan. The current Zhen Xiaoyan was not like before. Previously, she didn't have many people around her, it was generally her good friends, and there was still Ye Lang, who wanted to find a quiet place.

Currently Zhen Xiaoyan was loved by all, needless to say, men too. Even women had ulterior motives for getting close to her!

Zhen Xiaoyan, concerning this situation, was exactly the same as before. She didn't act arrogant and she didn't despise any of these people, not reacting to any abuse or favouritism in popularity was her good point, and this was also Ye Lang's favorite trait of her.

This empty spot was actually not here before, it only appeared today, because she knew Ye Lang would come to the academy today, she would naturally leave a good seat for him, and the seat beside her was the best one.

At the start, there were some people who were weirded out by this point, as she had not explained to anyone that it was meant for Ye Lang, just thinking about it made her blush.

Naturally, because of this, she had become even more dainty, pretty and cute!

Now everyone understood, so this empty spot was meant for him...

Chapter 64 – I Object (1)

After Ye Lang sat down, he stretched out his hands at the same time that Zhen Xiaoyan stretched out her hand and placed it on the table in front of him.

At first, no one paid attention to this movement. Then, the two's hands had touched each other, as Ye Lang held Zhen Xiaoyan's wrist in an odd manner that no one had seen before. That was called—

Pulse reading!

The two were already used to this. In fact, Ye Lang would always feel Zhen Xiaoyan's pulse every morning, whilst Zhen Xiaoyan was accustomed to letting Ye Lang read her pulse. Therefore without speaking, the two had matched each other with tacit understanding.

However, this method called pulse reading didn't exist in this world yet. Thus, in the eyes of others, they were holding their hands in an odd manner. To them, this was definitely a display of close intimacy!

So the rumor was true, Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan's relations were indeed dubious, Mo Ya is so pitiful, isn't this clearly not giving him any face?

This situation gained even more heat.....

“Erm student Ye Lang, you were able to make Zhen Xiaoyan so beautiful. Could you make us more beautiful as well? But don’t use the method you used on her, we won’t be able to tolerate it, but we can tolerate a certain level of pain though.” The young girls encircled Ye Lang, their eyes glimmering, with a look of expectation, as they directly ignored Ye Lang’s and Zhen Xiaoyan’s ‘close intimacy’.

Will he agree? The young girls had all thought about the answer to this question before. Looking at past experience, they all knew that Ye Lang was a person that completely disregarded others.

In this instance, if it wasn’t Zhen Xiaoyan, but one of the other young girls, even if Sha Lan had stepped until the critical point, he would not have cared.

So, they all thought if they wanted to make Ye Lang agree, while difficult, there was still a chance, because Ye Lang wasn’t a disagreeable person, the conditions have to be right for it to be work.

But, they had never thought that Ye Lang would unexpectedly……

“Okay!” Ye Lang had nodded his head just like that, dropping the bombshell whilst agreeing so easily.

“Ah?! You’ve agreed?” The young girls asked blankly, even having a bit of an incredulous tone.

“Yes, this doesn’t amount to anything, it only requires a little bit of effort, moreover, this also won’t trouble me.” Ye Lang said casually.

“?? What, it won’t trouble you at all?”

“Although I have agreed, I can’t help all of you, go and find Liu Feiyan. She can help you! Just say that I am the one who sent you and she will definitely help you all become prettier.” Ye Lang said indifferently, while still continuing to read the pulse.

In this school, the girls were all basically young and pretty, with figures that were enchantingly thin and graceful, after all, they were all elite nobility. People like Zhen Xiaoyan were rarely seen, thus, Ye Lang’s acupuncture, moxibustion and medicines was of no use to them.

“Let Liu Feiyan help us? We won’t be sent off that easily. Can’t you just help us?”

“……” Ye Lang didn’t reply, his facial expression serious as he inspected Zhen Xiaoyan’s condition and read her pulse with single-hearted devotion.

At this moment, Zhen Xiaoyan’s voice resounded, to explain in Ye Lang’s stead, “I’ve already said it to all of you, your figures are okay, thus you only require learning manners and how to dress up. Ye Lang doesn’t know about these, I learnt those from Liu Feiyan.”

Zhen Xiaoyan had actually sprinkled a very small lie in between her words, as the manners and the dressing up were actually created by Ye Lang, and not wholly established by Liu Feiyan.

Perhaps this was due to her knowing that Ye Lang didn't like to involve himself that deeply, or perhaps, it was just because she didn't want these girls to entangle with Ye Lang!

"Forget it, it's better if I ask others to help." The young girls decisively retreated.

This was one of the reasons why the majority did not find and ask Ye Lang for help, because he would tell them to get Liu Feiyan's help. But who was Liu Feiyan, she's from the Romantic Floor, a brothel girl, which of these noble ladies would be willing to learn from her?

Obviously, this was impossible!

"There isn't much of a problem, be more aware of oneself, and eat more things!" After a while, Ye Lang spoke out a sentence that was was not understandable for many.

Not talking about others for now, let's just say that he told Zhen Xiaoyan to eat more, this was a bit too superfluous, for after this incident, the amount Zhen Xiaoyan ate increased without letup, and this made people feel very weird.

Why was it weird? Using logic to explain, a young girl like Zhen Xiaoyan who had gone through and experienced such a torturous ordeal to obtain a beautiful figure would definitely know how to treasure her own body, and would absolutely not eat unreasonably.

There were some people who had asked Zhen Xiaoyan this question, and the answer they got was, I won't get fat no matter how much I eat, however, if I eat a little less then I will starve to death!

This answer had puzzled people even more, as Zhen Xiaoyan's explanation wasn't clear, and only Ye Lang knew about this situation, so everyone had become even more puzzled.

What made them even more puzzled was that despite Zhen Xiaoyan's method of eating, Ye Lang had actually thought that it wasn't enough and even wanted her to eat a little more……

Did she really have a secret to not getting fat? Was Ye Lang the one who gave it to her?

"Mhm! Oh yes, this is your lunch for today, you better not steal my portion as I didn't prepare a second portion… you… hmph!! I won't care about you anymore!" Zhen Xiaoyan realized that when she finished talking Ye Lang had already disappeared, because as she was talking, Ye Lang had already started eating.

"Oh? What did you just say?" Ye Lang ate the food, pretending as

if he didn't hear anything.

"Nothing! I didn't say anything!!" Zhen Xiaoyan shouted.

"Oh, then that must have been a fly just now……"

"……"

Looking at Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan, in the distance, Sha Lan's mouth curved up to express a smile, that definitely was not a envious smile, but a type of seemingly proud and seemingly abhoring peculiar smile that gave others a sinister feeling!

No one had noticed this, because almost everyone's attention was on focused on Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan.

Soon after, the teacher had come in and everyone also entered the room to attend the class, whilst the teacher's attitude towards Ye Lang's attendance was as usual, everything had progressed normally……

After class, it continued to be normal, everyone ate their lunch as usual, and Ye Lang had snatched Zhen Xiaoyan's lunch as per usual……

"Ye Lang, you bastard, I told you to not eat it all, but you still did, and now you are stealing my portion as well……" Zhen Xiaoyan wanted to snatch back her lunch, but it was swiftly hidden by Ye Lang.

“what’s the loss anyway if you eat a little less, I can eat until I’m full……oh……” A muffled sound, made obviously by Ye Lang stuffing his mouth.

To everyone it was a very common situation, a very ordinary situation. In fact, if it wasn’t like this, then it would have been outlandish!

These two would be like this everyday, while Zhen Xiaoyan would endlessly scold Ye Lang daily, but she would still prepare him the best lunch every single day!

Chapter 65 – I Refuse (2)

“Hmph! You sounded much better before, telling me to eat some more…” Zhen Xiaoyan felt warm and fuzzy inside when she saw Ye Lang eating. However, on the surface, she didn’t give Ye Lang any face.

“So you just need to cook even more! Don’t worry, if you can’t afford it, I’ll give you money. Ye Lang said.

“I don’t want your money! Who do you take me for…..” Zhen Xiaoyan immediately replied.

“My personal chef. Don’t forget, you’re supposed to cook for me until one of us dies. Don’t worry, for my own sake, I’ll support you financially for this whole lifetime!” Ye Lang gave a dull reply.

“You……”

Chef? Lifetime? Support you?

These keywords made the crowd dumbfounded. Could it be that the two’s relationship had already progressed so far? That wasn’t possible! If it was, then why would Ye Lang let Zhen Xiaoyan pursue Mo Ya?

God! Tell me! Just what exactly is going on?

The thoughts of the people on-site were muddled and chaotic. They were completely unable to make heads or tails of Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan's relationship!

But one thing was for certain, Mo Ya was definitely in a difficult position……

But the two people didn't care about how everyone else saw them. Instead, they just kept doing something that made everyone feel a bit envious, a bit speechless, and a bit puzzled.

"Fatty, do you still have anymore of this?" Ye Lang asked after eating.

"Here, take it all!" As always, Zhen Xiaoyan gave part of her portion to Ye Lang. Even though on the surface she said she wouldn't hand it over, and would snatch it back, whenever Ye Lang wanted more, she would always pass him her food.

"Hmph! Let's see how you fight with me over Mo Ya now. When I tell him about what the two of you are like, will he still want to be with you?" Sha Lan secretly thought to herself.

It wasn't just her that thought like this. Everyone else also felt that it would be difficult for Zhen Xiaoyan and Mo Ya to be together. That was because this wasn't something Ye Lang had only done for a single day. The only way to describe the situation was:

Rome wasn't built in a single day!

During this one month, towards Zhen Xiaoyan's attitude, Mo Ya first felt moved. Then, he started liking her. Afterwards, he fell madly in love. The two were practically inseparable, and brought about the envy of others. During this period of time, Sha Lan had no way to insert herself between the two!

Later, with the passing of time, something cropped up. Zhen Xiaoyan had a very serious problem. So serious that it affected the two's relationship.

Because of this problem, Mo Ya's heated love towards Zhen Xiaoyan slowly cooled down. And Sha Lan naturally weaseled her way between the two. In the end, she was spending more time with Mo Ya than Zhen Xiaoyan.

Just what problem did Zhen Xiaoyan have?

First, even though Zhen Xiaoyan was passionately in love with Mo Ya, she had never had any physical contact with Mo Ya. They had never held hands, let alone kissed or hugged. It wouldn't be a stretch to say she hadn't touched Mo Ya at all.

This could be considered the reservations of a girl. Even though everyone saw her get pulled along by the hand by Ye Lang when she made her stunning debut, those were special circumstances!

The biggest problem was yet to come. Whenever the two of them went out together, Zhen Xiaoyan would constantly bring up Ye Lang. Time and time again, she used Ye Lang as an excuse to leave. The reason she gave, was that she had to cook for him.

This type of situation would be unbearable for anyone. Even if you knew the other party was deeply in love with and completely loyal to you, you still wouldn't be able to stand it!

This was Zhen Xiaoyan's biggest problem. Unknowingly, she had placed Ye Lang above everyone else. Not even her own lover was as important as him!

Moreover, she could confirm that the emotions she had towards Ye Lang weren't anywhere near romantic love between a man and woman. Not one bit!

What she felt towards Ye Lang was friendship and gratitude!

Ye Lang practically gave her a new life. He had given her what she wanted most. Also, he was the person who understood her the best. Even though that was because everyone else barely understood her, it was still a fact that she couldn't deny!

Towards this kind of person, some would forget them, some would always remember them, and others would repay their kindness a hundred times over. She chose the third option. She placed Ye Lang as her utmost priority. No one would be able to shake that position of his!

It was this that had hindered her love life. But even more serious, was that she hadn't even noticed it!

At this time, someone suddenly burst into the room and rushed towards Ye Lang. Before Ye Lang noticed anything, Zhen Xiaoyan had already stopped the person.

The person that came was a girl wearing plain commoner clothing. Her entire body gave off the scent of austerity. It was out of place in the classroom which held a noble atmosphere. The girl was quite young, at most 14 years old.

"Are you deaf or something? I've already told you numerous times, there's no way he'll agree!" Apparently, Zhen Xiaoyan knew the little girl, and had talked to her many times.

"That's what you think. Who knows? Maybe you just don't want him to see me. Don't act as if he's yours! Don't you dare think of holding onto him and never letting go!!" Her voice was clear and melodious. At the same time, it carried a trace of anger, and also brought about a sense of maturity that didn't fit her age.

"What are you saying?! I just don't want him to be troubled by such trivial matters!!" Zhen Xiaoyan was angered as well. It was unclear whether her anger was because of the girl's words, or because Ye Lang was being disturbed.

"How is this a trivial matter? Besides, it benefits him too!" The little girl said.

“That’s exactly why he won’t agree……” Zhen Xiaoyan said helplessly. Those words made the little girl momentarily confused.

“I don’t care! Let me through right now!”

“No way!”

“You’re being too unreasonable and overbearing. It’s just a chat!”

“Not happening……”

As for the party they were discussing, Ye Lang, he was still eating. In front of everyone’s powerless eyes, he hadn’t noticed the people arguing over him right next to him.

“？？Fatty, what are you doing? Why are you blocking the path?” Ye Lang finally took notice of the situation. He pulled away Zhen Xiaoyan who was blocking his path.

“Hm? Who’s this little lady? Your little sister?”

“No……” Zhen Xiaoyan shook her head. When she was about to explain further, the little girl interrupted her.

“There’s no way I’d have such an emotionless elder sister. One

that isn't even willing to help with such a minor matter!" The little girl gave a slight pout and said with anger.

"Oh……" Ye Lang carelessly threw out an 'oh'. Then he stood up and walked out.

Regarding his behaviour, everyone clearly knew that he was going on another walk, then he'd lie down on a grass patch and take an afternoon nap, this was his habit.

The little girl was dumbfounded, she noticed that she was completely ignored, she suddenly felt, Ye Lang was just making polite conversation, even if she was Zhen Xiaoya's little sister, there was no guarantee that he would care about her, at most he'd just say hi.

Chapter 66 – I Reject (3)

“Wait for me!” The little girl would obviously not let Ye Lang leave, she had finally gotten a chance after much difficulty to talk with Ye Lang eye to eye.

For this chance, she had used quite a fair share of effort, but Ye Lang’s house’s main entrance was not easily accessible, and there was a time that she was blocked at the entrance, in the end, she had landed her gaze on Zhen Xiaoyan.

Everyone knew, that Zhen Xiaoyan had stayed with Ye Lang at that time, she was the only one that had contact with Ye Lang, and it was also easier to interact with her, the others, like Ye Lanyu, Princess Qi, etc…, they were the same class as Ye Lang, interacting with them had the same amount of difficulty.

Talking about the link between Zhen Xiaoyan and the girl, how should it be said… she should be considered as a long time friend of the family, they had often played together when they were young, but due to the girl being a bit more special, in these few years, the two had a lot of conversations.

And their long and close relationship was only because their two families had business transactions between them. Zhen’s family restaurant and even the stocks of the girl’s family.

And the Zhen family was somewhat different, it wasn’t that they were nobility, but the girl’s family were businessmen through and through!

Because of her family, the girl had entered the market since young, and when she was 10 years old, she already had full control over her family's business!

On the brink of a life and death struggle of the merchant family, it seemed like their fortune was large, but they were already pulling down the east wall to repair the west wall, and if there wasn't any turn for the better, it would be very difficult to push on. [A metaphor, the English equivalent is 'Rob Peter to pay Paul]

Because of this reason too, the girl's parents fell sick from overworking, and when she was only 10 years old, her parents died. As for her grandparents, it didn't need any elaboration. In addition, she didn't have any siblings, it was as her alone that was left within the family bloodline.

If it wasn't for this, how would it be possible for the family's business to be passed to a little girl to manage!

But coming back to the main point, after this girl had accepted managing the family's business, it actually had a hint of revival, but who knew whether it was just the final radiance of the setting sun.

So, she currently needed an opportunity urgently, one that could turn around her business, and Ye Lang was her opportunity!

She wanted to do business with Ye Lang!

So, she begged Zhen Xiaoyan to help her meet Ye Lang, or perhaps even help come to an agreement about this business, but after Zhen Xiaoyan knew her motive, she rejected her flat on, suggesting that she brainstorm about other solutions. This idea wouldn't work at all.

As for her business idea, she didn't feel that there would be any problems, this was a deal that would benefit both parties, no one would reject such an offer, and would at least listen before rejecting!

"Little girl, do you have a business proposal?" Ye Lang gently said and drooped his head, tenderly touching the girl's forehead.

"??" the girl looked at Ye Lang suspiciously, she had originally thought that Ye Lang would be hard to get along with, but it didn't seem so right now.

"Erm, just 30 seconds, I want to talk with you about some business." The girl said.

"Talk about business?" Ye Lang was nonplussed.

"Yes, I want to talk with you about business, you will have steady profits and you will not need to pay for losses, you don't need to come out the capital, and when we start earning, we will split it 50-50 , you only have to give a formulation....." The girl nodded her head, saying conditions that would make people urged to consider, she had absolute confidence in this, and believed Ye Lang would

definitely agree to it.

However—

“I reject!” Ye Lang bluntly replied.

“I knew that you would..... Wait! You rejected?” The little girl thought from the start that Ye Lang would agree, but she didn’t think that Ye Lang would unexpectedly reject.

“That’s right, little girl, I reject! You’re such a naive and romanticising little girl, you’re better off going home to play house, you’re not suited to do business.” Ye Lang tapped the girl’s head and prepared to walk past the girl’s side.

“I’m not a little girl anymore, I’ve been the master of the household for 3 years already. Playing house, I would like to play that kind of thing, but I can’t!” The girl was a bit sad when she said it, it was as if due to Ye Lang’s kindness, she had leaked a portion of her true feelings.

“Manage the household for 3 years? How old are you?” Ye Lang felt weird when asking how old she was.

“Thirteen years old.....”

“You became the master at 10 years old!? What about your

parents?”

“……” The girl became silent.

“Ye Lang, she’s the only one left, you’ll make her sad this way.” Zhen Xiaoyan softly explained in Ye Lang’s ear.

“Pitiful child…”

“I don’t need both of your sympathy! It’s enough if you discuss business seriously with me!” The girl insistently said.

“You think that I wasn’t serious? Then I’ll clarify with you again, I reject this business proposal!”

“Why? This only has benefits to your side, you’re not liable for anything, and when money is earned we can split it, why won’t you agree? Are you thinking of doing this business by yourself?”

“No, I won’t do this deal, neither will I work together with you.” Ye Lang said while shaking his head.

“Why? Is it due to the fact that the prescription can’t be mass-produced?”

“Prescription, I think you must want the prescription of the slimming medicine, this actually isn’t very difficult, and it definitely would be profitable.” Although the girl didn’t say it, Ye

Lang could guess that it was this, don't look at the times when he is as dull as a fish, but at when he is astute, then he is the most shrewd amongst others.

"Then why won't you do it?" The girl puzzledly asked.

"That will definitely make money, that's why I won't do it!" Ye Lang smiled while saying.

"??" The girl didn't understand what he meant at all.

"Don't understand? Didn't I tell you before, he's a prodigal son, once you let him throw away money, he will immediately agree, and if you left him profit, he wouldn't do it even if you killed him!!" Zhen Xiaoyan said, but this sentence was told to her before, only the girl didn't believe it.

Because the girl felt that, even if he's prodigal, he wouldn't reject money, this would allow him to throw away more money.

The girl believed it now, Ye Lang couldn't be reckoned with normal sense, he had actually rejected this money making deal which many would have accepted, and his reason for doing so was just due to him wanting to be prodigal!

After the girl was silent for a lengthy moment, and then probingly asked, "How about this, you'll give me money, all profits will be returned to me. This way you'll be able to be prodigal."

Zhen Xiaoyan pulled the girl, muffled her mouth, said in a flurry, “Ye Er, he is only prodigal, nothing more, it doesn’t mean that he would let himself be cheated. Even if he is willing, the Ye family wouldn’t agree, not even mentioning his sister and his fiancee, if you do this, you will end up dying horribly!”

“……” The girl became silent, not only just because she was muffled at her mouth, she was still thinking of her previous thinking, and she felt a bit scared.

That’s right, cheating Ye Lang, if it was harmless it would be okay, but if the situation flared and had serious consequences, and there were people who experienced it, it would result in not only losing everything, she would also suffer majorly.

Of course, Ye Lang had his own standards, and if it missed, he himself wouldn’t agree to it.

Chapter 67 – Jilted (1)

“You’re called Ye Er? What’s your surname?” Ye Lang smiled while asking.

“My surname is Zhu, Zhu Ye Er!” The girl replied.

“I can give you the prescription, and also provide the capital, but the funds have to be allocated to those deals that will have subpar profits, the more money is lost the better, it would be the best if it all was lost!” Ye Lang smiled while saying.

“……” The whole area became silent.

It was not only due to Ye Lang’s miraculous prodigal acts, but also Ye Lang’s unexpected act of helping this girl called Ye Er, usually he would be the one to not bother about others.

However it seemed that Ye Lang also liked helping people, especially when it comes to spending money, seeing this made people pity little Ye Er, him giving a helping hand was normal, but this also could fulfil his goal of being prodigal, and why would he not go with it?

“Why didn’t I think of this, this way, Ye Er’s business can be saved, and you’re able to be prodigal, it fits the bill perfectly!” Zhen Xiaoyan knocked her brain, saying with a dab of regret, regretting that she didn’t think of this earlier.

“……” Little Ye Er was dazed, quickly led by an elated smile printed on her face, “Ok, that’s a deal, can we now talk about the next details of the problem?”

Only if there are people willing to fill the deficit of those businesses would it be tantamount to investing capital into her, she would then not need to be frustrated over these businesses.

In these 3 years, she had already cut off quite a fair share of these businesses, leaving those that absolutely couldn’t be cut off. If she had enough money, she wouldn’t have cut off the previous businesses.

Why not trim away these profit losing businesses? It’s natural to lose money on some areas in business, and it’s also necessary, because once money is lost, there will be overall greater profits, and the larger the business is, the amount of these businesses would augment.

In reality, these businesses were often a symbol of strength. Many people wanted to catch these, but of course, they had to be able to make losses first.

“You don’t need to talk with me about the details, just do what you’ve said, just make losses at any necessary areas, you don’t need to be courteous toward me, and if it’s not enough, just go and find it, I want that! Also, another thing, you’re still young and you should make more friends around your age, money will always be there to earn!” Ye Lang touched Little Ye Er’s head, smiling and saying.

“But, I……”

“I’ll end my talk here, it’s your business if you want to listen.” Ye Lang gently said, although he had softened his heart to help Little Ye Er, but he had limits, and he wouldn’t force others to do his biddings.

“……” Little Ye Er stood there dazed, thinking about what Ye Lang had said.

This time, Ye Lang didn’t stop his steps because of this situation, he directly walked out the classroom, starting his leisure walk after lunch.

“Ye Lang, I didn’t know that you had a warm side to you….” Zhen Xiaoyan chased up, faintly smiling.

“I faked it!” Ye Lang instantaneously retorted.

“……”

No matter whether Ye Lang faked it or not, after this incident, Little Ye Er liked Ye Lang even more, of course, this affection was categorized under sibling love, she liked Ye Lang’s warm smile, letting her feel a warm solicitude.

And this warm smile, was always her moral support,

accompanying her together through any crisis!

So, even if Ye Lang threw away all his fortune, she would calculate Ye Lang's portion of profits from her business, every single deal, and this wasn't a small sum.

Even if Ye Lang denies this point in the end, not acknowledging that he has a share in her business, but in the end, it doesn't even matter whether it is or not.

Ye Lang doesn't care, neither does Little Ye Er!

At the same time, the thing that made Little Ye Er dumbfounded was, that after Ye Lang had invested, all those businesses that originally would suffer losses, unexpectedly had miraculously gained profit!

He's indeed worthy to be a godly prodigal son, a lucky chap that has been doted on by a goddess!

A patch of grass in the Royal Academy had a youngster lying on the grass taking a nap, and beside him laid a beautiful maiden, her pair of eyes gazed at the blue sky, blankly and quietly staring.

The aforementioned locale and feelings, who knew how many people this made envy, and made how many people feel a sense of warmth in their hearts.....

Only, this situation had upset one or two people's hearts, and their faces changed into a horrid colour!

This youngster and maiden were exactly Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan, and those who were agitated, were of course Prince Mo Ya and Sha Lan.

When Prince Mo Ya had arrived at Royal Academy, he had already heard of the rumors of Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan, and after Sha Lan brought him here, he was even more perturbed, and his face was getting uglier.

Yet, when Mo Ya and the other one of the pair arrived, he didn't initiate to break apart Ye Lang and the other one of the pair under this situation, the two still had maintained a lethargic and dazed attitude.

"Whoa whoa, our queen of flowers[note: it's nickname for a famous courtesan] stayed with Ye Lang, the Thirteenth young master again, it isn't enough through the night, even through the day they're joined together by the hips." Sha Lan maliciously said.

"I'm only with him during the day currently, I've already been rushed home by him." Zhen Xiaoyan didn't notice the hidden message, concerning this sentence, she wasn't really sure what it meant.

"So it's because of this, hence you want to accompany him, even forgetting to spend time with your boyfriend." Sha Lan continued

saying.

“Ah, Mo Ya, I’m so sorry, I’ll go and accompany you to eat now!” Zhen Xiaoyan anxiously said, afraid that Mo Ya would be angry.

“That’s not needed, you can just go and accompany him.” Mo Ya’s face turned black while saying this, although he could feel that Zhen Xiaoyan was concerned, but he felt that this didn’t have any use anymore.

“Oh, okay then, anyway you have Sha Lan accompanying you, I should look after Ye Lang.” Zhen Xiaoyan foolishly said, at this moment, she had still shockingly said these kinds of words, and even in this kind of tone.

“Mhmp!” Mo Ya turned around on his heel.

Following Mo Ya that was going away, Sha Lan’s heart was unquestionably happy, and if this continues, Mo Ya and Zhen Xiaoyan would be over.

“Who was talking just now?” Ye Lang opened his eyes, muddle-headedly asking.

“They’ve already gone, just continue sleeping.”

“Oh……”

A few days later, the relationship between Zhen Xiaoyan and Mo Ya had became colder, making Zhen Xiaoyan feel a little scared, and she still didn't understand where the problem lied.

So, she had requested urgent advice from Ye Lang……

"Ye Lang, Mo Ya recently started not liking me, yesterday he was together with Sha Lan the whole day, what should I do?"

"You two should find some romantic places to do some things, holding hands and adventuring or dancing, and eat a candle lit dinner together, followed by a passionate french kiss……" Ye Lang suggested.

"We only started recently, what about holding hands, that's too soon." Zhen Xiaoyan crinkled her brow.

"…… Miss, don't tell me that you didn't do any of these before?" Ye Lang asked with a mote of disbelief.

"Don't have!" Zhen Xiaoyan shook her head while saying so.

"Shit, then why did you still say that you had a date with him for the whole day yesterday, how did you guys even get to dating?" Ye Lang couldn't understand it at all.

Chapter 68 – Jilted (2)

“Dating is walking together, watching theatre, having a dinner. We’ve never held hands before, my mother told me that girls shouldn’t be so easy going.” Zhen Xiaoyan said.

“…… Oh please, how can you even put up a fight with Sha Lan like this, look at her, she glued herself completely to Mo Ya, fatty, this won’t work. How about making Mo Ya drunk at night…… , of course you’ll……kehehe……”

“Go and die!! Just be serious, how will I be able to win from Sha Lan, currently she has glued herself to Mo Ya and won’t let him go.” concerning this type of intimate skinship, Zhen Xiaoyan had an aversion to it in her heart, and the reason why that is was known only to her.

“If that’s the case, it will be difficult to find a solution to win against Sha Lan, you have to let him hold your hand at the least, if not, guys will like being with Sha Lan more.”

“Holding hands……. Okay then, I’ll just let him hold my hand!” Zhen Xiaoyan seemingly forced out this resolution.

“Solely doing this won’t be enough, you have to hug and kiss with him……” Ye Lang continued saying.

“No!!” Zhen Xiaoyan immediately shook her and and rejected it.

“Oh please, do you really like this guy or not, these kind of things are normal in a passionate love, I’m not asking you to devote your life to him.”

“No means no, I do indeed like him, but I can’t do this kind of thing unless he marries me!”

“You’re too old fashioned, I can’t help you if you’re like this, just find a solution by yourself!” Ye Lang stopped bothering about Zhen Xiaoyan, how would she ever succeed like this?

“If you don’t help me, I won’t make food for you!!”

“I’ll just snatch it……”

“You……”

……

“You two, don’t tell me the both of you don’t know where the problem lies at?” A close friend that stood at the side from the start to end spoke up, she was honestly helpless when it came to these two.

“What problem?” The two asked in unison.

“The problem is that you two are too intimate, Mo Ya would obviously feel uncomfortable!” The close friend said helplessly.

“……That could be the case. Fatty, move further away from me!” Ye Lang put a distance inbetween himself and Zhen Xiaoyan.

“Who wants to be near you, I can’t wait to go as far away as I can. You’re hindering my dating!!” Zhen Xiaoyan also started to distance herself.

“……You two……”

After this suggestion, the two had really separated, maintaining a certain distance, this had made Sha Lan feel very uneasy. This way, it might disperse Mo Ya’s misconception, after all, these two really had nothing going on.

During noon, although Ye Lang ate Zhen Xiaoyan’s cooking, but they weren’t together. Also, during his walks and naps, Zhen Xiaoyan was not accompanying him anymore.

Although they had started to avoid arousing suspicion, but the situation hadn’t taken any turn, only because there was a women in the middle still.

“They definitely have something going on, it’s definitely something that has let you down, that’s why they’ve separated!” Sha Lan said this to Mo Ya, twisting the facts, and thus the solution wasn’t effective.

“Later I’ll clearly distinguish the lines between our boundaries!”

Mo Ya furrowed his brows, he had reached the critical point.

……

“Why? Why must we break up?” Zhen Xiaoyan looked at Mo Ya, her two eyes started to tear up. Girls easily cry when they are hurt, and she honestly liked Mo Ya.

If there wasn’t this misunderstanding, they would definitely have been together.

“Why? Ask yourself, you’re more concerned about Ye Lang than your boyfriend, everyday you would be with Ye Lang, did you ever think about my feelings?” Mo Ya couldn’t tolerate it anymore.

“I didn’t know….. Why didn’t you tell me, if you had said it, I would have maintained a fixed distance from Ye Lang! I’ve already maintained a distance from him, can we not break up?” Zhen Xiaoyan trickled tears when saying.

“……” Mo Ya was silent, only because he had just realized an issue, a issue pertaining to himself.

Actually the reason the two had reached this stage was not solely Zhen Xiaoyan’s fault, Mo Ya was also at fault, as he always kept all his feelings inside and didn’t stop Zhen Xiaoyan from being together with Ye Lang.

In actuality, had he opened his mouth, Zhen Xiaoyan would

definitely have noticed this problem and corrected it, although she would be anxious and care about Ye Lang as per usual, but it wouldn't be this obvious.

Perhaps, this was a mistake from the start, one who did it because she was confused by love, the other who did it because he was moved, thus reaching this point.

Once the mistake started, and with the two people that didn't even know how to resolve the problem, this ending was expected, more so due to the fact that there was a women exacerbating it in the middle—

"So what if he told you, you've already cohabited with Ye Lang for a few months already, you guys are just toying with Mo Ya!" Sha Lan was afraid that Mo Ya would soften his heart, so she immediately rebutted, furthermore asking:-

"Do you dare to guarantee that you will never meet with Ye Lang, and sever all your connections with him completely?"

"No! Ye Lang is my best friend. Under no circumstances will I ever break my relationship with him!" Zhen Xiaoyan said without the slightest hesitation, even if this sentence would cause her to lose her loved one, she would still do it, as she wasn't willing to give up this type of friendship she had with Ye Lang.

"Conversely, if for Ye Lang, you needed to break your relationship with Mo Ya, what would you do then?" Sha Lan craftily asked.

“This……” Zhen Xiaoyan wavered.

This situation had clearly told others one thing, that Ye Lang was more important than Mo Ya!

“Just end this right here, let’s go!” Mo Ya didn’t want to continue talking, so he hurriedly dragged Sha Lan to leave.

Zhen Xiaoyan gazed at Mo Ya’s leaving figure, standing there with a deadpan face, her tears unintentionally poured out, these tears were in remembrance of her first passionate love……

The crying Zhen Xiaoyan’s head blanked out momentarily, and when she had recovered her consciousness, she had realized that she had arrived at a grass field, and Ye Lang was laying right there, sleeping.

So, she sat beside Ye Lang in her current condition, hugging both of her knees, and continued crying. She still hadn’t calmed down yet……

“What happened? Why are you crying?” Ye Lang awakened and saw that Zhen Xiaoyan was crying, he immediately asked her.

“Ye Lang…… I’ve been jilted!” Zhen Xiaoyan cried while saying.

“Oh, you’ve broken up, would you then want me to lend you my

shoulder? I'll say it first, you're not allowed to wipe your mucus on me!" Ye Lang reluctantly lent his shoulder.

"You bastard, bastard, bastard..." Zhen Xiaoyan hit Ye Lang, as she was hitting, she leaned against his shoulder, crying.

"Stop crying! You're so pretty, it's his loss!" Ye Lang gently coaxed.

Zhen Xiaoyan continued crying……

"There's many more fish in the sea. When the moment comes, I'll introduce you to a handsome chap which is powerful, influential and wealthy!

"I don't want……" She still continued crying.

"Then I'll just find you the world's most expert youngster."

"Don't want, I don't want……" Shaking her head, she continued crying.

"Then……"

"I don't want anything, I only want to cry, crying is enough……" Zhen Xiaoyan hugged Ye Lang, leaning against his shoulder and spoke while crying.

“Just cry until you’re sated.” Ye Lang had nothing else to say, so he sat down on the grass, letting her have her way to lean and cry on his shoulder, and her whole body was stuck closely onto him.

At this moment, it was like time had stopped……

There was only these two in the world……

Chapter 69 – Jilted (3)

This scene of Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan, from an outsider's perspective, had them dumbfounded, they even thought that Ye Lang was bullying Zhen Xiaoyan again, furthermore making her cry.

Only later they learned that it was actually due to the break up, and after they learned about this, they all understood that Zhen Xiaoyan had genuinely liked Mo Ya.

However, simultaneously, they all felt that this ending was the best, even to the point that they were screaming in celebrations, because those that wanted to chase after Zhen Xiaoyan weren't little. Once Zhen Xiaoyan had broken up, it was equivalent to their chance having come.

"Women are indeed made of water, after crying for such a long duration, why is it still never ending!" Ye Lang started to frown, not even bothering to say it tactfully.

"Almost……" Zhen Xiaoyan said whilst sobbing spasmodically, and tried to hold back her tears, but this process was still quite slow, and had made Ye Lang feel impatient.

"Fatty, look at me……" Ye Lang suddenly said.

"What?" Zhen Xiaoyan didn't understand, and looked towards Ye Lang……

“……” She had quietened, and what followed was……

“Haha…… Ye Lang, you…… haha……”

The tears adorned the smile, at this moment, it seemingly looked really really pretty, it was a pity that amongst those people that saw this sight there was a tortoise-like fool.

However, Zhen Xiaoyan felt that, perhaps if it was only him who saw it, it would be enough.

But what was it that made Zhen Xiaoyan laugh uncontrollably all of a sudden, it was naturally because of Ye Lang’s wry face. Yes! It’s him making a wry face!

If it was changed with another person, Zhen Xiaoyan wouldn’t laugh as heartily, at least she wouldn’t forget about other things, but Ye Lang had never made a wry face, and never coaxed her before, so this made her feel surprised, letting her forget about everything momentarily.

She laughed in this manner whilst crying……

“Enough, stop crying already!” Ye Lang retracted his wry face, gently wiping Zhen Xiaoyan’s tears away, the action was so intimate and so natural at the same time.

“No, I want to cry!” Zhen Xiaoyan pouted her lips and said, then she quietly whispered, using a volume that only she could hear, and added another sentence, “You need to continue coaxing me!”

“What? Never mind, stop crying, I’ll help you vent your spleen, I’ll get someone to get rid of Mo Ya!” Ye Lang tapped against Zhen Xiaoyan’s shoulders, and pretentiously said.

“No! It will be very troublesome for you if you do it this way……” Zhen Xiaoyan blurted out, and this had stunned her also.

“Trouble? Just killing Mo Ya, I’m still capable of that! Talking about it, even if I wasn’t able to afford it, once I set my mind to it, I’ll do it. Who told him to hurt you!” Ye Lang said it slowly, that calm tone of his made people wonder whether he was serious or just kidding.

“Forget it, I think I’ve understood it already, I do like him! But I underestimated the intensity!! And with Sha Lan there, even if I didn’t break up today, it would have been the same result sooner or later!” Perhaps after crying, she had let go, Zhen Xiaoyan was then able to see the situation with a clear mind.

She had seen clearly the problems pertaining to herself, to Mo Ya and to Sha Lan, but still she didn’t see clearly the problems pertaining to Ye Lang!

The issues with Mo Ya had already appeared, but concerning Ye Lang and her, she was still fully unaware!

“Since you understood it already, why did you still cry for so long?” Ye Lang puzzledly asked.

“I cried, because I had indeed liked him. I’ve been jilted, and it was my first love, can’t I cry?” Zhen Xiaoyan replied.

“You can, then I’ll let you continue… Ah, you’ve cried enough. Sober up, first love never has a good ending. According to statistics, the majority of first loves never was true love, often it’s other forms of feelings.”

“Let’s go, back to class!” Ye Lang waved his hand, turned his body towards the classroom and walked, Zhen Xiaoyan quickly caught up with him.

“Erm, Ye Lang……” Zhen Xiaoyan grabbed onto Ye Lang’s clothing, speaking gently.

“What is it?” Ye Lang continued walking without even turning his head.

“I feel so unsatisfied, being thrown away in this manner!” Zhen Xiaoyan said it with animosity.

“I’ve already said it, I can find someone to get rid of Mo Ya, but you can’t bear to do so.” Ye Lang bluntly said.

“Erm……” Zhen Xiaoyan mumbled, “Can you make him break up with Sha Lan……”

“This can be done, but is there such a need to do so?” Ye Lang asked.

“Of course, it’s all because of Sha Lan, that’s why I’ve been thrown away, so I won’t let her be happy. Also, how dare Mo Ya throw me away, I want him to be unhappy too!” Zhen Xiaoyan grinding her teeth, saying it with loathing.

Never offend women, this was the truth that Ye Lang had confirmed again!!

“Am I going overboard……nevermind, just pretend that I didn’t say it.” Zhen Xiaoyan immediately gave it up the thought again. She was just this kind and tolerant, until the extent that even if those people hurt her, she couldn’t bear to excessively hurt them.

“Fatty, you only know how to pity others! However, to not take an eye for eye, this kind of thing I absolutely can’t do. Since they’ve made you cry for so long, I can’t let them go this easily.” Ye Lang tapped Zhen Xiaoyan’s hand, and looked forward with a pensive look in his eyes…

“Can you stop wanting to kill them, even injuring them is not okay……at most you can give them light injuries.”

“Don’t worry, I will just give them a little punishment!” Ye Lang smiles while saying this.

“That’s the best… That’s weird, why is the sky beginning to turn black……” Zhen Xiaoyan suddenly said.

The current weather was still the samek, with no clouds in the sky, and had no indication of darkening…

“It’s broad daylight, are you sleepwalking? The current weather is still quite good……fatty, fatty…”

All of a sudden, Zhen Xiaoyan languished and drooped onto Ye Lang’s body, completely losing her consciousness.

“Don’t tell me, the attack she received was too deep?” Ye Lang hugged Zhen Xiaoyan in his bosom, and took her pulse to see the situation, quickly he realised the reason, but this reason would make others speechless——

Fainted from hunger!!

“Silly girl, once again you forgot about your body, after crying so much you should know that you have to eat something at least.” Ye Lang took out a small medicine bottle, pouring out a small round pill from it, put it into Zhen Xiaoyan’s mouth, and used water to flush it down.

This of type of fasting pellet was similar to concocting magic pills, and had very convenient uses, with only one pill it could sustain the person to go without eating for ten days, only requiring water for those days.

But of course, this type of fasting pellet had high costs, manufacturing it wasn't easy either, if not, there wouldn't be any hungry citizens that starved to death!

At the same time, Ye Lang had prepared this type of medicine for Zhen Xiaoyan in quite a large amount, it amounted to letting Zhen Xiaoyan go without eating for hundred days, totaling to hundred pills, he had spent a fair sum of money, and this money would make Zhen Xiaoyan heartache several times.

This medicine was also given to Zhen Xiaoyan for emergency uses, in case she was late with eating, she could eat this, to prevent fainting.

Chapter 70 – Framed (1)

Ye Lang had just briefly realized a problem, that is, if Zhen Xiaoyan fainted, the medicine wouldn't have any use even if she had it, she would have already passed out, so how would she eat it!

Thus, there should be someone accompanying Zhen Xiaoyan, and she absolutely cannot be left alone!

After letting Zhen Xiaoyan consume the fasting pellets, Ye Lang had placed her on his back, and walked towards the classroom. For after fainting, she wouldn't wake up so quickly, these were only fasting pellets, and not deity pellets.

"Fatty, you just wait and see, I'll make things so hard for them that they won't even be able cry!!"

At that moment, Ye Lang had spoken gently, he originally wanted to give Mo Ya and the other a small lesson, but after experiencing physical pain, it wouldn't be so easy anymore for them……

That day, Ye Lang sent Zhen Xiaoyan to his home, when Zhen Xiaoyan awoke, she was confused, not understanding why Ye Lang would take her to his home.

However Ye Lang only wanted to find her a partner for the future, or let his maid accompany her to school, and he would pay for the expense.

Zhen Xiaoyan apparently understood it……

The second day, Ye Lang started to execute his plan, and started with the first step, he needed to transform himself, making others unable to recognise him, among the martial art's treasury, there was a consummate skill, and that was the appearance-changing technique!

Although he wasn't very proficient in this, but it could be considered as coping!

"Ye Lan Yu, where's Ye Lang?" Princess Qi looked at Ye Lan Yu who came by herself, seeing that there was no shadow of Ye Lang, she immediately opened her mouth to ask.

"He said he was uncomfortable, so he won't be coming today." Ye Lan Yu replied.

Because he was afraid that someone would recognise him, Ye Lang didn't follow his usual routine, which was going to school with Ye Lan Yu, and used an excuse saying that he was not feeling well, so he couldn't go to school.

If he had gone together with Ye Lan Yu, everyone would know that he's Ye Lang!

"Where is he uncomfortable at, is it worrying?" Princess Qi worriedly asked.

“Don’t worry, he’s feeling a bit tired, after a short rest he’ll be fine.” Ye Lan Yu replied, naturally, she would have already checked on Ye Lang’s condition.

“Then I’ll go right now to check on him……” Princess Qi wanted to go, but she got stopped by Ye Lan Yu.

“That’s not needed, he said that after he’s recovered he would go out to do some things.”

“?? Is he trying to find an excuse to not go school? He ran away to the auction to play again?” Princess Qi was skeptical, though there was some discrepancy, but she essentially guessed it.

“That’s not really accurate, in any case, just comply to him.” Ye Lan Yu disinterestedly said.

Ye Lang appeared at the school gates with a whole new appearance of a melancholic male, at the gate that an influx of people came in and out, at the path that students needed to take!!

The melancholic Ye Lang’s current state had the elegant demeanor of a noble young master, but no one could recognize that he was Ye Lang, at least no one could perceive Ye Lang’s original features and any similarity between them.

Ye Lang was pretty confident with his own appearance-changing technique. He was confident that even if his own mother had come, she wouldn't be able to distinguish him...

Just that.....

"Ye Lang, what are you doing?" Zhen Xiaoyan looked weirdly at the melancholic Ye Lang.

"....." Ye Lang was silent for a while, afterwards he immediately looked around, pretentiously looking for a person called "Ye Lang".

"What are you doing, why did you change yourself and pretend to not know me?"

"..... I seriously do not know you, Miss, you've gotten the wrong person!" Ye Lang used his inner force to change his tone, until no one could hear that it was his voice.

"??" Zhen Xiaoyan was stunted momentarily, briefly doubting herself whether she got the wrong person.

"What are you doing! Stop pretending already, even if you turned into ashes, I still would be able to recognize you!!" Zhen Xiaoyan was somewhat angry when she said it.

"..... Fatty, how did you recognize me? However, since I've changed into this, you'd better smarten up and pretend to not

know me!! Whatever I do, don't call me at all!" Ye Lang could only reply with a small voice, and on the surface he still pretended to not know her.

"You... Sorry, I've called the wrong person!" Although Zhen Xiaoyan didn't understand what Ye Lang wanted to do, but since Ye Lang had said so, she also pretended that she recognized the wrong person, and then left, not bothering about Ye Lang.

Luckily, the people nearby just now didn't pay much attention to this act, if not, Ye Lang's identity would have been exposed!

Conversely, Ye Lang currently didn't understand this, his own appearance-changing technique wasn't bad, how could Zhen Xiaoyan tell from a glance?

He didn't know, Zhen Xiaoyan also didn't know, she only felt that he was Ye Lang, and did not know the reason!

The thing that made Ye Lang speechless was that, Zhen Xiaoyan wasn't the only one, his identity was easily discovered in the same way later...

"You rascal, aren't you at home?" Ye Lan Yu discovered that Ye Lang was here, and had similarly distinguished him with a glance.

"Ye Lang, what are you playing? And what kind of play is this?" Princess Qi had analogously realized at the same time.

“Ah shit!!” Ye Lang didn’t really understand, was his transformation such a failure, how could everyone distinguish him, since things have led to this, the only way was to have a quick battle.

“Pretend that you don’t know me, later I’ll do something, you just need to watch at the sidelines, understood?” Ye Lang feebly said.

Even Zhen Xiaoyan could tell it was him from a glance, then it was obvious that Ye Lan Yu would, and also Princess Qi!

If he had known this would happen, he would have told Ye Lan Yu just now, he had thought that Ye Lan Yu wouldn’t be able to, however the result was that he was seen through completely, but why was she still at the gate, she should have gone in by now.

Perhaps it was god’s arrangement, with an apt coincidence of Ye Lan Yu meeting Princess Qi at the gate, followed by some prattling and meeting a few people afterwards, discussing over a few matters, she stayed at the gate for quite a while as a result.

“Princess Qi, as what we’ve previously mentioned……” Ye Lan Yu started to discuss the previous matter with Princess Qi, pretending that she didn’t talk with Ye Lang at all.

Comparing the two, their change was more apparent when contrasted, it didn’t leak a single drop, even if the people noticed just now, they would think that the two girls hadn’t just talked with Ye Lang.

However, during their discussion, they had secretly glanced at Ye Lang, because they really wanted to know what type of game Ye Lang was playing.

After waiting for so long, Ye Lang had no activity at all, looking at him, it seemed that he was waiting for someone, however the three girls almost reached their limits, if they had continued to wait here, it would undoubtedly arouse others suspicion, but they didn't want to miss Ye Lang's matter.

Nevertheless it was fine, the person that Ye Lang was waiting for had appeared, it was Mo Ya and Sha Lan, the two had accompanied each other to school as per usual!

"Oh no, don't tell me that he wants to kill them?" Zhen Xiaoyan was anxious, she guessed that Ye Lang had changed his appearance so that no one could tell it was him that did it, and surmised that he wanted to assassinate them.

She wanted to immediately intervene, but she quickly thought of Ye Lang's previous words, so she controlled her actions, anxiously watching from the side……

She looked at Ye Lang walking towards them step by step, and his hands unfurled……

"Smack!" Ye Lang slapped Sha Lan on her face, this crisp sound attracted the attention of the people that were present, everyone had concentrated their gaze on Ye Lang!

Chapter 71 – Framed (2)

“Did he do this for me?” When Zhen Xiaoyan saw this, she sighed of relief, at least she could now say with confidence that Ye Lang did not set out to murder them, although his motive was unknown.

“This Sha Lan, don’t tell me she offended my little brother?” Ye Lan Yu crinkled her brow, and moved Sha Lan’s name into the blacklist, and allowed the execution of a suitable retaliation.

“Hmph!” Princess Qi was also not happy, she had never seen Ye Lang give a slap before, furthermore, it was concerning a girl. She felt that Sha Lan must have done something unforegiveable!

She followed suit and loathed Sha Lan!

No matter what was said, everyone was currently curious about the matter, about why Ye Lang had slapped Sha Lan!

“Who are you!” Mo Ya grabbed onto Ye Lang’s hand single handedly and asked coldly.

At this moment, Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi’s immediate response was to prepare magic to shoot towards Mo Ya, because in their eyes, Ye Lang was a normal person that didn’t know any martial arts and magic, when he got grabbed, there was a possibility that he would be hurt!

However they didn't think that Ye Lang intentionally let himself get caught by Mo Ya, so as to make himself appear normal...

Perhaps they didn't think that the matter would get...

"You're too brutal, you actually threw away our child!!" Ye Lang pointed at Sha Lan while shouting, his expression was sullen, and his tone was very much laden with grief.

"! !"

In just a moment, the whole area quieted down. Everyone stood there stunned, stunned by Ye Lang's sole earth-shattering sentence. Each and every one that was present was stunned, especially Ye Lan Yu and the other 2 girls, even the Mo Ya pair.

Mo Ya completely blanked out, thus Ye Lang took advantage of this chance and struggled free, after that he ran away with any hestitance, when no one had snapped out of it yet, he had already disappeared without a trace!

Sometimes, for some things it's enough with just a sentence. This sentence was enough to make Sha Lan and Mo Ya frantic. Ye Lang ran away once he had finished. Thus, even if Sha Lan jumped into the Yellow River, she still would never be clean again!

"Wah....."

The site started to become tumultuous.....

“It can’t be, so Sha Lan actually was this type of **** slut……”

“This is really a ***** messed up matter, they actually had kids……”

“Mo Ya is so pitiful, who knew that Zhen Xiaoyan was only a little witch, but the true bitch was still Sha Lan…”

“Pitiful Mo Ya, his entire body turned green……”

“……”

“This little bastard, he went overboard with the pillory!!” Ye Lan Yu looked at this scenery, and she couldn’t help but admire her brother’s skill of pillory.

“When did he learn this?”Princess Qi doubtfully asked.

“Ye Lang… You’re really gutsy. However, I really like what you did there.” Zhen Xiaoyan grinned from ear to ear.

……

“No, it’s not what you’re thinking, I seriously don’t know him! Just give me…” After Sha Lan had snapped out of it, she had started to deny the accusations loudly, and at the same time, she wanted to make Ye Lang explain himself, however she realized

that Ye Lang was nowhere to be seen.

"Right, you don't know him, but you only had a child with him!" A sarcastic mouth opened, satirizing her.

"No, I didn't have a child with him..... Mo Ya, you need to believe me!" Sha Lan shook her head, grabbing onto Mo Ya's hand, and her tears were impending to fall.

"I believe you, you're not such a person, who knows where the person came out from." Mo Ya frowned while saying, as if realising the issue with Ye Lang. However, whether he could completely trust in Sha Lan being innocent, that was a question that was worthy to be discussed.

Having said that, if Ye Lang had left it at that then this matter would only have been a small problem, in the short run, it wouldn't create such a big effect.

Of course, Ye Lang wouldn't let the matter rest just yet, he still had a follow-up...

During the afternoon lunch time, Ye Lang had changed into another person again, and after that he went to the cafetaria, however this time, there wasn't any variance. He got recognized by Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi again, but because the two had experienced the morning incidence, they just pretended that they didn't see him.

“I want to ask you about a matter, in this vicinity there was this alluring and talented girl that had an abortion, a doctor secretly told me this. Does anyone here know who that girl is?” Ye Lang queued up to buy mixed rice, and discussed in whispers.

“You don’t need to ask further, that girl has to be Sha Lan. Someone mentioned it during the day, we were suspicious about it, but now it really seem like there’s such a thing happening.”

“So it’s her, she didn’t need to worry even if she had kids, too bad Mo Ya doesn’t want that child.” Ye Lang pretended to be surprised when he said it.

“If I were him, I would of course not worry, it’s only such a pity that the kid isn’t his.”

“It can’t be! Don’t tell me Sha Lan still has casual relations with other men?”

“That’s right…”

……

At the dining table, Ye Lang found a group of girls that looked liked they enjoyed gossiping, and they were indeed discussing the matter of Mo Ya and Sha Lan. And they had also gotten the latest news, that there was someone who “confirmed” that Sha Lan had an abortion!

“Say, Sha Lan’s thing was whom’s?”

“I know, it’s rumored that it’s that melancholic noble, whose melancholic gaze could make so many young ladies topple over…” Ye Lang started to compliment his other appearance, and this time he didn’t talk about Sha Lan getting an abortion.

“Is it true? No wonder……”

……

On the pathway……

At the royal fields……

At every single corner of the school……

Ye Lang used different appearances, and started to spread different types of news. Slowly, this matter had turned into the truth, lastly–

A lie told often enough becomes the truth!!

After this, the distance between Mo Ya and Sha Lan wasn’t a small issue, you could understand from looking at the current state between them, one was completely silent and wore a black face, another was crying whilst begging for her loved one to believe her.

Sha Lan's current heart had already fallen into hell and was suffering. How she wished that the world would become silent, then there wouldn't be so many rumors circulating!

She really wanted to know what actually happened, she obviously didn't do anything, why did people spread rumors until it turned real. And also, there were alot of people who presented the "evidence", however she couldn't understand the evidence at all, because obviously nobody could concretely say where the evidence came from.

……

At the evening, on the pathway to the royal academy, students were all seen rushing to the gate, and when they saw the two, they would slow down and observe.

These two were Mo Ya and Sha Lan, they were undoubtedly the main topic of the day, and because of this, the incident of Zhen Xiaoyan's breakup had been temporarily forgotten.

Perhaps, this was also why Ye Lang was really busy today……

"Ye Lang……" Zhen Xiaoyan was in the back, far, far away, suddenly her eyes twinkled, because Ye Lang was actually walking towards them.

"Hi, how are you? Sha Lan, I've heard that you are having a child, congratulations!" Ye Lang started to greet and congratulate

Mo Ya and Sha Lan.

Chapter 72 – The Emperor's Puzzle (1)

"……"

This rascal did it on purpose, right?

Everyone was flabbergasted, they were all wondering if Ye Lang had purposely agitated them, although with Ye Lang's personality, this was probably very likely.

Going by everyone's beliefs, Ye Lang definitely had a misconception, that Sha Lan's child was Mo Ya's, therefore he had greeted and congratulated in front of Mo Ya.

And due to this type of thinking, Ye Lang had directly went and asked, because he wanted to rub some more salt into those two's wounds……

"Ye Lang……" Zhen Xiaoyan almost reluctantly hastened her steps to drag Ye Lang away.

"Little Qi, when did this rascal learn to be so wicked?" Meanwhile, Ye Lan Yu asked this to Princess Qi.

"How would I know when you don't even know. Also, why did you call me Little Qi?" Princess Qi felt curious about her new nickname.

“Anyways, you’ll be my sister-in-law eventually, what about calling you Little Qi, don’t tell me you still want to put up your princess arrogance?” Ye Lan Yu said.

“Naturally I won’t do that, but I feel Little Qi is a bit like that thing, like I’m his seventh wife, but I’m the first.” Princess Qi said it with a gripe. [For those who forgot, qi means 7]

“Relax, your position of being the first wife won’t be stolen away, you need to put a leash on him, don’t let him marry those no good women.” Ye Lan Yu held onto Princess Qi’s hand, seemingly passing to Princess Qi an arduous task.

“Mhm! I will!!” Princess Qi said it very seriously.

As the two talked, they drifted away from the original topic, jumping into a topic that Ye Lang always didn’t put into consideration; he didn’t put the marriage between Princess Qi and himself into his mind, he completely didn’t think that he would have to marry Princess Qi as his wife one day in the future.

Of course, although Princess Qi had thought that she would definitely be married to Ye Lang, but she didn’t think that she had to fall in love with Ye Lang!

“Sister, I’ve come to bring you home! Princess Qi is also here huh, just go home by yourself, I won’t be sending you.” Ye Lang unreservedly said.

“You…” Princess Qi was livid by that, “Can’t you just ask me to go home together?”

“Oh, want to go home together ah, that’s fine. ” Ye Lang thoughtlessly said.

“I also want to go together……” Zhen Xiaoyan said it at one corner.

“No, you better go home quickly, if not, your illness will reoccur again, it’s too troublesome.” Ye Lang definitively rejected.

“So you still want your lunch or not?” Zhen Xiaoyan smiled whilst saying, completely not afraid of Ye Lang’s rejection.

“Ahem ahem, come with us then, I’ll send you home later, otherwise, you should just stay in that room.” Ye Lang immediately changed his mind, and had generously let Zhen Xiaoyan temporarily stay for a night.

“……” Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi were both speechless, however they had indeed confirmed a thing, and that was if they wanted to bind a man’s heart, they had to capture the man’s stomach.

‘It seems that, I also need to learn culinary arts.’ The two had simultaneously thought, for different purposes, and decided to try stepping into culinary territory.

“What about them……”

“Aren’t they fine? Look, they’re so loving……” Ye Lang casually said.

“That’s called loving?” The three females simultaneously asked.

“Fighting is a form of love……”

“……”

Slap!

Sha Lan strongly slapped Mo Ya’s face, broken-heartedly cried, and shouted.

“Why aren’t you willing to believe me, I didn’t do it!”

She was in this state because Mo Ya had said some nasty words to her, but she couldn’t have imagined that the following words that he would say would give her even more sadness.

“Why should I trust you, when we were together, when we were together, you were already a woman, and not a girl!!” Mo Ya coldly said.

“Hua……” Clamor broke out, even if Mo Ya was very vague, everyone knew what he meant.

“You……Mo Ya, I hate you……!”

At this moment, Sha Lan’s heart completely shattered, she seemed to be regretting it now, why did she not maintain a virgin maiden body, otherwise this type of misunderstanding would have never occurred.

She only understood what others said now, girls should not easily give away their bodies to guys, even to the one they’re in love with, even after looking carefully……

“Fatty, luckily you’re so traditional, if not, you would have lost out, Mo Ya’s type of person, he’s not suitable for you!”

“I never thought that he was that type of person, I must have been blind.”

“It’s great that you’ve understood. In the future, when you’re looking, you need to look for good men like me.”

“Bah, good man… Don’t forget when you pushed me into the fire pit!”

“Hey, hey, that was only to help you, to help you completely fulfill your feelings, or you would’ve become a pervert by now!”

“You’re the perverted one…… Hmmph!!”

……

“Uhm, Ye Lang, did you want to show me Mo Ya’s true face this way?”

“Mhm, yup!”

“Your reply is so fast, why do I feel like you’re just saying that?”

“Oh, was it?”

“……”

Because of this event, Sha Lan was now considered a cheap woman. Men still chased after her, but their intentions were just casual, no one was serious!

In the end, Sha Lan could only immerse herself in Alchemy to keep her mind busy. She completely abandoned romance, becoming more and more cold!

Mo Ya was also not much better, his previous elegant demeanor was completely destroyed in that moment. Girls no longer fanatically pursued him, his popularity dropped, and his title as one of the Four Princes was also taken away.

……

The cause of it all, Ye Lang, was now being annoyed by a person.

“Thirteen, quickly think of a solution!”

“Solve your own problems by yourself, I can’t be bothered about you!”

“I can’t solve this by myself, that’s why I came to ask you, only you can do this matter, you’re the prodigal son!”

After Zhen Xiaoyan’s incident, everyone acknoledged Ye Lang’s Alchemy skills, it also attracted a lot of people’s attention.

“So what if it isn’t solved, it isn’t even your business.”

“Thirteen ah, this concerns your brother’s happy life, your seventh sister-in-law’s future relies on you!” Brother Seven became even more pitiful.

“Fight your for own happiness yourself!”

“I’m already fighting for it!”

“……I really don’t want to bother with you.”

“Be good, Thirteen, just agree to your brother’s request.”

“Okay okay, I got it. But in the end, what is this about seventh sister-in-law’s future. How did you encounter such a strange question?” Ye Lang helplessly asked.

Chapter 73 – The Emperor's Puzzle (2)

"That is because the emperor used a reason to give a puzzle to his children. In this way, he wants to find out whether his children are wise or not." Brother Seven said.

"Oh, got it. Let me think about it …" Ye Lang nodded and said.

"Take it easy, but we only have three days!" Brother Seven felt embarrassed to urge him to figure out the answer.

"I understand, and I will try to find the answer as soon as possible." Ye Lang waved his hand and said.

"Don't forget, please …"

"Stop talking about it, or I will immediately forget it!!"

"…" Brother Seven immediately shut his mouth.

The goal: To not let anyone walk on the ground of a bustling street!

Conditions: Don't destroy the ground, put anything on the ground, or block off an area…

Under these conditions it was almost impossible to achieve such a simple goal. Brother Seven and his fiancee could not work it out no matter how hard they tried, so they turned to Ye Lang.

They turned to Ye Lang because he was not only an “alchemy genius” but also a lucky dog. They thought they might pass the test because of his good luck.

Ye Lang’s brother even believed that even if Ye Lang failed to find any solution and there weren’t any changes, as long as he participated, people would stay away from that area magically.

Goddess of good luck, you must help your baby this time. Don’t go away!

Brother Seven thought because the time was not fixed, they could choose a period of time when no one passed there if they would be lucky enough.

They also understood that even if they chose such a period of time, the emperor might still send someone there to pass by, or some other people, and not let them pass the test so easily.

And they had thought about how to keep people away in this fixed period of time, but had never considered how to do so at the peak time.

In the evening, Ye Lang told brother Seven that he came up with a solution...

“What? You plan to let the emperor come at the peak time? ” Brother Seven asked with great surprise. As it was mentioned above, he never thought about how to do so during that period of time.

“Yes, the more people, the better. We may fail if there are few people. In addition, we should choose a period of time during the day when there is enough light.” Ye Lang nodded and replied.

“Why? I have to remind you that we can’t do anything, how are you planning to keep them away from that area?”

“Who told you that you can’t do anything? If nothing can be done, why does the emperor give this test?” Ye Lang smiled and said, “Don’t worry. I will satisfy you. If I fail, we still have two days. Our time is limited but we can keep on trying.”

“That’s true...” Brother Seven nodded and replied. All the tests given by the emperor were the same, they had to be completed within a limited amount of time, but you could try as many times as you wanted!

The next day, the emperor, as well as his escorts, dressed casually and reached the most bustling street. They stopped in the most crowded place and waited for the answer.

“Are you sure you want to try in this place at this time?” The

emperor frowned and asked.

Judging from his question, it seemed that he had never thought about this problem, and had never thought it would be solved during this period of time and in such an environment.

“Yep...” The fiancee of brother Seven nodded, and looked at brother Seven, who had a wry smile. He could only believe that Ye Lang’s solution would work.

“Then you start!” The emperor said with some expectation. He wanted to see what his daughter’s solution was.

“Ye Ming ...”

“I know ...” Brother Seven went to put away what covered the ground there. Then something appeared —

There was a deep pit!

“Fuck, I told you that you cannot destroy the ground. Brat, are you kidding us? Come here!” Brother Seven immediately shouted.

“Calm down. Take it easy. If you keep shouting, you are telling everyone that I did it.” Ye Lang, who was just enjoying his tea somewhere, helplessly replied.

“...” The emperor and his escorts found Ye Lang was there, and

understood this was done by him.

At this moment, someone in the crowd moved swiftly to approach Ye Lang and looked at him with a little anger...

“Anyway, your plan doesn’t work for you have broken the rule!” Brother Seven said furiously. He thought Ye Lang had cheated them by saying they could pass the test as long as they uncovered the ground. How did it work? How?

“Well, I did not break the rule. Just wait a minute! Why are you staring at me, Princess Qi?” Ye Lang asked Princess Qi next to him.

Princess Qi had never expected she would meet Ye Lang, and he was even trying to help the fiancee of his brother solve the problem.

“You want to know why?” Princess Qi said and looked unhappy, pinching his hand firmly...

“I don’t understand what you are saying?” Ye Lang felt puzzled and looked at Princess Qi.

At the same time, the test was still going on. Right now, everyone that saw the pit took a detour.

Even though some people could not see the pit, they still took a detour for most of the passers-by did so. That’s why he chose such a peak period.

“You idoit, who are you helping?” Princess Qi patted Ye Lang’s hand and said.

“My brother’s fiancee, what’s wrong?” Ye Lang naturally replied.

“Do you know what the test is?” Princess Qi continued asking.

“I know. It seems that the emperor gave all his children a test, and then she turned to me.” Ye Lang continued to answer her question.

“Since you know that, why didn’t you ask me about it?” Princess Qi said and her small mouth pursed. Her response stunned the emperor and his escorts.

They had never seen her with such an expression on her face. Although she was not the focus of everyone, as her father and siblings, they knew about her.

“Ask you about what?” Ye Lang asked blankly.

Alas, why are you so smart sometimes but so foolish now? Brother Seven, the emperor, and others were all shaking their heads.

Who was Princess Qi? She was the princess, that is, the emperor’s daughter. All the emperor’s children were given a test, naturally

including her.

"You are so stupid!" Princess Qi guessed Ye Lang did not know the reason and said, "I am also a princess, so I was also given a test by father. Why didn't you consider that?"

Chapter 74 – The Emperor's Puzzle (3)

"Ah, I forgot! What kind of difficult problem did you get? Tell me so that I can help you." Ye Lang had only just thought of it, that his "future wife" was also a princess.

"Hee hee, you don't need to bother about this, I won't be answering this question." Princess Qi quietly giggled while saying, she only needed to know that Ye Lang would help her. Someone else would've seized the chance to solve this kind of test, but she did not want to solve it.

"?? Why?" Ye Lang couldn't understand Princess Qi's attitude.

"You don't need to ask me about this, I only want us to continue living our peaceful lives, there's no need for such an headache." Princess Qi softly said, and gently pulled Ye Lang's arm.

The others had roughly overheard their conversation, they had admired this trait of Princess Qi, that she could let it go so easily!

The emperor's puzzle, since it targeted all of the princes and princesses, anyone could easily guess that this was an assessment of the right of inheritance of the emperor's throne, although it might not be the decisive one, but it was still very important.

Even if they couldn't inherit the throne, once they had performed exceptionally, they would be able to gain the emperor's acknowledgement, then they would be able to obtain considerable power and status!

And such an opportunity, Princess Qi had actually completely disregarded it!!

“Ah.” Ye Lang didn’t care, although he didn’t understand what Princess Qi was saying, but he was too lazy to care about these matters, however he still reacted with a solid question–

“What’s your puzzle, let me see.”

“…… , I’ll tell you then, two people drink from a same bowl, but the two will have different flavors, of course, the senses of the two person will not have any difference.” Princess Qi lightly said.

“It’s just this? That’s too easy……” Ye Lang said it with a hint of surprise, this question was just too coincidental, this question would have been a giveaway for many, on Earth that is.

“?? You have a solution already?” Princess Qi asked with amazement.

“I’ll tell you, it’s like this……”

“……”

Ye Lang and Princess Qi started whispering in each other’s ears……

They were still like this, the two's relationship was really not bad!

The Emperor chuckled while waiting for people, concerning Ye Lang and Princess Qi's intimate actions, it was a common occurrence already, as the two had always been like that since young!

And they wouldn't care about the bystanders!!

Only that, there were people who were indeed unhappy, and that is brother Seven and sister-in-law Seven.

"Thirteen……"

"Sister Qi…"

"You two, can you stop being so intimate, resolve our situation first!" The two people said in one voice.

"Isn't it happening already, when the emperor says it's complete, it will also be done!" Ye Lang said without a care, and continued to chat softly with Princess Qi afterwards.

"Elder sister, Ye Lang says it's solved then it's solved, he never tells lies, he only says the truth in inappropriate situations!" Princess Qi agreed and replied with a sentence, and then continued to whisper into Ye Lang's ear.

“……”

“Okay then, I only want to know now, how does this hole not break the rules.” When the Emperor saw this, he felt there was no need to say anything else.

As for others, those who wanted to destroy it had gone personally, but had immediately given up this idea, because they also were awaiting the explanation, on how this thing did not violate the rules.

At this moment, everyone had shifted their gazes towards Ye Lang, because at this moment, anyone would know that it was his doing, brother Seven and his wife were temporarily overlooked.

But however, Ye Lang did not bother at all and continued to talk to Princess Qi in hushed tones, the two had already started to discuss about other people’s puzzles

“Thirteen!!”

“Woh, are you ready? Do you want me to explain that black hole….. actually……” Ye Lang walked towards the black hole, walked until the edge, and immediately took a step towards the black hole……

“Ye Lang! You…Idiot…… ?” At first, Princess Qi frantically screamed, and wanted to pull back Ye Lang, but when she saw Ye

Lang, she was completely dumbfounded.

Only because, Ye Lang at this moment was actually standing on the black hole, seemingly floating on it……

“How, how is this possible?”

“Magic? Alchemy?”

“……”

Everyone that was present was flabbergasted,they had no idea how Ye Lang did it, all kinds of speculations came and went.

“You’re stunned right!?” Ye Lang smiles and said towards Princess Qi.

“You silly. In the end, how are you…” Princess Qi wanted to ask but was interrupted by Ye Lang.

“No need to ponder, just come and you will understand.”

“Alright…” Princess Qi heard Ye Lang’s words and directly walked on to the black hole, she did not even think that she would fall.

In this way, Princess Qi and Ye Lang were standing on the black

hole, as if they were just standing on the ground.

“Hey, is this the ground below?” Princess Qi lightly stomped down with her foot, the foot issued a corresponding stomping sound, just like shoes making contact with the ground.

But that’s clearly a black hole, how could it be the ground?

“This is the ground, steady ground, but I put down a three-dimensional painting on it. People just had a visual illusion. Sometimes, the things our eyes see may not be true!!” Ye Lang smiled, and then left together with Princess Qi, leaving behind a dazed group that was in deep thought.

They weren’t just thinking about Ye Lang’s last sentence, they were also wondering whether this puzzle was solved. According to the rules it should have been solved.

And this made several people light up and praise the way it was solved.

But after all, this puzzle was solved by brother Seven and his wife enlisting foreign aid, Ye Lang. This issue needed to properly studied.

Finally, when this issue was raised, the Emperor said: “Who of you never received aid from others? Did you solve everything yourself? As the ruler of a country it is very important to know how to use people, rather than trying to solve everything

yourself!”

“Little Qi…” Ye Lang also heard how Ye Lan Yu called her.

“What is it?” Princess Qi didn’t object to it and just answere.

“Where do we go to play? Go to the auction?” Ye Lang asked with his eyes shining.

“What is the fun of going to the auction, you go every day, aren’t you tired?” Princess Qi’s interest in the auction was very low, so she unhappily pinched Ye Lang.

“The things there are never the same, and sometimes you would encounter fun things.” Ye Lang did not notice Princess Qi’s lack of interest.

“What fun, you only know how to be prodigal, if not for the Ye Family, who knows what would have happened with you!” Princess Qi said with a little concern.

She was worried about Ye Lang, afraid that if he went on like this and lost the shelter of the Ye Family, what would happen to him, how would he live?

Although she felt that the worry was unnecessary, Ye Family’s foundation would not be drained out in a short amount time, unless something special happened.

And even if there was no Ye Family, as long there was her, she could also take care of Ye Lang!

“When I become homeless, I’ll just make more money to be prodigal!” Announced Ye Lang.

“Make money to be prodigal….. Really, you!” Seven Princess said weakly. There was probably no second person in the whole world whose purpose of making money was for being prodigal!

“Then, let’s just go to the auction now?” Ye Lang asked while looking at Princess Qi.

“Fine, Go! Not like I have a choice!” Princess Qi said helplessly. She had been together with Ye Lang for so long, for these kind of things she would not have any objections, even if she did not like it.

“Don’t be so unhappy, I’ll buy you a present you later.” Ye Lang pulled Princess Qi into a carriage, dashing towards the auction.

Chapter 75 – Ye Lang's Weapon (1)

In the afternoon, a few days later, Ye Lang was in the academy's contest field. He was looking at his opponents in front of him calm and leisurely look, as if he had duelled a countless times.

However, it was well-known that this was the first time for Ye Lang going to the contest field, and this was his first duel!

Ye Lang always depended on others since birth. Moreover, he was so useless that no one intended to fight with him. Defeating him, he or she would gain nothing. But if they were defeated, he or she would lose major face. Regardless of the result, he or she would end up irritating many people!

Besides, he never accepted others' challenges and he did not feel embarrassed and ashamed turning down others!

So many people found it strange that Ye Lang accepted the challenge.

The reason why Ye Lang did so dated back to this noon when he was taking a walk with Zhen Xiaoyan. A group of aggressive people stopped them on their way, all staring at Ye Lang!

At that time, Ye Lang looked at the group of people and said something that shocked everyone:

"The classrooms are on the right. The teachers' office building is

on the left. The toilet is in the middle!”

“…”

Obviously, Ye Lang thought that the group of people were going to ask about the direction rather than stirring trouble. So after saying that, he continued to walk away with Zhen Xiaoyan!

“Stop !” The group of people became dumb for a long time but then caught up with Ye Lang to block his way again.

“Do you want to inquire something else? This is all I know. You can ask others…” Ye Lang still failed to realize they came here for him.

“Ye Lang …” Zhen Xiaoyan finally said, “They came here for you!”

“For me? Why? Do I know you?” Ye Lang looked at those people in front of him and asked with confusion.

“You don’t know them. But others know you.” Zhen Xiaoyan said impatiently.

“There’s always a reason, but I never offend others.” Ye Lang replied and recalled whether he had ever offened others.

“You have never offended others, but you are just too annoying!”

Before those people said something, Zhen Xiaoyan answered him.

“Why, fatty? I am not so ugly. Give me a mirror.” Ye Lang said and reached out for a mirror.

“...” Zhen Xiaoyan was silent, and that group of people looked blank, standing there.

“Give me that mirror, don’t be dumb!” Ye Lang took the mirror from Zhen Xiaoyan’s hand and looked at the mirror.

“Not very handsome, but I don’t look so hideous.” Ye Lang said. He was so modest that he never admitted that he was handsome.

“.....”

“Stop talking about that. Take him away for the duel!” Among the group of people, some began to become impatient. They felt that if they continued to talk with the foolish Ye Lang, they would look like idiots.

“Wait, why do you want to fight with me? Why?” Ye Lang asked.

“You have to ask yourself for the reason. Why do you keep a romantic relationship with Princess Qi and refuse to let her go?” That group of people asked and no longer controlled their feelings.

“You’re talking about Little Qi. I do not have a romantic relationship with her, but we just have an engagement.” Ye Lang said carelessly, and did not feel his words provoked them.

“Ye Lang, don’t be so aggressive. We will fight with you for Princess Qi!” The group of people shouted.

“Nonsense! Fatty, let’s go.” Ye Lang directly ignored them and continued to walk away with Zhen Xiaoyan.

But this group of people did not give up, and stopped him again and again. Then Ye Lang became angry, but just a little angry.

“You are so annoying. Since it is necessary for us have a duel, we should go to the contest field, weapons optional!”

....

“Ye Lang, are you ready?” In the contest field, among the group of people, the most competitive man shouted to Ye Lang while holding a sword.

“No, I haven’t got my weapon!” Ye Lang replied, found a place to sit down and waited.

“You haven’t got your weapon. What do you need? We can lend you.” The group of people questioned and they felt Ye Lang tried to delay the duel.

However, no one knew what kind of weapon Ye Lang would use, because he had never used any!

“That isn’t something you can lend me. Just wait, what I need is about to arrive!” Ye Lang said with a smile.

They had no choice but to wait, fearing that otherwise Ye Lang would just cancel the duel. They had tried hard to get this chance to have a duel, so they were willing to waiting for a while to ensure they would not lose this chance!

Soon...

“Little brother, who is fighting a duel with you?” Ye Lan Yu said angrily, hurrying there with Princess Qi.

“Those guys. My weapon is here, please get ready.” Ye Lang stood up, clapped his hands, and said so to the group of people.

“Why? Why are you trying to duel him?” Princess Qi saw them and seemed to realise something. But she was not sure about it.

“Don’t ask so much. Kill all who dares to bully my brother! ” Ye Lan Yu simply said.

“Miss Ye, now it is Ye Lang that will fight a duel with us. You shouldn’t get involved in it, or Ye Lang will always feel ashamed

for the rest of his life."

When it came to a duel, no one could interfere it for any reason until the duel ended. Otherwise, the man involved in the duel would be disdained for the rest of his life.

If her interfering would ruin just her reputation, Ye Lan Yu would not care about it. But this would also have an impact on Ye Lang, so she had to wait for a while!

"Ye Lang, hurry and get the weapon from your sister. Let't start." His opponents shouted.

"Weapon? Little brother, what weapon do you want from me?" Ye Lanyu became confused and asked, looking forward to his answer.

Like everyone else there, she did not know what weapon Ye Lang would use or what weapon was kept by her.

Princess Qi was also very curious what weapon Ye Lang would ultimately use, looking at Ye Lang with expectation.

"Good, listen! My weapon is – my sister, Ye Lan Yu! Sister, beat the man!" Ye Lang smiled as he spoke slowly.

"..." Everyone became silent.

At this moment, everyone suddenly became speechless and did not understand Ye Lang's words. What did he mean by saying his sister was his weapon.

Obviously, Ye Lan Yu could not be regarded as a weapon.

If she could be regarded as a weapon, two will fight as one in this duel.

Never mind two people, even if Ye Lan Yu fights alone... wait...

I think I understand what he means...

Chapter 76 – Ye Lang's Weapon (2)

"Fuck. Ye Lang, you are so shameless. How can Miss Ye be a weapon? How can you use her?" The group of people began to strongly oppose him and condemned his shameless behavior.

"For me, my sister is my most powerful weapon. If I don't depend on her, what else can I use?" Ye Lang said with a smile, and then added, "A person can also be used as a weapon. Am I right? Sister, they bully me. Kill them!"

"Got it! Just wait! You all are dead!" Ye Lan Yu geared up for a fight and shouted. She just needed a reason to give them a lesson herself. Although this reasoning didn't make sense, she did not care.

"Hey, you two can not do this... Ah, damn... Quickly escape..." The group of people said when they saw Ye Lan Yu was coming to beat them. They escaped without saying anything more.

Everyone knew that in such a situation, Ye Lan Yu would first beat them up.

Usually, what Ye Lang and his sister did didn't make sense...

While the group of onlookers were frozen, everyone, including that group of people, was warning themselves in their hearts.

Now everyone understood why Ye Lang had promised to have

this duel. He hadn't intended to fight the duel on his own. Instead, he had planned to let his sister help him.

And the excuse he had made was so ridiculous. Only he could find such an excuse so naturally!

"Sister, let's go home!"

Ye Lang finally rose and then took the lead to go outside, ignoring all their amazement. Undoubtedly, he became used to leaving with such an expression, no matter what serious problem he faced.

"You guys don't need to save them, or else... Hmmph" Ye Lan Yu warned those who wanted to save those frozen people.

"..."

Never offend these two, for one was a fool and the other was crazy. They were definitely a terrible match!

"Wait for me, I ..." Princess Qi shook her head, and then caught up with them. But before she finished what she said, someone appeared unexpectedly.

"Sir Ye, Your Highness, His Majesty asked you to the palace!" A royal guard with a familiar face suddenly appeared near them and stopped Ye Lang on his way.

Without hesitation, Ye Lang immediately replied, “Today I’m busy… Ah, why do you hit me?”

“Idiot, you have to go with me if my father asks us to do so, even if you have no time!” Princess Qi whispered to Ye Lang impatiently.

“But today I don’t want to go there.” Ye Lang didn’t change his mind and said.

“Go with me even if you are not willing to do so. He is not just my father, but also the ruler of the country. Understand? Go with me.” Princess Qi said softly and pulled him slowly.

“Oh, that’s all right!” Ye Lang no longer refused, and went with her to the palace.

Although Ye Lan Yu sometimes was very crazy, in general she was very considerate. She would have let Ye Lang go with the princess even she hadn’t asked him to do so.

She would certainly accompany Ye Lang to go to the palace no matter whether she was asked to do so by the emperor!

But the emperor seldom asked both of them to go to the palace. He used to ask Ye Lang to visit him alone by contacting others of the Ye family.

Therefore, it was a bit unusual. But none of the three found anything different, because for them, the palace was like their home and the visit to the emperor was like that to their relatives, especially for Princess Qi.

When the three arrived at the palace, they were directly led to the hall. As soon as they entered the hall, they felt something was wrong.

In this hall, almost all the princes and princesses were present, in addition to the emperor and a few powerful ministers. It could be said that all here held the power of the entire empire. If someone at this time destroyed this place, the whole empire would end up in chaos.

At this moment, when the three entered the hall, everyone fixed their eyes on Ye Lang with helplessness, appreciation, or aversion and so on.

But Ye Lang was not aware of their eyes and ignored all the people. He directly asked the emperor as usual-

“His Majesty, why did you ask me to come here?”

Hearing what he said, the emperor felt angry and thought, “Brat, you don’t take this seriously, I really want to give you a lesson... Just kidding... You two little girls, don’t stare at me like that!” He quickly suppressed his anger when he saw Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi staring at him with an unfriendly expression!

“Take it seriously, Ye Lang. Today I asked you here for only one reason. Give them a test!” The emperor said and became very unhappy.

“What?” Ye Lang did not understand what the emperor said. What did he mean by saying giving them a test?

“You should not have forgotten helping my fifth daughter... your brother’s fiancee solve a problem, right?” The emperor said, and judging from Ye Lang’s expression, he knew that he did not know what he said.

“I remember it, so?” Ye Lang nodded and asked.

“Then you should also remember you helped your wife pass the test.” The emperor continued to say.

“Yes, couldn’t I?” Ye Lang asked with a little puzzlement.

“You could do that, but the problem is that you finally helped everyone pass the test!” The emperor said helplessly.

After Ye Lang had helped the fiancee of his Brother Seven and then also Princess Qi, almost all the princes and princesses turned to him and he finally helped all of them!

What had surprised them was that Ye Lang had solved all of their problems, although they had never expected him to do so!

What's more, Ye Lang had solved the problems in various and strange ways that no one had ever even thought about.

This also told everyone that Ye Lang, an alchemist, was really capable. He was really indeed an alchemy genius...

"What's wrong?" Ye Lang asked with confusion.

"Pop!" The emperor slapped his throne and arrived in front of Ye Lang, and then exclaimed, "Damn. The test was unsuccessful because of what you did, and my goal could not be achieved!"

"Ah, you can give them another test. This time I will help none of them!" Ye Lang said embarrassedly.

Chapter 77 – Ye Lang's Weapon (3)

"No. This time you must give them another test on your own." The emperor returned to the throne and told Ye Lang.

"You're asking me to give them a test? Okay." Ye Lang looked at the emperor, and replied, "What else?"

"That's all. Go back and think about what questions are appropriate. All are up to you." The emperor said with a smile.

"Only for this, why do you ask me here? You could've just asked someone to tell me about this!" Ye Lang whispered.

"Idiot, the test that you give will impact the power transfer of the empire..." Princess Qi said impatiently. She knew Ye Lang was confused.

The emperor let Ye Lang give a test to choose his successor, which was very important for the whole empire. That's why he was so cautious that he gave him this task in person.

It was believed that when Ye Lang considered what kind of test would be given to each of them, all these princes, princesses as well as many ministers would try to build a good relationship with him in order to get an easy test for themselves or those they supported.

Thus, Ye Lang became the focus in this power struggle, for he had the right to make such a big decision!

Because of this, when the emperor made this decision, almost everyone was shocked. It was unexpected that the emperor would give Ye Lang such a right. Did it mean that the emperor intentionally let Princess Qi inherit the throne?

Now, Princess Qi was Ye Lang's fiancee, and Ye Lang gained this right, so it was clear that Princess Qi could take this advantage.

As for Princess Qi, in everyone's eyes, she didn't stand out in terms of appearance and wisdom. She definitely was not the most suitable candidate. If she became the successor, she would get into a lot of disputes.

However, with the support of the Ye family and Ye Lang's outstanding ability, it was possible that she could become the successor.

Therefore, at this moment, Princess Qi and Ye Lang suddenly became the opponents in everyone's eyes. No one had ever considered them their opponents before.

But this idea lingered on their mind for a while. Then everyone immediately gave up the idea!

Only because of Ye Lang –

"I don't need to go back to think about it. I can show them a few questions, and let them write down their answers." Ye Lang said

and intended to give them a test on the spot.

And in such a short period of time, he could not figure out any particularly difficult questions so he just asked some questions that the average people could not answer.

“There is a rule. That is, you have to think about how to answer my questions alone. Try to answer as many questions as possible. You can find someone to help you answer the questions, but you can’t communicate! If you understand, get ready for it. Half an hour later, all come here!”

Ye Lang finished, and then took out the writing brush, the ink, the paper, and the ink stone to write down the questions...

“Sister, what do you think?” Ye Lang asked Ye Lan Yu next to her.

“...I can answer none of them...” Ye Lan Yu flushed said.

“I know. Because you are too stupid to answer the questions! I asked you about my handwriting. Does my style resemble that of a calligrapher?” Ye Lang smiled and said.

“Damn, you dare to say I am stupid. Anyway, your handwriting is good. When did you practice it?” Ye Lan Yu patted him, leaned on his shoulders, and asked.

“Hey, I practiced it, but there were few chances for me to write

the characters.” Ye Lang said with a smile.

He learned the calligraphy from the Book of Martial Arts. In fact, calligraphy could be combined with martial arts. When he combined his martial arts with calligraphy, the style of his handwriting could resemble that of a master when he comprehended the martial arts.

However, Ye Lang rarely showed off his calligraphy, because he was not interested in it. In addition, he had few chances to write characters.

Ye Lang seldom wrote characters, so his calligraphy works became precious and cherished by many!

Especially this time when he wrote these questions. If this calligraphy work was preserved, it would have become unique and valuable. That was not only because his calligraphy was precious, but also because his questions changed the fate of an empire...

“Well, since everyone is here, let’s look at the questions!” Ye Lang ordered the guards to hang the paper on which he had written down all the questions in the hall.

Everyone fixed their eyes on the characters there. They looked nervous and confused immediately, not only for his good calligraphy, but for his questions.

Soon, many present fixed their eyes on Ye Lang, watching him

drinking tea and talking with Ye Lan Yu over there. Most of them were even staring at him with anger in their eyes.

Because many of them found that they didn't know how to answer many questions after reading them.

However, when they saw Princess Qi answer none of the questions with a confused look on her face, they felt relieved and less worried.

At least, Ye Lang didn't make it difficult for them while making it easy for Princess Qi to answer the questions.

"Ye Lang...why are these questions so strange? Are there any answers to them?" The emperor asked him at this moment.

"Brat, take it seriously. Go home to think about it!" Ye Chengtian said. On behalf of the Ye family, he was naturally present on such an occasion.

"Don't worry. There are answers to all of my questions, but most people can not answer these questions." Ye Lang smiled and replied.

"Are we so average that we can answer none of them?" Princess Qi gave up finishing the test and said unhappily. Even though she was inferior to the others, but she shouldn't have been unable to answer none of them.

“Am I really so stupid?” Princess Qi lost confidence and muttered.

“It has nothing to do with your wisdom. Even the smartest people may not be able to answer them. This is not a test for wisdom.” Ye Lang said and chuckled.

“What?” Princess Qi was puzzled. If the test was not for wisdom, what was it for?

“Don’t think about it. Have some tea.” Ye Lang told Princess Qi to take a seat, and she did so, she sat next to him, looked at those written questions, shook her head, and then began chatting with him!

The two sometimes chuckled. Sometimes Princess Qi snappily patted Ye Lang, sometimes...

They were not concerned about other things because the competition had nothing to do with them. Their romantic relationship was enviable...

Chapter 78 – Spine-Chilling Woman (1)

As time slowly passed by, there were some people who still had blank papers……

“Time’s up, sign your name, on a blank paper as well. Watch them carefully!” Ye Lang said and alerted the guards in advance to prepare.

Quickly, the imperial guards had gathered everyone’s papers, although some were unwilling, but there were so many people at the scene, it also didn’t do any good to have any other movements.

Take 2:” Seventh brother and future sister-in-law, your papers are empty.” Ye Lang had first glanced at the script of the future sister-in-law.

“I know that!! You didn’t need to bluntly say it out!!” Seventh brother’s teeth were aching due to Ye Lang, being the first to be pointed out, others probably wouldn’t be happy either, they would more or less keep some grudge against Ye Lang.

“Why not say it out, even if you couldn’t answer it, it doesn’t represent that you have a problem.” Ye Lang casually said it, afterwards he had made those with empty papers, those who didn’t answer even one question correctly, stand in a group.

At this moment, that group of people’s cheeks had a blush, however in their hearts they had wholeheartedly agreed that they would to teach Ye Lang a deep lesson, of course, this was only in

thoughts.

"You guys, go to that corner, and the remaining……" Ye Lang had called upon those who had correctly answered 3 or less questions, and separated them into another corner.

"It's indeed worthy to be called imperial palace, great number of competent people, you guys are actually able to pass 5 questions." Ye Lang looked at the remaining people, this result was a little better than he thought.

"There's 5 people that correctly answered 10 or more questions, such talents……eh, this is? Zhao Ya Rou, you actually answered all the questions correctly? Who is this terrifying woman?" Ye Lang accidentally realized there were people who had crossed 10 questions, and the most accidental one was Zhao Ya Rou, who had actually answered everything correctly.

"Why is she terrifying? Ya Rou is our eighth sister, amongst my sisters, she is the most beautiful and clever. These amazingly hard questions, she was able to answer all of them." Said Princess Qi.

"Eighth sister? She's the eighth princess?" Ye Lang asked.

"Mhm, you should know her, you've even bullied her." Princess Qi nodded her head.

"??" Ye Lang was somwhat confused, when did he bully the eighth princess?

“It was when you were young……” Even if Princess Qi reminded him subtly, it was only during childhood, and it didn’t matter whether he remembered it.

“Ye Lang, you’ve forgotten me?” The eighth princess, Zhao Ya Rou walked towards Ye Lang, using an extremely complicated gaze to look at Ye Lang.

Ye Lang looked at Zhao Ya Rou for a moment, afterwards he consciously hid briefly, and pulled Princess Qi’s hand, quietly whispering, “In the future take caution of her, don’t get too close to her, she’s honestly too spine-chilling!”

“……” Zhao Ya Rou and Princess Qi were both stunned, they didn’t think that Ye Lang would act like this.

“What’s happened to you, it’s only answering your questions correctly, what’s so terrifying?” Princess Qi couldn’t understand him and asked, “Don’t tell me it’s because she’s smarter than you?”

“Little Qi, there are questions that aren’t necessarily good to be able to answer correctly……these questions, if I didn’t know the answers, I would likely be unable to answer even one question.” Ye Lang lightly stressed while he way saying, and his voice could only be heard properly by Ye Lan Yu and Princess Qi, others could only roughly hear it.

“??” Princess Qi and Ye Lan Yu really didn’t understand,

“Brother/Ye Lang, are you pretending to be stupid again?”

“……”

“I can’t be bothered with you guys! Your majesty, I’ve did what I needed to, for the following matters, you can just manage it yourself, I’ll be going off first!” Ye Lang whimsically just prepared to leave already.

As things were at this step, Ye Lang actually had nothing else to do, the results would be calculated by the Emperor himself, although he didn’t quite understand Ye Lang’s questions, but this was merely a test only, and it wasn’t the sole deciding factor of who would be the successor.

However, at this present time, the Emperor suddenly asked a question out of the blue:

“Ye Lang, I want to ask you a question.”

“?? What?”

“If I let you choose my successor, amongst these children, who would you pick?” The Emperor asked a question that shocked everyone, absolutely no one had thought that he would ask Ye Lang this type of question.

At this moment, everyone faced Ye Lang, desiring his reply, although this answer perhaps didn’t have much use, but there

were people who still took note of it.

"If you let me choose, I will choose one from amongst them." Ye Lang had betrayed everyone's expectations and had actually pointed to those who hadn't answered correctly even one question.

Was it bias?

"Don't think that I'm biased, this is what I opt for, but I also know that they maybe be better suited to be the monarch of a country." Ye Lang pointed again towards those who had answered roughly 10 questions correctly.

"??" This situation, everyone didn't understand, and the thing that made people even more confused was:

"As for her, she's the sole person that needs to be gotten rid off, she's absolutely not fit for this succession of the emperor's position!!" Ye Lang pointed at one person, the one who had answered all the questions correctly: Zhao Ya Rou!!

This had made everyone extremely baffled, he had exactly eliminated the person who had answered everything correctly, and yet felt that those who had answered 10 questions right would be more suitable, this made people not only suspect the odd criterion for Ye Lang's questions!

"Ye Lang!!" Zhao Ya Rou grit her teeth whilst looking at Ye Lang.

“Your majesty, she’s scaring me, I suggest that you kill her in order to nip the problem in the bud!” Ye Lang pointed at Zhao Ya Rou and directly said his thoughts out.

“……”

Once again, the entire area became quiet. What kind of word were these? Telling a father to kill his own daughter. Moreover, completely lacking reasoning on the subject.

“Ye Lang, why are you playing dumping again. Eighth sister, don’t mind him, he’s just this type of idiot.” Princess Qi promptly dragged Ye Lang.

“I only tell the truth. You’ll understand it later.” Ye Lang guilelessly said it, furthermore he didn’t think he said anything wrong.

“Your questions, what kind of standard did they have?” The Emperor had finally asked the vital question.

What on earth were Ye Lang’s questions?

“There was a family of three, consisting of two daughters and a mother. After the mother had passed away, the younger sister saw a noble that she didn’t see before work, it was love at first sight for her, and after a month, the younger sister had killed her older sister, why was this so?”

……

“In the past, there was a beautiful princess that was cursed by a magician, and she was locked in a castle, resting in eternal slumber. It was rumored only a kiss with deep feelings would be able to awaken the princess. Afterwards, a dashing prince took the castle by storm, saving the princess. However, once he had kissed the princess to awaken her, he was killed by the princess. Why was this so?”

……

You should understand it now, his questions were all psychological questions. Those who had answered more quesitons correctly, their hearts would be more twisted!! As for Zhao Ya Rou, who had answered everything correctly, she was definitely the most twisted one amongst them!!

Chapter 79 – Spine-Chilling Woman (2)

The reason why Ye Lang had issued these questions was not to make things difficult hoewever he pleased, but it was that he had felt that it is better to be a little perverted when being the emperor, after all, this wasn't a position that the ordinary citizen could attain.

Being a perverted person did not actually mean that they couldn't be a good emperor!

However, of the people that were here, there were quite a bit whose hearts had motes of perversion. Those that were normally rarely found, those that were extremely perverted were actually quite a few here, the facts had confirmed this, there were many who answered 5 questions correctly, and there were even people who answered 10 and above questions correctly.

But even with this, Ye Lang hadn't imagined there even existed a person that could answer all the questions correctly, and it was also a young girl that had the appearance of an angel!

Those who are just a bit twisted were suited to become the emperor, but when it's to this extent, then it wouldn't be suitable anymore. These type of people, it could be said that it would be akin to making the empire become a hell on earth!

Because of that, Ye Lang himself had placed it out of successor range!

As to why Ye Lang didn't bluntly say that these questions were psychological ones, it wasn't that he didn't want to, but there was not much use. This world didn't have this kind of concept. Even if he had said it, others would not understand it, and thus it would not serve as any kind of proof.

"For these types of questions, the lesser questions answered correctly would be better. For commoners, the best would be zero, but for you guys, it would be better if you had a bit more, but answering all the questions correctly… Forget it, I don't know how to say it, this is a situation that I've never had. Okay, you guys can solve these matters yourselves, I can't clear it up." Ye Lang shook his head with a profound manner and slowly walked out of the audience hall.

"……"

Silence……

"Little brother, since you've walked so far away already, what's there to pretend?" Ye Lan Yu said to Ye Lang, that was still keeping up an appearance, and ruthlessly knocked him once.

"Ah! We're far away ah, then let's hasten our steps, they might look for us again to ask who knows what again." Ye Lang was indeed acting it, but he had done this to avoid pointless troubles.

"If I had know earlier that it would end up like this, I would have not given those type of questions, who knew that there would be such a scary woman…"

“Little brother, what on earth did you test for?” Ye Lan Yu inevitably curiously asked.

“A person’s psyche……”

“What?”

“Even if I tell you, you won’t understand it, you’re just so dumb!”

“Bang!”

“Ah……”

“Are you asking for a spanking? You actually dared to call me stupid!”

“Then you are……” Ye Lang wanted to continue saying, but when he saw Ye Lan Yu’s small fist swaying in front of him, he had intelligently stopped.

“Ugh……”

“Just watch and see, if that woman isn’t eliminated, this palace will have a carnage sooner or later. I hope that it won’t involve me me.” Ye Lang said whilst thinking about it.

He could guess this outcome, but he didn't really care about it, because this matter was the internal affair of the imperial household. Who the Emperor was didn't really affect him much, and it was the same for the Ye Family.

Furthermore, he felt that Zhao Ya Rou was still young now, and the emperor was still in good health. Even if this storm happened, it would require about 10 years. The matter of the future is for in the future, why worry about it right now.

But will it really happen that late? Perhaps it might...

No matter what was said, today's test situation had come to the end of the phase, everyone did what they needed to do respectively, leaving only some suspicions, some thoughts, and some rancor...

.....

"Ye Lang!!"

"What is it, don't come and annoy me, I don't do duels!"

After that duel, Ye Lang was looked for by people almost every single day to have a duel with him, but this time everyone wisened up. By no means would they let Ye Lang find a substitute, setting the rule to ban the use of "people" as weapons.

As to why Ye Lang didn't have anyone looking for him in the past, but it increasing recently, apart from the precedent case of him accepting a person's duel, there was still a very important reason.

Almost everybody's evaluation of Ye Lang had increased drastically, especially because he could test the princes and princesses, and have the Emperor's "recognition". A few people had originally felt that he wasn't the type of person who would threaten others, and now they started to feel some crisis.

Those who had initially chased after Princess Qi had never taken Ye Lang as a threat, and considered him as a minor character. But now they had started to look for trouble with Ye Lang. They wanted, by any means necessary, coerce Ye Lang to void his engagement with Princess Qi.

Ye Lang wasn't so gullable as to listen to the others' requests of wanting to break off the engagement, and rescinding it. Although he didn't put this marriage in his heart, but it couldn't be done whimsically, he still had to respect Princess Qi's decision. He wouldn't be like the other people, who, for their own sake, would let others be embarrassed.

Besides, Princess Qi had said it a lot of times already, that she wanted him to block all these senseless suitors. And he was willing to be the shield, after all, Princess Qi and him were good childhood friends.

"Since you don't even have the courage to accept our duels, then how are you going to protect Princess Qi, how dare you have the

nerve to marry Princess Qi!”

“What’s there to be ashamed about, it’s okay if she likes it. Also what about my ability to protect her, do I have to tell you guys this? Anyways, currently she’s my fiancee, so you guys better give up on her!” Regarding the critique, Ye Lang wasn’t the least bit ashamed, who knows whether he’s just brazen or completely lacking scruple.

But of course, the majority had felt it was the former!

Under this situation, the shield had hindered a portion of the people……

“We cannot let such a man marry Princess Qi, if you want to marry her, you have to ask us first!”

“What a joke, who are you people. Such rubbish! Scram! Or be careful of my vengeance, this 13th young master of the Ye family is not an exhibit to watch!!” Ye Lang slightly flared up while speaking.

Once again blocking a portion of people……

“The 13th young master of the Ye family, others are scared of you, but I’m not!!” An arrogant big shot came out saying, he indeed had good background and power, this was known by each and every person, and he also represented the small minority that wasn’t afraid of Ye Lang.

“……Who are you?” Ye Lang didn’t give him face and asked. At the scene, he was the only one that didn’t know who he was.

“Ye Lang, he is the grandson of the empire’s first Sword Saint: Li Danteng!” Explained Zhen Xiaoyan.

Sword Saint, Saber Saint, and so on is a special existence. No matter where, they would get exceptional status. Especially when the person is the empire’s first Sword Saint, and when a man gets to the top, all his friends and relatives go there with him. While the Sword Saint is still healthy, his family and clan would all be well-off.

Of course, this only applies when he is still healthy, once the Sword Saint dies and his clan doesn’t have any successor that has the ability to become a Sword Saint, then their status will dramatically plummet.

“It’s an honor to meet you at last……” Ye Lang suddenly cupped one fist in the other hand, and said it seriously.

Was this his respect to the Sword Saint? That can’t be it. Knowing Ye Lang’s character, he definitely wouldn’t change his perspective just because the opponent is the Sword Saint’s family, it’s impossible even if it was the Sword Saint himself, even more so the grandson.

AN:There’s a matter, that I needed to say since a long time, that

is to thank the fellow readers?? the continuous support for xiaoxiao/laughing (from the start), at that moment it seemed like a blessing activity, that was one first time I saw your name(s), and after I would be able to see your free gifts, I wanted to tell you my thanks from the start, and I wish you a happy New Year……

Also, thank you to all those that knew, didn't know, supportive laughing readers, I wish you the best of health, and prosperity!!

[This is like a nickname for his readers since his author name is 笑笑, which is laughing]

Chapter 80 – Spine-Chilling Woman (3)

However, Li Danteng didn't know Ye Lang well, so he mistakenly thought he had frightened Ye Lang and felt complacent. He certainly pretended to be very calm, and just said with disdain, "Since you know me, let's have a duel! If you lose, cancel your engagement with Princess Qi!"

"You are really worthy of your name. Anyways, I am too busy. I don't have time to duel with you!" Ye Lang still refused.

Worthy of your name? What does it mean?

"Ye Lang, what is wrong with his name?" Zhen Xiaoyan felt puzzled and asked.

"His given name, Danteng, means he is a troublemaker!"

"...He said his name is Danteng, and you said you have heard of it. Were you referring it to this?"

"Well, such a troublemaker with such a special name is a legend..."

"..." Everyone was silent.

"Ye Lang, I want to fight with you in my grandfather's name!" Li Danteng was angry, he never imagined that Ye Lang would make

fun of his name!

“Don’t say that, or you will ruin the reputation of your grandfather. What a bad grandson!” Ye Lang shook his head and said, as if he was his grandfather.

“I want to have a duel, either you die or I die!” Li Danteng unsheathed his sword, and threw it in the air. The sword fell and was thrust with a slant into the ground.

And when he said that, everyone present became quiet, looking at him and the sword on the ground...

Such a life or death duel was unusual, because only those with deep hatred had such a duel. Both opponents in such a duel would try their best to kill their opponent!

In the past, the duel wouldn’t end until at least one party had been killed!

It seemed that Li Danteng was so irritated that he decided to have such a cruel duel with Ye Lang. In fact, he didn’t hate Ye Lang so much, and he had regretted the decision before his sword touched the ground.

At this time, Zhen Xiaoyan became furious:

“Li Danteng, are you crazy? You are a swordsman of grade seven, and he is not even a beginner. You said you want a life or death

duel with him. Are you mad? And all of you always try to have a duel with him, but he is an alchemist, not a warrior nor a magician! Don't you feel ashamed?"

"Fatty..." Said Ye Lang. He suddenly felt Zhen Xiaoyan was so strong, like a bitch, uh, no, a heroine!

But soon, Ye Lang gave up this idea, and even wanted to kick Zhen Xiaoyan out...

"It is well-known that he is useless. Do you just enjoy bullying such a useless man?"

"...Fatty, damn you."

"I am helping you. Why do you scold me?" Zhen Xiaoyan said unhappily, and she didn't think what she said offended him.

"Are you helping me? You are just insulting me! The brat called Danteng, I agree to have a duel with you. I will give you a lesson!" Ye Lang said furiously with his shoulders thrown back.

"..."

No one had ever expected that he would have his first duel because of Zhen Xiaoyan!

Yes, that was his first duel, for the previous one could not be

counted.

“Ah, you are so stupid. I don’t mean that you should agree to have such a duel. It is impossible that you can defeat him!” Zhen Xiaoyan said and pulled Ye Lang’s hand with anxiety to let him change his mind.

“I have already agreed. Just do it.” Ye Lang said and waved his hand. Then he turned around, deep in thought, and left a group of dumb people behind him.

“Li Danteng, you are dead!” Zhen Xiaoyan warned him, and then followed Ye Lang to leave.

Yes, Li Danteng was surely dead, not because he would be defeated by Ye Lang, but because he chose to have such a duel with him.

Some would protect Ye Lang no matter what cost! Even the best swordsman could not stop them and would be defeated.

Even they knew Li Danteng didn’t dare to kill Ye Lang, but they would not allow him to take the risk!

……

“My son, are you crazy? How can you agree to that?” Ye Chengtian ran into Ye Lang’s small yard and asked. He found that there were a lot of people there, includng Long An Qi, Ye Lanyu,

Princess Qi, Zhen Xiaoyan, and Ye Lang himself.

“Again, and I have explained it already so many times…” Ye Lang looked at Ye Chengtian, and said with a wry smile.

“So you all asked him about it?” Ye Chengtian looked at Long An Qi and asked.

“Of course! Why would we wait for you?” Long An Qi glanced at Ye Chengtian and said snappily.

“What is it?” Ye Chengtian asked.

“Your son said no one could intervene in it. He want to solve it himself, he wants a real duel!” Long An Qi frowned, and said with a little worry.

“Nonsense. Have you ever used any weapon? Have you ever practiced any magic? None at all!” Ye Chengtian shouted. Others might not know things about Ye Lang properly, but they were very clear about it.

It could be said that Ye Lang had never practiced any skill or magic, and he had never done some sports, so no one would think he could win against a swordsman, not to mention a swordsman of grade seven.

“I have used all weapons, and practiced magic.” Ye Lang retorted.

“You have practiced it?” Ye Chengtian was puzzled. How come he didn’t know?

Bang!

“Ah…”

Long An Qi directly slapped Ye Lang, and said angrily, “By using weapons hemeans he has ever held the weapons in his hand, and with the practicing magic he mentioned doesn’t mean he has succeeded in doing the magic!”

“……”

“No, I have really practiced magic, otherwise how can I master my alchemy. You really consider me a useless kid, but I am a man!” Ye Lang retorted.

“Well, why did you agree to have a life or death duel? You never accepted one usually.” Ye Chengtian was very puzzled and asked.

“Because I want to prove that I am not so useless, and I am also useful to some degree!” Ye Lang said, holding one brush in each of his hand.

“……”

“Stop. It seems that I have to visit Li Danteng to urge him to cancel the duel. If he doesn’t agree, I will not show mercy to him.” Ye Chengtian said with firmness.

“Honey, I support you!” Long An Qi said with hazy eyes.

“Dad, I support you too!”

“No, no, this time I want to have a real duel. Please believe me, I will defeat him without hurting myself, and will make him have trouble standing it up!” Ye Lang said very seriously.

“Standing it up? What does standing it up mean?” Princess Qi asked bepuzzled.

“…” Zhen Xiaoyan blushed, because she also had asked Ye Lang about this.

Chapter 81 - Alchemy Fighting Skills (1)

"Cough, those are just meaningless words..." Ye Lang said.

"Are you sure you can make it? Without getting injured?" Ye Chengtian questioned. He was only concerned whether his son could avoid hurting himself rather than whether he could win or not.

"I'm very sure!" Ye Lang was so serious that others felt what he said was true, temporarily, just temporarily!

"But... I will still make a trip!" Ye Chengtian said, he hesitated for a while, but didn't change his mind.

Ye Lang insisted on refusing their offer to help. He warned them that if they helped him, he would fall out with them. But his warning didn't work and they ignored him.

In the end, Ye Chengtian didn't visit Li Danteng, not because Ye lang succeeded in persuading him, but because Li Danteng took the initiative to change the life or death duel with an ordinary duel.

And such kind of replacement had almost never happened before. No one had changed the way to have a duel, but this time was different and special. No one opposed this change, on the contrary, many supported it, almost the whole city!

Perhaps it was unexpected that almost everyone in the city was on the side of Ye Lang. Hearing Li Danteng force Ye Lang to have a life or death duel, many of them rushed to the home of the first Sword Saint to accuse Li Danteng of his shameless behavior and strongly urged Li Danteng to cancel the duel.

Stemming from the pressure of the public, and from the first Sword Saint himself thinking that Li Danteng was the one to be blamed; And although he didn't want to displease the Ye family, it was also impossible to cancel the duel!

So the first Sword Saint told Li Danteng to change the type of duel, so the two sides didn't have to try to kill each other!

Although this change failed to satisfy many people, it was the only solution.

The time and place of the duel were settled. They would have a duel in the Royal College Arena seven days later, and this arena was big enough to accommodate and audience of tens of thousands.

After that, Li Danteng had been training secretly in order to win the duel. Even though his opponent was the useless Ye Lang, he had to do his utmost.

What about his useless opponent, Ye Lang?

He still attended the class in the college as usual...

"Why don't you take it seriously, Ye Lang?" Zhen Xiaoyan asked helplessly. She didn't understand why this man, who had said he would win the duel yesterday, now didn't take it seriously.

"What is it?" Ye Lang asked as if he really forgot about it.

"Your duel with Li Danteng!" Zhen Xiaoyan helplessly shook her head.

"We will have it seven days later, and why do you talk about it now?" Ye Lang remembered it, but he was not nervous.

"You should prepare yourself for that, or how can you win even without hurting yourself! Good, if you get injured or even lose any of your hair, I must punish you!" Zhen Xiaoyan held Ye Lang's hand and said fiercely.

"Fatty, it is normal for me to lose my hair. I should not be blamed!" Ye Lang said innocently.

"...Anyway, you cannot get injured or even lose any of your hair..." Zhen Xiaoyan became silent for a while and then still said so irrationally.

"This is a little difficult for me, so I have to to study on this... Well, where is my lunch?"

"Here you go. I had planned to send it to you."

After a few days, it occurred to Ye Lang that he had to confirm something, so he brought Zhen Xiaoyan to a place. When they arrived there, he was in a daze and didn't believe what he saw.

"Look at the bulletin board in the front, Fatty. Is the compensation of my victory 1 to 3 or 3 to 1?

"1 to 3, maybe. " Zhen Xiaoyan failed to tell him with certainty for she also doubted whether it was correct. In fact, it was correct! It was 1 to 3!

The compensation of their duel were what he had wanted to confirm and he never missed any chance to take a gamble.

But he never expected the odds for his victory being so low, much lower compared to Li Danteng!

What on earth was going on?

Ye Lang had no idea. In this gambling, almost all who supported Ye Lang bet on him, so that the odds became incredibly low from incredibly high.

This situation surprised many people.

"Bet on Ye Lang? Hey, don't you know he is useless? His victory is

less than one percent."

"We know!"

"Why do you still bet on him?"

"Because we like him!"

This was what some civilians said. As for those aristocrats and rich men who bet a lot on Ye Lang, their argument can be explained by the emperor, who bet a lot again on Ye Lang!

And his reason was the same -

"I know nothing about Ye Lang's ability and strength, but I know he has good luck. I believe that he will win!"

All kinds of reasons to support Ye Lang made this gamble surprising, and also made Ye Lang pleased for he knew he was so popular.

As for his low odds, he didn't mind. He had never thought about making money from the high odds and he had planned to bet on Li Danteng. He would lose the money with one hundred percent!

But this time, he could not bet on anyone!

"Why can't I bet ? Why?"

"You are in the duel. Although we believe you (perhaps), but this breaks the rule! If you want to make a bet, you can bet on yourself!" The staff in the gamble house said very humbly.

"Fuck, if I bet on myself, I will win some money. Forget it!"

"..." You're the only one who does not want to win some money, thinking about how to lose money all the time...

Then Ye Lang left the gamble house with Zhen Xiaoyan. They strolled down the streets, looking for delicious food to eat and having fun...

"Ye Lang, you should prepare yourself for the duel. Stop strolling around." Zhen Xiaoyan said in the beginning, but soon after she said -

"Ye Lang, this is very tasty, and this, this ..."

In the end, Zhen Xiaoyan totally strolled around with Ye Lang and forgot about the duel!

As the time went by, Li Danteng made an effort to train himself every day, while Ye Lang just had some fun.

Did Ye Lang completely give up making any efforts, or was he full

of confidence?

In theory, the former reason made sense and many people also thought so. In everyone's eyes, Ye Lang had never practiced any skills, so he would be certainly defeated. Since this was the case, he didn't need any preparation.

But some people believed the latter, because Ye Lang had enviably good luck. Maybe Li Danteng would be defeated before the duel, which was the main reason why they supported Ye Lang.

What was result? You will know today!

Chapter 82 - Alchemy Fighting Skills (2)

Before the duel even started, the Imperial Academy was already packed full of people. This was despite of the difficulty in obtaining a ticket for today's event. Yes, this required tickets, for the Imperial Academy to maintain order among this many people required large amounts of manpower and resources, and for them to recoup some of the cost was perfectly normal.

And most importantly, this kind of moneymaking opportunity, who would let it go to waste!!

Among the people who arrived today, from commoners to nobles to Imperial family members to the Emperor himself, members of every social class were present. At the same time, from peasants to merchants, to workers, officials etc, the various occupations were also all represented!

And yet, every person of unique background still had the exact same goal: Support Ye Lang!!

As for that person himself, Ye Lang? Was he going to be like those people thought, appearing at the last second, just like last time at Zhen Xiaoyan's competition, refusing to appear until the very end?

No, Ye Lang had arrived long ago, arriving early even compared to everyone else, using his words, "I am a person with a sense of responsibility, naturally I can't make everybody else wait for me".

Ye Lang at this time was within the arena, pacing back and forth, apparently observing his surroundings very closely, as if he was observing every inch of the ground……

"Thirteenth young master, we all support you…..!" within the arena, the spectators let out a burst of cheers in their support of Ye Lang!

"Thank you for your support, after this, I'll treat all of you to a meal!" Ye Lang smiled wryly, and cupped his hand and saluted in response.

"Thirteenth young master, we have so many people here, are you going to treat all of us out to a meal?" One person jokingly asked, he was only joking, he didn't think Ye Lang would really treat them all, there were tens of thousands of people here.

Only, Ye Lang at his core was an extremely prodigal son, he was quite satisfied having this opportunity to squander money—

"En, I'll treat all of you, no matter where you go, bring over a bill, come to my place and I'll reimburse you!"

"Hooh, Thirteenth young master, you truly are a good person! I like you!!"

"When this is over, I'm going to the best restaurant under heaven to eat dinner…."

"Two bowls of soy milk, two deep fried bread sticks, eat one and throw the other away..."

"Boss, bring me a bowl of fish bone soup to rinse my mouth..."

All of a sudden, the scene erupted, the fighting had yet to even begin and a *** phase had already begun, the sounds of support for Ye Lang grew louder and louder!

Just this vigor alone could intimidate that Li Danteng, hey!

Of course, this was just what some people thought....

"This little bastard, doesn't treat money like money, treating these tens of thousands of people out to eat, how much is this going to cost!" Long An Qi scolded from the viewing platform somewhat unhappily.

"Treating tens of thousands of people to a meal, this is a grand undertaking, practically guaranteed to be the only time this will ever occur in history!" The Emperor sadly lamented, it would appear that even him, as emperor, had never treated people to meals like this.

This kind of thing, only Ye Lang, this super prodigal son, would do, even if others were forced to admit defeat, they would not have this kind of courage, this kind of tolerance!

And this event really did become a one of a kind grand undertaking, becoming a tale that would be passed down through the generations!

When Li Danteng and the rest of his family arrived, it was almost time to start the duel, and when he found that Ye Lang had arrived at the arena long ago, he fell into a stupor.

It would seem that within their minds, Ye Lang ought to be the kind of person who arrives at the very last moment!

And thus, they started suspecting Ye Lang's motives.....

"Thirteenth young master, you arrived quite early, did you perhaps play some tricks on the arena ground?' Li Danteng said while superficially smiling.

"No, I am a gentlemen!" Ye Lang shook his head and replied.

The hidden meaning of the sentence wasn't to say Li Danteng was a scoundrel, but someone who with the thoughts of a petty man judges the actions of a gentlemen.....

"Danteng, today Grand Master Class alchemist Edward and company, are all here, if Ye Lang plays some tricks, they will definitely know." The first Sword Saint calmly remarked.

He spoke calmly, but those in the know knew, the first Sword Saint was asking Edward and company to speak up, to speak up

and verify that Ye Lang had not played any tricks!

As for why he wanted Edward and them to speak up, it was because they were the Imperial Family's Grand Master Class alchemists, and they were the world's best as well, if they said that no tricks had been played, then there were definitely none, to say nothing of Ye Lang!

Don't forget, Ye Lang is an alchemist, if he was to play tricks, he would use alchemy, at least , that's what ordinary people thought, it had to be like this!

In truth, the reason for Edward and company to come was also to watch Ye Lang, they wanted to see how Ye Lang, this alchemist, defeated others. Perhaps they could see Ye Lang using Ban's techinques!

It was common knowledge among ordinary people, Ban was an alchemy battle master, and everyone also knew, Ye Lang was the holder of Ban's alchemy notebook, he should have learned some battle skills from it.

Only, ordinary people didn't know, that Ban's alchemy notebook was currently under Ye Lang's table leg.....

"Relax, Thirteenth young master has only looked around, he hasn't done anything up to now, the ground does not have an alchemy spell formation or anything else!" Grand Master Class alchemist Edward shouted, apparently not too friendly.

This was because Grand Master Class Alchemist Edward was the same as all the other Imperial Family alchemists, they all held favorable impressions of Ye Lang, it was Ye lang who obtained Ban's alchemy notebook for them, allowing their alchemy skill to improve by leaps and bounds in recent years.

Simply speaking, the Imperial Family's alchemists were a group of Ye Lang supporters!

"True, from the very start, when you talk about alchemy, it's best to first set up an alchemy spell formation, this way you can bring out the most potential and have the highest chance of success! But you guys will definitely say that it's cheating if I do this, so I'll go easy on him, I promise that with his ability, I don't need prior preparations!" Ye Lang obediently said, every word spoken came from his heart.

Only, when others heard these words, as well as his lackadaisical tone of voice, they could feel a kind of arrogance!

"I'll let you flaunt your arrogant words for now, but I recommend that you find a doctor to watch over you from the sidelines." Li Danteng retorted in a disdainful tone.

At this moment, normal people could tell, finding a doctor was an insult, so many people grew angry, some of them even desiring to go and beat up Li Danteng.

Only, Ye Lang foolishly replied: "I already found a doctor, he's the best doctor, as long as you don't die, he can save you, but there

might be some residual effects!"

Was this rascal pretending to be stupid? Otherwise how could he be so stupid and yet astute, able to turn his opponents words against him, moreover using such a watertight argument.

"Alright, now that you're here, let's begin, you have to be careful, don't get careless, I'm very strong." Ye Lang waved his hand, five fingers spread out, palm facing forward, towards Li Danteng.

Just you, who can you scare, it would be weird if you were strong!!

It would seem that everybody had the same line of thought, they all thought these lines were randomly spouted by Ye Lang, bravado without any basis in factual reality.

"Who do you think you're scaring, I'll let you have the first move!" Li Danteng disdainfully replied.

Chapter 83 - Alchemy Fighting Skills (3)

"I am coming!" Ye Lang said and nodded, and moved his hand in the air...

What was he doing? Drawing the array? But it isn't an alchemy array? The group of Imperial Alchemists were confused.

And soon they understood that it was just meaningless action by Ye Lang, and he was really going to start now.

Ye Lang suddenly withdrew his hand to put it into the space ring, and then he pulled out something long. That was only the front part of the whole object, but it was as long as the height of an adult.

After this, the back part of the long object appeared, made up by square boxes of different sizes. Then, the last part was a long object.

Looking at it carefully, you would find that the long object was actually a cylinder, and the cylinder was empty. In a word, this was a cylinder!

The whole object was covered with a mysterious carving, the pattern of an alchemy array. The present alchemists were sure about it.

It was an item used for alchemy, and its shape looked like a big gun that could be held in hand, with a handle as well as a trigger!

At this moment, Ye Lang clutched the handle with one hand, while the other hand held the trigger below it. And then he targeted Li Danteng and then pulled the trigger...

The array on the "hand-held big gun" began to flash, and then, the cylinder emitted dazzling light...

"Fuck, hurry and create the barrier!" Those responsible for the barrier immediately took actions, for they didn't what it was about Ye Lang, but they felt danger.

"This is..." There was a glow in the alchemists' eyes, as if they saw something precious.

The "hand-held gun" emitted a straight light heading towards Li Danteng.

"?!" Li Danteng was confused about what it was, but his instinct as a swordsman made him dodge.

"Boom!" The light reached the barrier and immediately exploded. A strong gust of wind with dust spread at the barrier, and the explosion could be heard in the entire arena, even in the places far away from it.

On hearing the explosion, you could imagine how powerful the

big gun in Ye Lang's hand was. The blowing dust, as well as the cracks there, told you one thing:

The thing held by Ye Lang was absolutely horrible!

"What..."

At this moment, everyone was looking at Ye Lang with astonishment!

It was unexpected that this brat had such a horrible and hidden weapon!

"!!" Li Danteng was shocked and scared. He was wondering whether he would still be alive and standing if he got hit by the light.

And Ye Lang just said, "Not powerful enough, I must change its setting to a higher level!"

Fuck, a higher level setting?

Everyone's eyes became wider open, so were their mouths...

It was certain and obvious that the setting of the big gun could be changed, because the alchemy array on the gun was not fully activated, if fully activated, then it would be more powerful!

In addition, Ye Lang's alchemy arrays with different combination would deliver different results, which would definitely surprise everyone!

"Boom!"

Ye Lang shot him again without saying a word, and it was obviously more powerful. Fortunately, the barrier had extended the farthest, so no damage was caused!

"You did it again!" After escaping the second attack, Li Danteng said angrily.

"Why not? You are still alive!" Ye Lang said, while continuing to shoot him for the third time.

"You are so shameless. How can you use such a weapon? We are in a duel!! " Li Danteng roared with embarrassment.

"Why not?" Ye Lang stopped to look at the alchemy gun in his hand.

"Of course not, this is a foul! Have you ever seen someone use such an alchemy weapon in a duel?" Li Danteng shouted.

"But I am an alchemist. If I don't use an alchemy weapon, what should I use? Look! " Ye Lang once again pulled the trigger...

What he said made sense. As an alchemist, if he was not allowed to use the alchemy weapons, what should he use? If a warrior was not allowed to use qi, and a magician was not allowed to use magic, the duel was meaningless.

This time, Li Danteng became distracted, because his words made him mistakenly believe that Ye Lang would stop attacking him, but it turned out that Ye Lang continued to shoot him.

As a result, Li Danteng in that moment was hit for he responded a little slowly...

"Boom!"

Li Danteng was pushed away because of the explosion and found it very difficult to stay balanced, so he used his one hand on the ground to support the body. His red eyes stared at Ye Lang, but it seemed that he didn't get any serious injuries!

Well, not very serious. Although he responded a little slowly, at that moment he instinctively released qi to defend himself, with the sword blocking the light!

It was certain that his qi skills couldn't stop the attack from Ye Lang's gun, but his body was hit away. That was why his injuries were not serious!

However, both of Li Danteng's hands were shaking because of the strong hit. Now he was just looking at Ye Lang while recovering

from his injuries, rather than scolding him!

"Don't look at me like this. I will be scared, and if I am scared, I will accidentally pull..." The alchemy gun in Ye Lang's hands began to glow. He didn't intend to spare his opponent. Even though his opponent was exhausted, he continued to fight without hesitation!

"Fuck!"

Looking at the light taking shape, Li Danteng rolled on the ground. Although this was a shameful skill, it was easy and always effective in the crucial time!

Li Danteng avoided another shot. After that, he immediately got up, and then ran towards Ye Lang swiftly. Instantly they got closer!

As the grandson of the best swordsman, Li Danteng soon understood that the big gun in Ye Lang's hand was useful in a long-range attack. Although it was powerful, it was not easy to use it.

You had to wait for some time to use it for a second time, it seemed that there was a cooling time. In addition, it was hard for it to follow and hit the high-speed moving targets!

Besides, since it was a weapon for long-range attack, it would not be powerful in the short distance!

Therefore, as long as he rushed at Ye Lang during the cooling

time, the big gun in his hands would no longer hurt him!

And it was clear that Ye Lang's big gun couldn't play a role in short distance. This was expected, but it was also unexpected that-

Chapter 84 - Alchemy Genius (1)

After Li Danteng approached Ye Lang, Ye Lang casually threw away the alchemy cannon, just like that, he threw away the powerful alchemy weapon as if it was nothing important.

Because of this action, the entire stadium became speechless, including Li Danteng, who had rushed at Ye Lang!

Soon, everyone realized something, Ye Lang throwing away the alchemy cannon was a very normal tactic, at the same time, they realized that Ye Lang's alchemy weapons numbered more than one.....

"Yoohoo, watch out for bombs!" Ye Lang threw several cylindrical items from his hands, items that appeared like **, spraying them towards Li Danteng. [The ** were in the original raws]

"Bombs!?" Li Danteng immediately dodged towards the side, having heard of alchemy bombs before, and remembering the power of Ye Lang's alchemy cannon, he naturally assumed these small bombs must be quite powerful as well and cannot be disregarded.

"Boom!"

"Boom!"

"Boom....."

This prodigal son Ye Lang does not fail to disappoint, none of his alchemy items are simple, all of them are awesome to the extreme, the power of those explosions made everyone's hearts tremble!

And no one felt this better than Li Danteng, he dodged up and down, right and left, dodging each dangerous explosion, but under the sheer numbers, in the end he was unable to avoid escaping without injury, no, the outcome was he was unable to escape with an undamaged shirt, the clothes on his entire body were reduced to rags.

The only thing unknown was, was it only his clothes that were reduced to such a state, or was his body just as badly injured!

Ye Lang, on the other hand, was currently standing there, lost in thought, either contemplating his next move, or admiring his handiwork!

"You bastard, I'll kill you!!" Seeing Ye Lang standing there, rejoicing at his misfortune, Li Danteng, who could not bear to be humiliated, lost a bit of his rationality, forgetting about his resolution of only going as far as necessary, a policy adopted while fearing the retaliation of the Ye family.

"Oh, since you want to kill me, then I suppose I can only kill you!" Ye Lang peacefully remarked before taking out a miniaturized cannon, yes, the shape was approximately the same as the alchemy

cannon, but the size was much smaller, only about half the length of a rifle.

Ho, this fellow's bag of tricks truly has no bottom, after throwing away the large one he still has a small one.

However, this small one ought to be much simpler than the large one, the power might be reduced a bit, but the flexibility must be much greater, moreover, even if the power is reduced a bit, it's still terrifying!

The only thing is, this weapon, is the only difference an issue of power?

"Bang!"

When Li Danteng wanted to use his earlier countermeasure against the cannon, he found to his surprise that the miniature alchemy cannon in Ye Lang's hands had no flash whatsoever, apparently, the top of the cannon lacked an alchemy spell.

Moreover, from the black barrel of the cannon appeared a black object, and not a ray like beam of magic!

Regardless of what this object was, Li Danteng felt like it wasn't simple, best to avoid it for now, only, he found that it might be too late!

When that black object entered the air, it suddenly opened up a

net, with the whole net flying towards Li Danteng, the net became bigger and bigger as it approached, cutting off all of Li Danteng's escape paths as if it was a net from the heavens.....

Li Danteng had no place to run to, but he could draw his sword, draw his sword and cut his way out through the net!

But how could Ye Lang's net be so simply cut through by a sword, Li Danteng's sword full of douqi was unable to damage the net at all. Moreover, he was completely unable to cause any changes to the net at all.

After coming into contact with Li Danteng, the net immediately surrounded and entangled him within. The net became tighter and tighter and Li DanTeng's helpless struggling only served to accelerate his entanglement within the net.

Strength, douqi.....

From A to Z, nothing could cause any kind of harm to the net!!

This was specially made by ye Lang, to say nothing of Li Danteng, even if it was his grandfather, he would also not be able to escape this net, if people knew what this net was made of, there undoubtedly would be multitudes of people cursing Ye Lang for being so prodigal!!

This was an exceedingly rare and valuable material, it was silk produced by a special arachnid monster during a special phase of

its life, capable of cutting off all douqi and magic, as well as possessing superb toughness, it was an excellent item for robbing and killing.

Cough, cough, this type of silk was usually used for locking up experts.

And this material was exceedingly rare, an entire empire did not have much of it, apparently not even enough to make Ye Lang's net, this type of equipment, others did not even dare to imagine it!

Ye Lang's miniature cannon contains many different things inside, amongst them were nets that come with different specifications and functions, but he only had this one net made with these materials. He would like to make more, but there really was no more material, this one net was something he obtained at an auction in a stroke of good fortune.

Now Ye Lang really could tell Ye Lanyu and co that his daily trips to the auction house were not in vain, these family hurting activities are not completely without use!

Of course, this net is not so simple as to rely only on its construction material, it also has other components included as well, added in is a custom mechanism to allow it to instantly expand to cover a great area, and once it has trapped someone, it instantly shrink, not allowing the victim to move a muscle!

And once anyone has been captured by the net, the only result is to be reduced to a prisoner, of course, the prerequisite is to be

captured by the net....

"Stop futilely struggling, do you have any last words, say them now!" Ye Lang's declaration made Li Danteng feel indignant, indignant that he had been defeated in such a manner.

He wanted to loudly curse out, wanted to call out Ye Lang's methods as despicable, always using these weird gadgets, but when he looked at Ye Lang, he instantly swallowed his words, because he was afraid of infuriating Ye Lang, if that happened, he would pay with his life!

Why would Ye Lang give off that kind of feeling! Rubbish, when you see someone carrying that big an alchemy cannon, especially when that cannon is being aimed at you, you would feel the same!

Ye Lang, at this moment, had already picked up the alchemy cannon he had tossed aside earlier and was about to fire at Li Danteng.

"I admit defeat!" Li Danteng clearly understood the situation he was in and immediately raised the white flag.

If you don't surrender, would you really let others blow you apart?

It appeared that Ye Lang was the only one who didn't hear, continuing adjustments on the alchemy cannon....

"Ye Lang!! He has already surrendered, you can stop now!" The first Sword Saint somewhat horridly called out.

"Why would I stop just because he surrendered? He just said he wanted to kill me, so I will kill him!" Ye Lang stupidly said, making people feel as if his brain just short circuited.

This is what worried the number one Sword Saint, Ye Lang has always been regarded as a fool, even if Ye Lang killed Li Danteng now, others would just feel that this was just a foolish action of his, and would forgive his actions.

But Li Danteng being eliminated like this, to his family and friends was definitely not a good thing!

Chapter 85 – Alchemy Genius (2)

“You can’t be like this, I’ve already surrendered, those words just now were just said in anger, I didn’t really want to kill you……” Li Danteng hurriedly explained, he definitely didn’t want to be killed off like this.

“All villains would say that at this time, so, you are also a villain, you ought to die!” As soon as Ye Lang finished speaking, he pulled the trigger, the alchemy cannon started to shine…..

“Stop!” The first Sword Saint suddenly jumped up, with one slash he smashed apart the thrall everyone had fallen into, demonstrating the first Sword Saint’s extraordinary ability, another second and he arrived in front of Li Danteng.

“You came at just the right time!” Ye Lang smiled and said, causing many people to feel confused, what is this ‘just the right time’ you speak of, doesn’t this mean you can’t kill Li Danteng?

“Ice, fire, wind, earth, fully display your powers!”

Zzzzzzzzzzzz….

Four lines of differently colored light blended and weaved together, rotating at high speed, and came together to form a new gorgeous 4 colored beam.

If before, Ye Lang’s alchemy cannon was emitting light about the

size of an arm, now it was a leg, and it was the leg of a fat person too!

The difference was not a little either, therefore, the power.....

“Boooooooooom!”

The first Sword Saint, under these conditions, could only face his sword forward, instantly displaying his strongest douqi, and put his life on the line to block that 4 colored beam, because if he were to dodge, then Li Danteng would undoubtedly die!!

Speaking of which, why didn’t he just directly pick up Li Danteng and leave? This wasn’t because he wasn’t thinking, but because he was unable to do so, this was because, not only did Ye Lang’s net entrap him, it also had mechanisms to anchor it to the ground, pinning the victim down, unless Ye Lang undid the mechanism, there was no way to quickly unbind the net from the ground.

Within the arena, brilliant light radiated everywhere!

The first Sword Saint indeed lived up to his name, as he was able to be the match of that 4 colored beam.....

That’s right, he was able to evenly match the 4 colored beam, this result surprised everyone, of course they weren’t surprised by the power of the first Sword Saint, but rather surprised by the power displayed by Ye Lang’s toy, to think that it could evenly match the first Sword Saint.

Of course, everyone knew that if it wasn't under extraordinary circumstances, that toy would not be able to hit the first Sword Saint, at least definitely not if done frontally!

Only, if it was used in an ambush, catching the opponent off guard, the danger would definitely be great……

The light gradually faded, the first Sword Saint's silhouette was reflected in everyone's eyes, and his appearance made everyone more surprised at Ye Lang's alchemy weapon.

"Huu huu….."

The first Sword Saint was somewhat exhausted, the exchange just now weakened him somewhat, thus for a while, he only stared at Ye Lang without speaking…..

"Hmmmm, it was blocked, not bad at all, let's test the power of space again….. special pattern: space….."

Ye Lang's speech and actions caused people's eyes to fall out of their sockets!

Again? Fuck, this toy was too abnormal….

At this moment, many people believed that if Ye Lang was too fire again, the first Sword Saint very likely would perish, this

would be the most bizarre ending for a Sword Saint, and also the most unjust.

That kind of thing would make him the most pitiful Sword Saint!

And Ye Lang, his reputation would skyrocket, only, it felt like this kind of ending was too wasteful, could the grand first Sword Saint really meet his end like this?

But thinking about it, this seems to be Ye Lang's favorite activity —being prodigal!!

Isn't that so? For the first Sword Saint to be killed off just like this, isn't this wasteful? From a certain viewpoint, this is also prodigal behavior, but now the family was the country!

[TL note: wordplay going on here, 败家 is being translated as prodigal, it literally means damaging the family and country is written as 国家 where both terms share a common second character which means family. The author is making a pun where Ye Lang is being a prodigal son to the country as a whole.]

Stop him, he must be stopped!

Many people began yelling to stop, among them was the emperor, but the words of these people seemed to have no effect on Ye Lang, until...

"Little bastard, stop right there for your mother!!" Long An Qi angrily shouted.

“……”

“Ai, what a pity….” Ye Lang packed up his things, not only his alchemy cannon, but also the net on Li Danteng, Ye Lang knew it was time to call it a day.

As for what he found a pity, it obviously wasn’t the fact that he was unable to kill Li Danteng, in reality, he had never put Li Danteng in his eyes to begin with, he only wanted to test how powerful the first Sword Saint really was, wanted to know if his alchemy cannon could kill off the first Sword Saint, this kind of august figure.

Before when he said he wanted to kill off Li Danteng, in reality he wanted to draw out the first Sword Saint, that was why he spoke and waited, otherwise he would have directly fired a cannon blast and solved the problem.

And so, he was now feeling disappointed, he had yet to finish testing and it was over already, but he had already achieved his objective, from the four element bombardment’s result’s just now, he already calculated a corresponding equation!

That is to say, he already knew all of the ratios, apart from special categories!

“Ye Lang!!” when Li Danteng’s net was retracted, he used a voice full of loathing to hoarsely shout at Ye Lang.

“What? Want to treat me to dinner? I don’t have time.” Ye Lang clapped his hands and walked off the stage.

“I want a fair fight with you, you can’t use those odd gadgets.” Li Danteng refused to admit his defeat.

“Once again I will remind you, I am an alchemist, the techniques I use to battle are these, if you refuse to admit defeat, then talk to me on the day I become a warrior!” Ye Lang casually remarked and continued on his way.

On the day you become a warrior? Is it possible for you to become a warrior? You attribute-less piece of trash, you have no hope at all!

Only.....

For this attribute-less piece of trash to achieve such a high level in alchemy, truly nobody could have foreseen it!

But this line of thought was only present within the grand master class alchemists present at the scene, everybody else generally thought Ye Lang’s weapons were obtained with money, if he had no money, he definitely wouldn’t amount to much!

Indeed, without money, Ye Lang’s alchemy weapons would not be this powerful, and there wouldn’t be this many powerful alchemy equipment either, but this was only the foundations of his

weapons, if he didn't have a certain degree of skill in alchemy, he wouldn't be able to create things like these at all.

And because of this, in the following days, the grand master class alchemists frequently paid vists to Ye Lang, and at the same time examined some of Ye Lang's alchemy items, they became more and more certain of Ye Lang's innate skill with alchemy as the days passed!

But let's not talk about that now, the people within the stadium slowly began to react to the situation before them, Ye Lang had already won!!

"Whoa, Thirteenth young master really won!"

"I know, who knew!"

"Luckily I supported Thirteenth young master, otherwise I would've lost money for nothing!"

"Yep yep, I also supported Thirteenth young master and won a lot of money, I can treat everybody to dinner!"

"Psssh, treating us to dinner, are you as generous as Thirteenth young master, he outright offered to treat all of us to dinner! Tens of thousands of people!!"

"That's……"

“.....”

In a short period of time, the atmosphere of the arena boiled over, everyone was celebrating having won money, of course, they were also celebrating Ye Lang’s victory, celebrating that he wasn’t worthless.

Even though he has no attributes, but he can still be domineering, he can still fight on par with the first Sword Saint, of course, this train of thought wasn’t quite perfect, but who cares about that!

This was also the first time Ye Lang had demonstrated his prowess, letting people know, that even trash are not people to be angered!!

Chapter 86 – Alchemy Genius (3)

“Oh Chengtian, your family’s little brat is full of surprises everytime!” The Emperor humorously remarked to Ye Chengtian, although that was what he said, however it seemed like he was used to it and considered it normal.

All in all, this time Ye Lang only revealed his alchemy weapons to clinch a surprise victory, anyone else could have done it as well.

Under the gaze of the celebrating packed arena, Li Danteng could only feel more and more humiliated, he had never considered the possibility he might lose, and furthermore lose in such a simple way, he was utterly unable to retaliate!!

He would not admit defeat, absolutely not!!

“Ye Lang! Stop right there!!” Li Danteng took advantage of when the first sword saint wasn’t paying attention and suddenly rushed forward, rushing at Ye Lang, furthermore in his rage, he unleashed the strongest douqi attack he had ever used in his life!

Just like this, under the watching eyes of the entire stadium, he carried out a despicable act, an act that would not allow him to raise his head ever again in his life, he attacked a person with his back turned!

Ye Lang was calmly walking in front, apparently he hadn’t noticed the powerful douqi attack pressuring his back.....

At this moment, everybody wanted to block Li Danteng, and stop him from harming Ye Lang, this person who everybody wanted to protect!

The first Sword Saint, who was closest, also wanted to block the blow, but not to protect Ye Lang, but to protect his grandson, stop him from going too far and bringing disaster on himself, ruining his entire life!

However he had let himself be distracted for a moment, right now he wanted to rush over there, but he didn't know if he could make it in time, he could only rush over as fast as he could and hope for the best!

As for everybody else?

When even the first Sword Saint, who was the closest, could only do this much, there was no need to speak of anyone else, apart from watching the events develop, at most they could only loudly shout.....

"Little brother, be careful!!"

"Ye Lang!"

Ye Lan Yu, Princess Qi, etc.., cried out in alarm, warning Ye Lang, furthermore, they even one by one jumped up and started running towards Ye Lang, even though they knew they couldn't

catch up, but could they sit or stand still and do nothing?

"What now, why are you shouting...." Ye Lang turned around and said as he scratched his head, and when he saw the powerful douqi attack coming towards him, he appeared to be stunned and didn't move at all.

Idiot, fool, can't you even dodge a little?

Ye Lan Yu and company silently scolded in their hearts, even though they knew that even if Ye Lang were to dodge, he wouldn't necessarily be able to dodge the range of the douqi, it's just that, looking at Ye Lang not moving at all like this made them all very panicked!

No, it's not that he wasn't moving at all, everybody suddenly discovered Ye Lang's hand was rapidly moving through the air, leaving behind confusing and mysterious tracks in the air.....

"Alchemy spell!"

The eyes of the great master class alchemists lit up, they quickly found out what Ye Lang was drawing in the air, it was definitely some kind of alchemy spell, but as for what this alchemy spell's function was, that was very hard to determine.

This was because nobody could know what an incompletely formed alchemy spell's result would be, the difference between two alchemyl spell formations was just a little, and this small

difference could cause the alchemy spell to become something completely different!

At this moment, the great master class alchemists were very excited, because at this moment, they could finally consider themselves to be witnessing a real alchemy battle, directly using one's own alchemy skills to battle, this was far more difficult than using alchemy weapons, the power could be significantly less than the alchemy weapons, however it did have the most advantageous trait:

Flexibility!

Very quickly, everybody realized Ye Lang was using an alchemy spell, and they also understood what kind of spell it was, because the results were placed in front of them, and it was a very flashy too!

Everybody could see as Li Danteng's douqi attack came infinitely close to Ye Lang, a round alchemy spell appeared, the alchemy spell released a dreamy brilliance....

As the douqi approached, the alchemy spell stopped it, unable to advance even an iota towards Ye Lang, who was a hair's breadth away, all of the douqi was blocked just a small distance away!

Looking at these circumstances, everybody present could breathe a sigh of relief in their hearts, regardless of whether Ye Lang's alchemy spell had completely blocked the douqi attack, at the very

least, it had bought some time, this bit of time was sufficient for others to save him.

But very quickly, everybody shockingly discovered that Ye Lang's alchemy spell did not simply block, after blocking Li Danteng's douqi attack, it started to rebound back towards the origin, completely reflecting the attack!

"Water Moon Mirror!?"

How was this possible, how could he use such a high level spell? Moreover, how could Water Moon Mirror be so small?

There was only one alchemy spell capable of completely reflecting douqi and magic, and that was Water Moon Mirror, but normally, Water Moon Mirror was a super massive spell that required many people to work together to arrange, never before had anyone been able to use it by themselves, in addition, doing it empty handed to boot!!

Besides, Water Moon Mirror had a diameter of at least 10 meters, Ye Lang's on the other hand wasn't even 2 meters!

That isn't to say making it small to this extent was impossible, it's just that to shrink it to this size, the complicated alchemy spell simply could not fit inside it, at least, up until this point nobody had been able to do it.

Still, Ye Lang just now seemed like he didn't use much time, were

his hands really fast, able to complete the alchemy spell in such a short time, or was it something else?

Right now, nobody could understand what was truly going on, they only knew that Ye Lang's Water Moon Mirror mini edition had just appeared and it's functionality was perfect!

"?!" when Li Danteng discovered his own douqi was being reflected back at him, he immediately became dumbfounded, and with regards to his astonishment, the douqi came back at him awaiting his response.

"Boom!"

"Aaaaaah...!"

Li Danteng was struck by his douqi attack, flying straight backwards, spraying blood everywhere from the power of his attack, simultaneously letting out a blood-curdling shriek at an appropriate time!!

When one launches an all-out attack, often one does not possess any kind of defense, in this manner, Li Danteng took his own strongest attack while having no defenses!

These circumstances, I believe anyone could imagine...

Even if you don't die, you'll be crippled!!

“You’re quite pitiful! But, you’re not worthy of people’s pity!!” Ye Lang spoke dully, finally, he didn’t forget to do one last act of kindness—

“Doctor, please go save him, otherwise he might die. Better a bad life than a good death, but then again this doesn’t count as a good death.....”

“.....”

If he’s lucky, he’ll be crippled. Ye Lang didn’t say these words, he felt that this would make people depressed, he was a good person, he wouldn’t say such hurtful words.....

Cough, cough No matter what, this was Li Danteng getting what he deserved, if he hadn’t provoked Ye Lang, if he didn’t insist on pursuing that matter, if he hadn’t attempted to sneak attack just now, he wouldn’t have an end like this!

But if it wasn’t like this, nobody would know that Ye Lang, this piece of trash, was actually a talented and frightening alchemy genius, he was a trashy genius!

After gaining understanding of that Water Moon Mirror mini edition, everybody became even more sure of this fact, it turns out that the Water Moon Mirror mini edition was improved into its present form by Ye Lang, it was solely a unidirectional defensive alchemy spell. It could only reflect some things, and it wasn’t like the original, capable of reflecting anything, and thus it could do

without much of the alchemy spell.

And more mysteriously, Ye Lang could adapt it to different circumstances and use different forms of Water Moon Mirror. With such a strong focus, even if it was an even more accomplished great master class alchemist, they would still be unable to do this.

This was already no longer within the domain of natural gifts or studying, this was more about observation, reaction time, the nimbleness and accuracy of the hands etc.....

What a fearsome Thirteenth young master of the Ye family!!

Chapter 87 – Cousin (1)

It was dawn within the Ye family's courtyard named Beneath the Gentle Waves, who knew when Ye Lang had chosen such a grand and majestic name! [Lang in Ye Lang means wave(s)]

Many people had asked the meaning behind the name, but Ye Lang would only reply, there is no hidden meaning, it's just a name.

Within the courtyard, Ye Lang sat looking ahead, lost in thought, as if he could see the beautiful figure of Tigress dancing before him.....

Who knew how Tigress was doing, was she still like she was before? She ought to have grown a lot, these 5 years, they had all been growing under the influence of puberty.

Hey hey, perhaps Tigress's small dumplings had become large steamed buns.....

"Little brother, why are you smiling, why is your smile so weird?" As soon as Ye Lan Yu walked in, she noticed the slightly lewd smile on Ye Lang's face.

"Never mind! Taking into consideration your circumstances, I don't think they'll become large steamed buns." Ye Lang shook his head and then looked at Ye Lan Yu's chest, that chest that could only be described as not lacking, but yet not bountiful.

“?? What steamed buns?” Ye Lan Yu was confused, but if she knew what Ye Lang was thinking right now, she would immediately send him flying with a single kick.

“Steamed buns, of course it’s the steam buns you eat!” Ye Lang said with a deadpan expression “Sister, I’m not going to school today, didn’t I already discuss this with you yesterday?”

“I know it’s because you wish to avoid those people, but they’ve already chased you to here, they’re right outside the front gate, are you sure you don’t want to meet them?” Ye Lan Yu asked with a smile.

“Won’t meet them! Tell them I don’t have anything more to give them, I’ve already given them enough, go research the rest yourselves!” Ye Lang frowned while wrinkling his eyebrows.

“I know, so I already chased them all away!” Ye Lan Yu said while smiling as before, with her understanding of Ye Lang, she naturally knew whether or not Ye Lang wanted to meet people, and at the same time, she didn’t wish for people to bother her little brother.

“Then why did you run here to ask me?” Ye Lang offhandedly remarked.

“I came just to see you, can’t I?” Ye Lan Yu replied while pinching Ye Lang’s cheeks with a smile.

She came here purely to see Ye Lang, when it came to chances to be with Ye Lang, she definitely wouldn't let them pass by, these actions could be described positively as treasuring her brother or negatively as excessive pampering!

"No……"

"You can't say no!" Ye Lan Yu pinched Ye Lang's nose while smiling wryly

"I didn't' say no, I was trying to say "no comment" ah" Ye Lang grabbed his nose and cried out, his face still looking foolish.

"That's more like it" Ye Lan Yu smiled.

"It's not like it would matter even if I had an opinion, until you get a boyfriend, I can only play that role! Ai, who knows if you'll be able to get married in this lifetime, if you don't, won't I be pestered to death!" Ye Lang grieved while staring at the sky. But it appeared he didn't notice that his sister next to him had already started erupting as a result of his words.

"Thump!"

Ye Lan Yu viciously smacked Ye Lang's head and furiously roared: "Isn't the reason I, your older sister, have no boyfriend because you keep on scaring them away brat, yet you're so full of excuses!"

Ye Lan Yu was young and beautiful. She possessed a beautiful appearance, powerful strength, and an even more powerful background. This kind of young lady naturally had many suitors, and naturally some of them would be suitable.

Only, those Ye Lan Yu considered suitable, Ye Lang would nevertheless consider unsuitable and always find some problems. If he couldn't find any problems, he would even outright reject them. In this manner he stubbornly kept Ye Lan Yu's "romantic love" in a state of failing for no reason!

These circumstances gave Long An Qi and Ye Lan Yu headaches. But they nevertheless couldn't bear to scold Ye Lang. They could only leave matters where they stood for the time being.

If Ye Lan Yu were to choose, she would also definitely choose Ye Lang, and not her own romance!

Even if it was real love, she might still give it up, to say nothing of these relationships that were only at the level of favorable impressions.

"Really? How come I don't remember anything like that?" Ye Lang wore an innocent expression, he wasn't faking, rather, he had completely forgotten these events, he completely did not feel like they were worth discussing!

"Forget it, it's too much trouble to hold you accountable, if your sister can't get married later, you'll just have to deal with it!

Hmph!!” As soon as Ye Lan Yu finished her hmph, she left the courtyard and went off to school, of course, before leaving she kissed the cheek of Ye Lang out of habit, yes. In her eyes, Ye Lang’s face was eternally the face of her cute little brother!

“If you can’t get married, you can’t get married, I can take care of you for life, I won’t ever let anyone bully you, won’t let you cry.” Ye Lang stupidly said, not realizing that this was selfish, not letting Ye Lan Yu obtaining the happiness she deserved.

Perhaps, this was just his temporary way of thinking, at the moment, he didn’t want his sister to leave him, he wanted to stick to his sister and throw tantrums; perhaps deep in his heart, he likes to seize onto Ye Lan Yu without letting go, very selfishly not letting her get married.

Ye Lang appeared to have said these words for himself to hear, and not for Ye Lan Yu, who had already exited the front gate of the courtyard, but he didn’t expect...

...

“Remember these words, I definitely won’t let you forget!!” Ye Lan Yu’s cute head stuck out from behind the front gate, and said those words to Ye Lang with a smile.

In reality, after being surprised by Ye Lang’s words, she had stood completely immobile outside the gate for a while. Only later did she go back to the gate.

Ye Lang remained silent briefly. “How are your ears like Tigress, able to hear quiet sweet words like these!”

“Of course, women’s ears are all excellent, so, in the future you better not talk behind my back, you can only say some good things, like how I’m beautiful beyond compare.” Ye Lan Yu cheekily replied.

“You really have no shame!” Ye Lang very straightforwardly retorted.

“……, Brat, I’ll teach you a lesson after I get home!!” Ye Lan Yu’s expression dropped, left behind some empty angry words, and left, this time leaving for real.

After a while,

“Little brother….”

An affectionate voice called over, did that cow ye Lan Yu come back once again? No, definitely not, from Ye Lang’s reaction, it could be seen that was not the case.

“Crap, I’m not here!!” Ye Lang immediately jerked his head and ran inside his house and closed the door, he also didn’t forget to give himself away by shouting that he wasn’t here.

“….What an idiot, “I’m not here”, then who replied to me?” A young lady appeared within the courtyard and immediately walked

in front of the doors and directly kicked them open……

“Little brat, you dare to pretend you’re not here, if you don’t agree to do what your big sister tells you to this time, big sister will teach you why the flowers are so red!!”

“Why?” Ye Lang’s head poked out and curiously asked. However he quickly came to his senses, he shouldn’t have appeared, at this time he should’ve hidden.

“Think I can’t catch you!” The young lady would definitely not let go of this chance and directly grabbed hold of Ye Lang and pulled him out!

What an idiot, to go as far as asking why!

The young lady truly did not know how to deal with Ye Lang, if he was called stupid, he had so much talent, but if he was called smart, he acted like a fool on the contrary!

“Let go, let go, I can’t promise you anything, you should just go back now!” Ye Lang slapped at the young lady’s hand and struggled.

“Big sister’s problem isn’t that hard, why won’t you agree!!” The young lady released him and unhappily complained. “Not hard? Have mercy cousin, what kind of ideal beauty do you want me to help you create, before talking about whether I’m willing, even if you wanted me to go to your house to work, I can’t make this

promise. This kind of undertaking can't be completed without at least half a year of work!!" Ye Lang said grumpily.

Cousin? That's right, this young lady was Ye Lang's cousin, and not from his paternal side, thus she did not possess the air of a young lady of the Ye family.

Besides, this cousin was not from the Ye Jia's side, that is to say, she was unrelated to Ye Chengtian, she was not related to anyone on his side of the family, she belonged to Long An Qi's birth family.

This cousin did not appear suddenly, after several years apart, she had come to visit the Ye family to drop in on Long An Qi. Normally, she would play together with Ye Lang and Ye Lan Yu. She was also a cousin who doted dearly on Ye lang!

And this time, after she heard Ye Lang was able to turn Zhen Xiaoyan into a captivating beauty in a short period of time, she immediately put aside all other matters to immediately ask Ye Lang why he didn't help her do a bit of makeup, of course, in the process, she could get Ye Lang to help her develop a perfect figure and temperament.

Only, Ye Lang never had much interest towards these matters, completely ignoring this cousin of his!

Why care about her, she was already a hard to find beauty, and her temperament was refined as well, for her to still be greedy and desiring to become more beautiful, how were others supposed to

live? And so, Ye Lang firmly opposed this matter!

But then again, there was one major flaw on her body, that was, on her forehead there was a long scar. She would always use her bangs or a headband to cover it up and not let it significantly hurt her appearance!

This scar, it seemed it was more or less related to Ye Lang, at the time the two of them were both small, Ye Lang was foolishly running around everywhere, one time he was about to be hit by a carriage, yet he didn't move or dodge, luckily his cousin was there and saved him, yet she herself received a scar as a result...

Ai, in short, this was a sorrowful memory!

And Ye Lang, apparently had already completely forgotten this event!

Originally, this kind of scar, if it had been left on someone else, it would've easily been removed, during treatment, regardless of magic or alchemy, there were methods to avoid scarring, but this cousin's physique was very strange, regardless of any method, they all had no effect.

This incident also made everyone aware of this cousin's strange physique, apart from natural healing, other things had no effect on her!

Because of this, after this, she would also be very careful to treat

scars and maintain her health, deathly afraid that she would once again end up with untreatable scars!

Perhaps, this scar also caused Ye Lang to recall his feelings for her, but even if that wasn't the case, they would still remember this scar, these feelings.

Because, the past could not be changed!

And as for whether Ye Lang had really forgotten? Perhaps.

Chapter 88 – Cousin (2)

A beautiful day with white clouds and fine weather. Within this little bubble, the weather is so peaceful…….

Ye Lang was currently staring at the sky, lost in thought!

“Why can’t you agree? It’s not a problem if you come to my house and live there for half a year, your big sister will dote on you!” Ye Lang’s cousin grabbed his ear and continued nagging.

“I know you dote on me, but your house is too far away. I think it’s in the Vermillion Bird Empire’s capital, it’s several hundred kilometers away from here, I can’t go somewhere that far away!” Ye Lang stupidly replied, he was not willing to go to the Vermillion Bird Empire, he absolutely didn’t want to!

“What? I doted on you for nothing! In the future, see if I still treat you so well!” Ye Lang’s cousin pouted, these words definitely had a threatening undertone. However, these words had apparently already been said several times before.

“I got it I got it, you’ve already stayed here for several days, you should start heading back.” Ye Lang carelessly replied while digging around in his ears.

According to past experience, when this cousin came to visit, she wouldn’t stay for too long. Although she would come every few years, but every time she visited, she would not stay for more than a month. It appeared that her status would not let her stay for that

long.

What was her identity? This, Ye Lang did not know at all, he didn't even know what his own mother's family did, nor did he know what their exact status was, only that they were a prestigious family in the Vermillion Bird Empire.

About this matter, his mother didn't really speak about it to Ye Lang, only Ye Chengtian had mentioned something a couple of times before.

Regardless, his mother's family definitely wasn't simple, that could be inferred just from looking at his mother and cousin!

And it seemed that this wasn't just because of Ye Lang's character being one that didn't ask for clarification, even if he had asked, he wouldn't have obtained much information. Long An Qi's status was very murky among the Ye family, only the general outline was known.

When even the Ye family was in such a state, others don't even need to be mentioned!

When it comes to people who really knew, only a few people within the entire Soaring Sky Empire knew. These people could be counted on the fingers of one hand. Fortunately, among these few people was the person with the most authority in the Empire, so the matter could be allowed to slide. What? Who in the Empire had the most authority? Isn't it obvious? It's the ruler of the country, the Emperor!

“That’s true, a long time has passed yet again… I’m starting my return trip tomorrow. Little idiot, does my problem really have no solution?” Ye Lang’s cousin peacefully spoke, her tone turning soft, at the same time carrying undertones of grief.

Every time she came to visit, she knew there would be a day when she would have to leave. At the same time, she also knew she would be sad and depressed. Only, she still couldn’t help but come and see this stupid little cousin of hers.

“No.” Ye Lang shook his head: “Honestly, your problem isn’t hard. Even though there’s no way to change your physique, this can still be resolved from the outside”

“??” Ye Lang’s cousin looked at him with an uncomprehending expression.

“In simple terms, the solution is just to directly rub away your scar, then deal with your skin. This way, the scar on your forehead can be removed!” Little Ye Lang once again explained.

“Really? What does that require, and how much time would it take? Does it hurt?” Ye Lang’s cousin asked excitedly.

“I already have the materials and not much time is required, it can be finished today and you can leave happily tomorrow. As for whether it hurts or not, this I don’t know! Heh Heh…” Ye Lang evilly laughed, very clearly desiring revenge on his cousin.

“Pow!” Ye Lang’s cousin smashed her fist on top of Ye Lang’s head, her dissatisfaction plastered across her face.

“Why’d you hit me again?” Ye Lang stupidly asked.

“What do you think?!” His cousin unhappily replied. “If you had an idea, and it can even be done in one day, then why didn’t you bring it up until now, causing me to have to ask you for help every day! Did you enjoy the feeling of the situation?!”

It turns out it was for this reason, and not because of Ye Lang wanting revenge. But then again, this kind of situation would definitely also cause a person to feel displeased!

“This… I wasn’t enjoying it, I was preparing the materials, I wanted to give you a pleasant surprise. Also, if you got better, and left immediately, then we would once again have to wait a long time before meeting again.”

Within these words, one could feel that it seemed he also greatly liked this cousin. Perhaps it’s because of the scar she received trying to save him, and perhaps, the reason he didn’t want to remove the scar quickly was also because he wanted to leave behind that memory of that period of normal and yet abnormal sibling camaraderie.

Ye Lang’s cousin blanked out for a while. Only after a period of time did she open her mouth to say:

“Little fool, how could your older sister bear to leave early, it’s only our problem... Ai, forget it, even if I talked about it with you, you wouldn’t understand. If you weren’t the Ye family’s young master and if I wasn’t... We wouldn’t have so many problems!”

Ye Lang’s cousin’s tone was very warm, and within it, leaked a complicated feeling. Furthermore, she revealed that for Ye Lang’s parents to be together, they must’ve gone through many twists and turns.

“??” Ye Lang didn’t understand these things, he didn’t understand it at all.

“Let’s not talk about this anymore. Older sister wrongly blamed you just now, I’ll make it up to you, does it hurt?” Ye Lang’s cousin caressed the area she had just whacked, a look of regret and pain on her face.

“It doesn’t hurt, I’m used to it, you guys all like to hit my head, I don’t think I even need to train in the art of the iron head to develop an iron head” Ye Lang shook his head and said.

His cousin didn’t reply. She only quietly stared at her own younger cousin.

“Idiot!” Ye Lang’s cousin in one move embraced Ye Lang in a hug. “You are such an idiot!”

“??” Ye Lang didn’t understand. What was wrong with his cousin, why did it seem like she was very moved all of a sudden?

Even though he didn’t understand, he didn’t try to understand, because he thought being hugged like this was very comfortable.

After a very, very long time, the two of them didn’t even know how long had passed, they finally parted!

“Cousin, do you want me to do it for you now, we can go play after and you won’t need to wear a veil anymore.” Ye Lang said after they parted.

“Let’s go play now, we can wait until night to do it. Either way, even if it was healed, I would still have to wear a veil here anyways…” His cousin wryly smiled.

“Why? Are you too ashamed?” Ye Lang asked, puzzled.

“Sometimes I really want to rip your mouth off!” His cousin angrily said. “Even though your meaning isn’t quite right, but there is some truth in that statement, your cousin cannot be seen here.”

“??” Ye Lang’s face was full of confusion and at this time, he appeared to remember that his cousin would not wear a veil only in front of him and a few others, in front of everyone else, she would always wear the veil.

Ye Lang at the start had immediately thought this was because she didn't want others to see her scar, so she covered everything up, now he thought that didn't seem quite right.

His cousin only had to dress up a little in order to completely cover the scar, which would allow her to show her beautiful and charming appearance. Dressing up was easier than using a veil, if that was the case, why go the extra step?

Ye Lang hadn't finished thinking when his cousin pulled him out to play and quickly forgot this matter. He was just that kind of person, some things he wouldn't understand if no one explained them to him clearly, and if he didn't understand, he wouldn't think about it too much, he would selectively forget!

"Idiot, there are even people chasing behind you, who knew you would be so welcomed here." Ye Lang's cousin panted out of breath, she had already pulled Ye Lang along for who knew how far.

She didn't think that the two of them going out to play would encounter this kind of situation.

At that time, when the two of them stepped out the front gate, there was a horde of "ambushers". Everybody in the surroundings rushed out and surrounded the two of them.

At that time, Ye Lang's cousin had directly drawn her sword and prepared to cut up those people. She thought they were there to ambush the two of them!

Afterwards, she discovered that these people were actually there to look for her cousin. They weren't there to ambush him, but were waiting for him to come out so they could beg him to take out more alchemy items from his ring.

These people weren't strangers, they were actually the Imperial alchemists that Ye Lan Yu had chased away!

Of course, these people were only regular alchemists, they were of lower rank. The leaders had already left and ambushing was something done by the lower ranks.

Ye Lang wrinkled his eyebrows and straightforwardly said: "You guys go back and tell your leader, as people, you ought to understand contentment, what I could give you I have already given you, the rest is up to yourselves! If you can understand these crucial points, you wouldn't need to ask me anything else!"

"Thirteenth Young Master..."

"Guards come, stop these people, don't let them get in my way." Ye Lang directly commanded the Ye Family's guards to stop the alchemists who wouldn't give up until Ye Lang walked far away.

Yet Ye Lang and his cousin didn't think that as soon as they left the encirclement of alchemists, they would attract another encirclement! The encirclement of the whole city, an encirclement of people ranging from commoners to nobles!

“Thirteenth Young Master! Thirteenth Young Master! Everybody quick, come look! It’s the Thirteenth Young Master…”

“It really is the Thirteenth Young Master…”

“Hurry, don’t let the the Thirteenth Young Master run, he still owes us a meal!”

“That’s right, Thirteenth Young Master don’t leave! You haven’t told us your story yet…”

……

Just like this, Ye Lang was surrounded. Under these circumstances, Ye Lang used an expression of smelling a stinky fart to say: “Forget the story, you guys are here because you all want to know my alchemy, in truth, this is just 1% talent and 99% hard work!”

You work hard? This seemed a little reasonable regarding Ye Lang and alchemy. He definitely put in some work. Only……

Did you really use 99% hard work? It would appear that you just run around a bit more than everyone else, going around being prodigal everywhere. It’s also because of being prodigal that you would have more opportunities to experiment than everyone else and achieve the results you have today.

So in conclusion, your success was 3 parts talent, 1 part work, and the rest was all thanks to being prodigal!

Ai, who knew that being prodigal was a way to increase strength? This was the first time this had occurred, it wasn't guaranteed to be the last case, but it was definitely the first, and it was only the Ye family's Thirteenth Young Master who could create this kind of legend!

Chapter 89 - A Feast (1)

“Why do you say that I owe you a treat? That day, I gave everyone a treat. ” Ye Lang was a little puzzled and asked, “Do you want one more again?”

That day, they should have paid for their own meals, but then someone suddenly proposed to have everyone go to the same place to have a meal. Only a special place could accommodate so many people for a meal.

The first place they chose was the square in front of the palace, because it was the largest place. But they weren’t entitled to have a meal in such a special place in front of the imperial city.

The second one they chose was the central square of the city. Although it was not as big as the place in front of the palace, local people often held celebrations there.

After careful consideration, in the end, they chose the central square. The Emperor and others would also attend the feast, which made this feast a legend and would go down in history.

A large number of people from all walks of life were present, and Ye Lang welcomed all, so those who had not been in the arena at that time could join them.

As more and more people arrived, the square became overcrowded, so some people went to the nearby area. The streets were also overcrowded. People from the square swarmed in all

directions!

And they gathered together to spontaneously help prepare for this super feast. If this feast was prepared just by a few people for the tens of thousands of people, it would be a heavy workload, but if tens of thousands of people worked together to make preparations, it would not take them much time.

They moved the tables and chairs, set the dishes, transferred ingredients, cooked, and served the dishes.

Everyone in the city was working together!

The three super feasts were like celebrations enjoyed by all in the city. Even a big event would not have so many people taking part in it. This really amazed the Emperor and others!

In this super feast, everyone from different walks of life was equal, rich or poor, noble or ignoble.

Everyone just dined and wined, having a good time!

This seldom happened. It was unexpected that the prodigal Ye Lang had so much influence to cause it.

At that time, Ye Lang was saying:

“Fuck, who added the wine into my tea! I don’t drink wine!”

Because of the alcohol, Ye Lang's face began to turn red, and then did something crazy. "Sister, I want to sing a song to you!"

""Really?"

"Pig, you have two nostrils."

"Brat, dare to fool me! Shit!"

Ye Lanyu got angry so she punched him, but Ye Lang was very flexible and avoided it. He was lying directly on the ground and fell asleep.

Although she knew that he had never drunk wine, but she didn't know that he would get drunk as long as he just drank a little bit.

After Ye Lang got drunk, Ye Lanyu, Princess Qi and Zhen Xiaoyan, who was serving the dishes, immediately rushed to help him up and send him home after confirming he was really drunk.

Long An Qi felt very pleased about this, but was a also little anxious because these girls cared about Ye Lang and she could do nothing.

Afterwards, although Ye Lang had left, the others still enjoyed themselves until late at night. This super feast finally ended.

It was certain that Ye Lang got drunk, so he didn't know what happened in the end but he was sure that he had given a treat!

So why is this group of people here? Ye Lang did not mind giving one more treat, but their reason didn't make sense. Why did they say he owed them a treat?

"Hello, I have given you a treat, right?" Ye Lang kept polite and said calmly.

"Uh, Mr. Ye, you misunderstood! We said we owe you, not you owe us." They were in a daze for a while, but immediately explained.

"Oh, excuse me, we are shopping!" Ye Lang said directly, ready to pull the cousin to continue their visit.

"But we owe you, Mr. Ye." Everyone immediately said.

"What? You owe me?" Ye Lang didn't understand, and he did not remember what they owed him.

"We said that if you help us win, we must give you a treat!" Everyone reminded him.

"Yeah, oh, it seems that you have said so. And what will you treat me to?" Ye Lang was used to squandering money, and if others gave him a treat he would be willing to accept an expensive meal. In addition, it was their promise.

“What do you want to eat?” Since they offered to give him a treat, they should ask him about it.

“I want to eat the food cooked by fatty!” Ye Lang said without much consideration. The food cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan was his favorite.

“Fatty? Oh, you’re talking about Zhen Xiaoyan? I know that she often cooks in the Zhen You Wei Restaurant, but I do not know why but the food she cooks is rarely served to the guests. Those who have tasted it said her cooking is unparalleled in the world.” One spoke highly of her cooking and even looked forward to it.

It seemed that everyone knew that Zhen Xiaoyan was called fatty by Ye Lang, even though she now was beautiful and lovely.

“That is because she cooks for me and herself.” Ye Lang directly told them the reason. “Impossible. She is so slim now that she cannot eat so much food. Everyone guessed that the food was all eaten by Ye Lang. Although they never heard before that Ye Lang ate the food, they would rather believe it was true.

“What? Fatty must eat so much now, or something wrong will happen to her body.” Ye Lang directly replied, “Yes, you said give me a treat. Then let’s go to the Zhen You Wei Restaurant. Maybe we can meet her.”

“OK!”

So a group of people went to that restaurant, and on the way, more and more people joined them upon hearing the news. A small feast, but it was unknown whether the restaurant was big enough for them.

“Is Zhen Xiaoyan here?” Walking into the restaurant, someone immediately asked.

“Yes, she didn’t go to the college today, and she is in the kitchen right now, but she may not be able to cook for you.” After hearing this question, a waiter immediately answered adeptly. It seemed that he had said this many times over.

Yes, many times over. Many people came here in order to taste the food she cooked, which also let the Zhen family’s restaurant boom.

Even if failing to eat the dishes cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan, most people still ate a meal here since they hadalready come! They were not willing to go somewhere else to have a meal.

This situation appeared slowly a long time ago, but after that feast, its business boomed because Zhen Xiaoyan cooked for the Emperor and the others. Although in the beginning, she just cooked for Ye Lang, but then the Emperor and others also tasted her food.

In the end, Ye Lang did not eat much before he got drunk!

So the Emperor and the others were able to enjoy it. [The Emperor eating Ye Lang's leftovers, lol.]

Anyway, the food she had cooked amazed the Emperor and the others, which told everyone that her cooking was unparalleled, which also advertised for the restaurant!

"For someone else she would not do so, but we have someone here who she will definitely cook for!" One said confidently with a smile.

However...

"This sentence, I have heard a countless times, everyone says that, but the results were the same!" The waiter said very adeptly, "I advise you not to expect her to cook for you. We have many chefs, and they will not let you down."

Many people believed that because of their high status, Zhen Xiaoyan would cook for them, but did not expect that she still totally ignored them. She was not here to be a chef, she was here just to cook for herself and Ye Lang, because it was easy for her to get all ingredients here.

In the beginning, her arrival always worried her family, because she would use most of the ingredients. If she wanted to use them, no one would stop her!

Most of the ingredients she used were rare, and it was difficult to collect some of these ingredients!

‘Nonsense. If not because of the rare ingredients, would I come here? I would have cooked at home!’ This was her answer. She had come here for those rare materials. Otherwise, she could just cook at home, since the cooking tools here were similar to those in the home kitchen.

Zhen family members had tried to hide the rare materials, but failed again and again. They didn’t know why she had a special talent for easily finding the ingredients no matter where they were hidden!

As the time went by, they just worried about it but could do nothing!

But now it was different because of Zhen Xiaoyan’s fame. Many people were attracted here because of her talent, beauty or the good cooking praised by the Emperor. They hoped to see her every day and even came here all the time.

And because of this, they also tried to let Zhen Xiaoyan cook for the guests, but they were helpless. Because she totally ignored them since she just came here to find something good to cook and then left with delicious food.

Her sole aim was to cook delicious food for Ye Lang!

Chapter 90 - A Feast (2)

When she was a little girl, Zhen Xiaoyan really liked to eat a lot and she wasn't picky. If she had been a fussy eater, she would not have been so fat.

Because of this, her cooking skill had improved. The simpler ingredients needed better cooking skill!

But now, it was different. She now needed those special ingredients which she had seldom used. She now focused on cooking and eating the kind of food she hadn't eaten before.

Also, she would always talk to herself while cooking.

"This is too greasy, Ye Lang will not like it."

"This is too spicy, and it's bad for his health."

"This doesn't taste good enough."

"You don't know who we are with here." Everyone was smiling, and said very confidently. They had heard of it, but everyone knew that as long as Ye Lang is here, then it would be easy to have Zhen Xiaoyan cook for them.

It was known that Ye Lang and Zhen Xiaoyan didn't have a romantic relationship. At least neither of them considered

themselves as a couple and others didn't see any the chemistry between them.

If she cooked for any other man, everyone would have believed they had a romantic relationship, but oddly enough, no one thought too much about their relationship when she cooked just for Ye Lang.

No matter what the relationship was between them, it was well-known that Zhen Xiaoyan cooked for Ye Lang and prepared food for him everyday.

Ye Lang was here now, so Zhen Xiaoyan had no need to deliver the meal to him!

"No matter who you are..." The waiter continued to say coldly, but at this moment, everyone in the whole restaurant suddenly became excited. Not because of Ye Lang's arrival, since not many people had found his presence yet, but the red cloth rising in the center. Underneath it was a dish with its name written on a nameplate.

"Oh, Miss Zhen has cooked a dish for the guests, if you are lucky and generous enough, you can eat it." The waiter immediately said. The red cloth was specifically designed for the dishes cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan. This red cloth would be raised if her dish was to be served and this aimed to remind them that the guests could get ready to bid for this dish !

Zhen Xiaoyan only cooked no more than two dishes for the guests

in a day, so the guests tried their best to get it!

“The bid for the tofu with assorted vegetables starts at one silver coin!”

The waiter directly shouted, and it was usual that the bid started at such a low price, because he knew that its final price would definitely be dozens of times higher. It even might be hundreds of times higher!

And this starting price was close to the cost of cooking such a dish in such a restaurant with a good reputation.

“A gold coin.” Someone bid for it at a price a hundred times of its starting price directly without hesitation, and that was just a warm-up!

A gold coin was just a drop in the ocean for these people. They usually spent a gold coin on a dish, and for this kind of dish that they tried to get, they would be more generous.

“Ten gold coins.”

“Twenty.”

“I, a hundred gold coins. ” Someone said in a low voice.

“Just one hundred gold coins. I... Wait...” A hundred gold coins

was a great sum of money, but it was not the limit for at least the people present. They could offer double.

For such a dish, it was indeed a high price, for its cost was less than a silver coin .

No matter how delicious the food cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan was, it wasn't worth such a high price. But now, she was so famous that her dish was worth the high price!

"What did you say? Then bid for it, or I will go for it." Although the people there felt a little strange about his reaction, they ignored him and continued to bid.

"I... What are you doing? Why are you pulling me?" When a man intended to bid, he was pulled back by the man who had bid just now.

"Look at who just placed the bid?"

"Whoever, even if the emperor is here, I will not give up!" The man said arrogantly and firmly. But when he saw the person who had bid, he immediately said:

"Fuck, it's that brat! It seems that I cannot eat the food cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan today! "

"Hey, why does he come here?"

“Fuck, it must be that man that brought him here. I must give him a lesson.”

When everyone found this situation, they began to talk about it and guess all kinds of reasons. All of them simply gave up bidding.

And the brat was Ye Lang, whom they called Thirteenth Young Master!

“Thirteenth Young Master, since you eat the food cooked by Zhen Xiaoyan every day, why do you bid for it?” Some people said helplessly.

“I like to spend money.” Ye Lang smiled, and replied straightforwardly.

“I know that, we all know that.”

Everyone knew his answer, for he was so prodigal that he seized every chance to spend money.

No one here would offend him for a dish.

Fine, let him have it!

“Thirteenth Young Master, please enjoy it! Sorry for not recognizing you. Miss Zhen will cook many dishes for you!” The

waiter brought the dish of tofu, and he became humble, rather than the arrogance he displayed before.

“I will tell her that you are here.” The waiter said and turned around to leave.

“Don’t bother her. We will leave as soon as we finish our meal. Let her do what she should do.” Ye Lang immediately stopped him and said, “You just serve us your signature dishes.”

“OK, got it!” The waiter replied.

I am so stupid. Thirteenth Young Master eats the dishes cooked by her every day, so today he wants to eat something different, I don’t need to let Miss Zhen take the order!

The waiter thought like that, and so did many others. Ye Lang could eat the food cooked by her every day, so it was a good idea to have a change!

However, since you don’t want to eat her dish, why do you bid for it?

“Xiao Lang, I didn’t expect that you were so gentle!” His cousin chuckled and said something that was confusing.

Ye Lang ignored her and picked up the chopsticks to relish the tofu, which made those eager to eat the dish get more envious.

“Let me have a try. It is said to be very delicious.” His cousin also picked up the chopsticks to taste a little bit.

“Mmmh. It is really delicious!” His cousin spoke highly of the dish, but with reservation, so that some people there were not satisfied.

“Yeah!” Ye Lang did not notice the problem. He just nodded, eating the food.

“Take it easy. Enjoy it, no one will take it away!” His cousin took out a scarf to gently wipe away the sauce on Ye Lang’ face and said with a smile.

“I will take you to eat something more delicious.”

More delicious? Does it mean this was not good enough? Who is this woman who even says this is not delicious enough?

Think about it. The woman together with Thirteenth Young Master can’t be ordinary. She may have eaten more delicious dishes. After all, Zhen Xiaoyan’s cooking has not been considered the best in the world!

At least, they also knew several people that could cook better than Zhen Xiaoyan. But these people were legends, rather than ordinary people! That was why they were not available.

But Zhen Xiaoyan was available and existed in reality!

Soon, they all understood the reason why the cousin praised Zhen Xiaoyan for her cooking skill with reservation. It was because of Zhen Xiaoyan herself!

Zhen Xiaoyan came out with her head facing the outside as usual. She did not greet others, because she was afraid that these people would ask her to do something.

Of course, she was not afraid of doing it, since she didn't mind being bothered, she also liked helping others. But she was worried about a delay in doing what she needed to do.

"Little miss, are you leaving?"

"Yes, I am finished. See you tomorrow!" Zhen Xiaoyan replied.

"Miss Zhen, could you please cook us a dish!"

"I am sorry, I never cook for others. I am in a hurry, and you can order the other dishes, they are as delicious as what I cook." Zhen Xiaoyan said humbly and continued to leave with her head down. It seemed that this situation was very familiar to her.

"You won't cook for the others, but you cook for him." Those coming with Ye Lang deliberately mentioned him.

But Zhen Xiaoyan did not notice Ye Lang, and thought it was a lie told by someone who wanted to enjoy the privilege. She did not even look over.

“I am sorry. I am in a hurry.” Zhen Xiaoyan sped up her stride to the door.

“Miss Zhen, please look!” Someone shouted with a smile.

“Oh, I see!” Zhen Xiaoyan glanced at Ye Lang, who had lowered his head to relish his meal. It was likely that she didn’t recognize him. She continued to walk out.

Unexpectedly, she finally walked out of the door!

“Fuck, why not just tell her Thirteenth Young Master is here.” After a while, when everyone knew what happened, they immediately scolded that person angrily. Yes, if he had told her directly, she would have cooked many dishes for Ye Lang.

“Any more dishes? I have almost finished this one!” Ye Lang did not notice anything special, and just asked for more dishes to be served quickly. Then he continued to bow his head to eat.

On this occasion, everyone was no longer angry, for they all knew Thirteenth Young Master’s character. Well, let’s talk about it tomorrow.

Chapter 91 - Real And Fake

Just as everybody gave up, the situation suddenly changed unexpectedly. Zhen Xiaoyan, who had already left, suddenly turned around and walked towards where Ye Lang was sitting.

She arrived in front of Ye Lang's table and saw him eating with his head lowered. It was very clear that she had already discovered Ye Lang's existence, however, no one knew how she had done so.

"Ye Lang, what are you eating?" Originally, Zhen Xiaoyan was a bit angry. Angry that Ye Lang evidently knew she was here, yet he didn't say anything. If she hadn't discovered him, she wouldn't have realized he was closeby at all.

When she saw Ye Lang was eating, she forgot about her anger and started paying attention to what he was eating instead.

"I'm eating your tofu." Ye Lang obediently replied.

"....."

At this time, the whole restaurant fell silent to the point you could hear a pin drop!

This Thirteenth young master truly had the guts to say anything, eating Zhen Xiaoyan's tofu, like this he might as well directly.....

“My tofu? What are you talking about, if you keep on telling lies I’ll rip your mouth off!” Zhen Xiaoyan did not find those words weird, but then she saw everybody else’s weird expressions and immediately reacted by yelling at Ye Lang.

Ye Lang shook his head and spoke: “I didn’t lie, this is your tofu and the taste is pretty good. I eat your cooking every day so I’m very familiar with it.” [If your brain is like tofu and haven’t realized what it means: Eating someone’s tofu means taking advantage of someone in a lewd sense.]

“Shut your mouth, no talking!!”

“Ha ha…. Idiot, you really are an idiot, but you’re so stupid, it’s cute!” Ye Lang’s cousin laughed without caring about her image upon watching their interaction.

“I can’t shut my mouth, if I shut my mouth, how would I eat? Waiter, bring the next dish!” Ye Lang directly refused.

“…” Zhen Xiaoyan fell into a daze, then she immediately grabbed the sole dish on the table, preventing Ye Lang from being able to reach his food.

“Fatty, hurry up and give it to me, I haven’t finished eating yet!” Ye Lang reached out his hands and tried to grab it.

“No, this isn’t for you to eat!” Zhen Xiaoyan refused.

“Why?” Ye Lang asked, baffled.

“This doesn’t taste good!” Zhen Xiaoyan continued.

“Your tofu tastes very good.....” Ye Lang honestly said, and what greeted him was that plate of tofu. After hearing those words, Zhen Xiaoyan threw the tofu within her hands. [A continuation of the previous]

“I dare you to say that again!!”

“Yes yes.... I won’t’ say I’m eating tofu...” An alchemy formation appeared in Ye Lang’s hands and caught the plate of tofu without letting even a drop spill.

“You aren’t allowed to eat!!!” Zhen Xiaoyan lunged forward and wrestled the tofu away.

“What are you doing fatty, what’s wrong with you today?” Ye Lang remarked with great interest after biting empty air.

“I said this isn’t for you to eat, yours is here.” Zhen Xiaoyan placed the plate of tofu to the side and pulled out colorful dishes one by one from her spatial pocket. Moreover, each dish exceeded the previous dish of tofu in terms of appearance, taste and smell.

“Uhhhh, this.....” Ye Lang’s cousin was stunned and used her chopsticks to sample a bit.

“This is delicious, this truly is food to die for!” Ye Lang’s cousin immediately began praising the food, and this time, she had no reservations!

“Ye Lang, who is this young lady??” Only now did Zhen Xiaoyan notice Ye Lang’s cousin.

“My cousin.” Ye Lang simply replied without any elaboration.

“How should I address her?” Zhen Xiaoyan asked Ye Lang.

“You can call her cousin.” Ye Lang carelessly replied.

Who knows why, but Zhen Xiaoyan suddenly blushed a little and said: “Nice to meet you cousin, thank you for your praise, please eat whatever you like.”

“Hehe, good good, you must be Zhen Xiaoyan, I’ve heard of your story before, right now you are extremely beautiful, Ye Lang truly has some skills!” From the very start Ye Lang’s cousin naturally had paid attention to Zhen Xiaoyan’s appearance and figure. For women, this was basic instinct.

“Indeed, Ye Lang is amazing, he always causes people to be surprised!” Zhen Xiaoyan agreed with a hint of reverence towards Ye Lang.

“You’re pretty amazing too, remember to take care of my stupid little brother in the future.” Ye Lang’s cousin said with a faint smile full of ambiguity.

“I don’t think I can take care of him, I only know how to cook.” Zhen Xiaoyan shook her head, she truly was unable to take care of Ye Lang because he was truly too difficult to take care of.

“Being able to take care of just one aspect is good as well, keep looking for others to help.” Ye Lang’s cousin smiled.

“…” Zhen Xiaoyan remained silent for a while. During all of this, Ye Lang remained completely silent, as if they were not discussing him.

“Alright, let me ask you one thing, was that plate of tofu just now not prepared by you? Why is there such a large difference.” Ye Lang’s cousin asked.

“That dish was made by me, but it was made using the leftovers from these dishes. I randomly stir fried it and didn’t intend for Ye Lang to eat it.” Zhen Xiaoyan’s answer made the surrounding spectators blush with shame.

As it turns out, up until now, all the dishes sold by the restraint made by her had been dishes she had carelessly thrown together. She did it to avoid wasting materials as well as to dispose of her failed dishes. Furthermore, she definitely wouldn’t let Ye Lang eat those failed dishes.

She would only let Ye Lang eat the best food!

And because of this, when she saw Ye Lang eating that plate of tofu, she immediately stopped him and wouldn't give it to him no matter what. She didn't feel like Ye Lang could eat food like that.

Yet these dishes considered barely passable by her could make people drool, from another perspective, this could be considered proof of Zhen Xiaoyan's culinary skills. She had already entered a realm others could not hope to touch.

"How can your reactions be so slow and not notice a difference this big? The food I normally feed you is like this!" Zhen Xiaoyan grumbled to Ye Lang, as if she was the one doing the eating.

Perhaps, if she was the one eating, she still wouldn't care so much!

"I can tell the difference." Ye Lang answered.

"?? You can tell, yet you still ate it?" Zhen Xiaoyan suspiciously asked.

"Why wouldn't I eat it? It still tastes good and it's still something you made, there is no difference." Ye Lang stupidly replied.

Zhen Xiaoyan was stunned for a long time after hearing those words……

Correct, from the very beginning Ye Lang could tell the difference, the tofu was randomly cooked up by Zhen Xiaoyan, but he ate it all the same, without any complaint.

Originally, he never cared much about food to begin with. As long as it was edible, he could eat it. Even though Zhen Xiaoyan had somewhat trained his palate, but the food she carelessly prepared was still pretty good and fell within his acceptable range. He would naturally have no objection.

And, backtracking way back, even if Zhen Xiaoyan had completely failed while preparing the tofu and it tasted awful, he would eat it anyways. Even if he would directly insult Zhen Xiaoyan and call her unskilled, he would still finish everything she cooked.

This point, Zhen Xiaoyan knew as well. Every time she heard Ye Lang speaking like that, her heart would be moved a little. Yes, just a little. At least, that's what she told herself!

And because she understood this point very well, the next thing she did was to sit down and finish eating the tofu. This way, Ye Lang would no longer want to eat the rest of the tofu.

Ye Lang looked at Zhen Xiaoyan and seemed to understand, but very quickly he went back to gorging himself and no longer paid attention to Zhen Xiaoyan. Moreover, Zhen Xiaoyan did the same and no longer paid attention to him and started eating as well, even starting competing with Ye Lang.

“Hey hey, I already started eating that dish, yet you’re eating it....” Ye Lang called out.

“Hmph, why wouldn’t I eat it, every time you’re so shameless, taking a bite here and a bite there, wanting to eat everything....” Zhen Xiaoyan retorted, this wasn’t the first time these circumstances had occurred, Ye Lang was truly too shameless.

“Then I will use my ultimate skill, I’m going to spit.....” Ye Lang evilly smiled. He recalled a person who had once spit into an entire table full of dishes and scared off everybody else from touching them.

Ye Lang was only bluffing with this move, because this was going too far. He could not take it.

“You dare!!” Zhen Xiaoyan erupted, “If you dare, I won’t cook for you anymore!!”

“Ha, you’ve already signed a contract with me, you have to cook for me for the rest of your life!” Ye Lang said disdainfully.

“Hmph! I will terminate the contract!”

“We’ll talk about it in your next life...”

“....”

After dining, Ye Lang and the 2 girls went out strolling, window shopping, and threw off everyone else...

After playing like this for an afternoon, Ye Lang sent Zhen Xiaoyan home and he himself began preparing to head home as well to rub away his cousin's scar and restore her forehead's beauty.

Yet, right as they were about to part, before Zhen Xiaoyan entered her front door, she suddenly remembered something...

"Ye Lang, have you prepared for the examination in a few days?"

"Examination? What examination?" looking at the circumstances, Ye Lang seemed like he knew nothing about the examination.

Zhen Xiaoyan unhappily said: "I knew it, could you pay more attention to what's going on at the academy! Let me tell you, this time's examination is to prepare for next year's big competition."

"What..."

"'What competition' is what you want to say right? You... I don't' know how to explain to you. Next year is the big schools ranking competition that happens every 10 years." Zhen Xiaoyan said.

She continued: “I’m guessing you definitely don’t know what’s important about this competition....”

Ye Lang nodded....

“Ai, let me explain it to you in simple terms, this competition determines the rankings of the schools, this point shouldn’t need more explanation. The truth is, currently, what most people pay attention to during the competition is how many talented youths appear during the competition. These youths will become the future great figures of the continent!”

“Out of the current and past first-rate masters of the continent, 80% of them revealed themselves during the competition! And because of this, the current competition also ranks individuals as well as schools. Also, the rankings are split into overall strength, martial arts, magic, alchemy. As long as one ranks high in one of those areas, they will become the center of everyone’s attention and become somebody countries fight over!”

“Oh, so it’s like this, but... what does this have to do with me?” Ye Lang asked uncomprehendingly.

That’s right, to Ye Lang, what did this have to do with him? Did he wish to become famous in everyone’s eyes? Did he wish to become an important figure in the future?

I believe everybody already knows what the answers to those questions should be!

Chapter 92 - Real And Fake (2)

“How could it have nothing to do with you? If you do well, your position in the empire will improve afterwards as well. When that happens, even if you want to walk sideways, no one will stop you!” Zhen Xiaoyan panicked; she wanted Ye Lang to understand what was necessary to become a master. Apart from having a powerful family backing, it was necessary to demonstrate a high level of individual strength as well.

Ye Lang however, had no interest towards these things. He lightheartedly replied: “Even if I want to walk sideways, there are still no people who dare to stop me. If you don’t believe me, just watch…”

As soon as he spoke, Ye Lang started pacing sideways back and forth…….

“Obviously no one will stop you if you do that, it was only a figure of speech, idiot!” Ye Lang’s cousin unhappily whacked Ye Lang. She then continued, “Xiaoyan’s suggestion is pretty good, you had better go and bring back some good results. Doing so will help your future prospects.”

“I… Won’t… Go!” Ye Lang enunciated every word clearly. His attitude was very stubborn!

“Why? Are you afraid it’s a lot of work? It’s actually very fun. Next year’s competition is held in the holy city of the Aila Empire. Normally, it’s not that easy to travel there.” Zhen Xiaoyan began

coaxing Ye Lang this way, because she understood nothing else could entice Ye Lang.

“Holy city? You mean that place where the Central Church of God originated? The current headquarters of the church?” Ye Lang had a pretty clear understanding of the factual side of things.

“Yep, yep. Normally, apart from pilgrimages, there’s no way to enter it. Didn’t you once say that you want to go visit everywhere someday? Isn’t this a good opportunity?” Zhen Xiaoyan said.

“That’s true...” Ye Lang nodded, but then immediately added “But if the holy city is open during that time, then I can still go visit the city even if I’m not participating in the competition.”

“...” Zhen Xiaoyan fell silent, her heart full of gloom. Why didn’t you become confused this time? You really are never confused when you should be confused, never astute when you should be astute!

Yes, this was her way of thinking, her way of thinking when it came to Ye Lang...

“That’s not certain, when the time comes, you never know, there might be too many people. They could end up restricting entry.” Zhen Xiaoyan said. She knew her excuse was implausible, but she had to say something.

“They might restrict entry for other people, I’m the Thirteenth

young master of the great Ye Family, how could they stop me from entering.” Ye Lang said disdainfully.

“Can you really not stop for a moment and consider your future? Will you really live the rest of your life like this, acting like a prodigal son? What if one day you completely fritter away all the family’s wealth?” Zhen Xiaoyan began to get slightly angry. She was angry that Ye Lang was so disappointing, only, she didn’t consider why she was so mad about this.

“If I completely spend the family’s wealth, then my goal can be considered to have been accomplished...” Ye Lang superficially remarked.

“You.... You.... You really are incorrigible!” Zhen Xiaoyan reached the end of her rope.

“You flatter me, you really do! You should go back inside, I still have business to attend to.” Ye Lang waved his hand and tried to shoo Zhen Xiaoyan back inside.

“Hmph!” Zhen Xiaoyan stomped her foot, twirled around, and just like this, marched back inside in a huff.

“Cousin, let’s go home and fix up your face.” Ye Lang completely ignored Zhen Xiaoyan’s anger and indifferently spoke to his cousin.

“Oh, Little Lang, you know that Xiaoyan is really doing this

because she cares about you, so you shouldn't treat her this way." Ye Lang's cousin ruefully commented.

"I know, but I really don't like these kind of things, putting aside how much work they are, they also have many other harmful side-effects as well." Ye Lang said as he walked back.

"Harmful side-effects? There shouldn't be any harm?" Ye Lang's cousin uncomprehendingly asked. Yet, Ye Lang's next few words made it even harder for her to understand, and most confusing of all was still– what kind of person her cousin was.

"Think about my identity, position, family, and power. If you factor in a certain degree of additional strength from my equipment, I can definitely stir up trouble on the field of battle. However, is taking ahold of such power really such a good thing?" Ye Lang indifferently replied.

"....." Ye Lang's cousin contemplated for a while.

"Anyways, I'm not that kind of person. Just like you guys said, I'm a fool, I will often get confused, if I take a seat belonging to those people, what do you think will happen?" Ye Lang shook his head and smiled.

"... This... I guess you're better off maintaining your current circumstances. No problem, even if you waste away the Ye family's assets, your sister will take care of you." After her silent contemplation, Ye Lang's cousin changed her mind and immediately began supporting Ye Lang's prodigal behavior.

“Remember those words, don’t regret it in the future!” Ye Lang also suddenly randomly became astute and grabbed hold of those words.

Ye Lang’s cousin whacked Ye Lang and said: “Che, do you dare doubt my words, even if I have to support you for 10 lifetimes, your sister will do it. But, at that time, you can’t be like you are now and recklessly spend money. At most, you can only spend a thousand every month… no, ten thousand gold pieces!”

A thousand felt a bit too small to Ye Lang’s cousin, so she raised it up to ten thousand!

This did not mean Ye Lang’s cousin didn’t understand the value of a thousand gold pieces. To normal people, they might not make that much money even after a decade of work. She clearly knew about this fact, yet she still felt it was too small and would hurt Ye Lang.

“Cousin…” Ye Lang looked at his cousin with moist eyes.

“What, are you moved?” Ye Lang’s cousin laughed.

“Uh huh, cousin, I love you….” Ye Lang dipped his head and spoke.

“Pah, brat, you can’t say those words carelessly. Save them for the person you love!” Ye Lang’s cousin scolded him, but she was

smiling. Her face under the veil also seemed a little red.

Unexpectedly, this brat had ended up making advances on her....

“Cousin, love takes many forms, this is love towards one’s relatives, if you don’t want it, I won’t give it to you. I will only give it to my neurotic sister.”

“It’s not that! It’s the opposite. In the future, remember to love me like you love your neurotic sister.”

“…”

…….

“Achoo…” Ye Lanyu rubbed her nose, a bit suspicious. “Did I catch a cold?”

Night time was quiet as always. Within this quiet night, the Ye family residence was silent as well. Yes, as a whole, it could be considered quiet.

Regarding the Ye Family, as long as there wasn’t someone causing a ruckus, it would practically always be quiet. Of course, this isn’t taking into consideration special circumstances.

……

“Where’s Ye Lang?” The head of the Ye Family asked everyone as they were eating dinner.

Currently, dozens of people sitting around 7 or 8 large tables were eating in the Ye Family’s great hall. This was also something that occurred every day. The Ye Family had always maintained this tradition and ate together as a family.

The Ye Family was large in scope and scale, there were dozens of people in the family altogether!

Yet even though there were dozens of people present, the Ye Family’s head could instantly notice that Ye Lang was missing. Even though Ye Lang was often missing, this didn’t mean that the head wouldn’t ask about it.

At the same time, Ye Lanyu was also not present. However, the head didn’t ask because he knew that Ye Lanyu was definitely with her brother.

“He’s helping his cousin. Apparently, he’s going to restore his cousin’s appearance, something about rubbing skin. Hmph, that brat, he never helps me!” Long An Qi said with a hint of resentment.

“Oh, did his cousin say she was leaving tomorrow?” The Ye Family head conveniently asked after receiving an answer.

“Indeed. These last two days, that rascal has been using that as

an excuse to skip school." Ye Chengtian replied with a smile. It seemed he was already used to Ye Lang skipping school and didn't oppose it.

"Oh well, let's continue eating!" The Ye Family members said.

.....

Within Ye Lang's Beneath the Gentle Waves, three people had closed the doors and were busy doing some things in the room, taking off...

Hey hey, don't misunderstand, those 3 are siblings, and moreover, they definitely won't do things that violate proper relationships. They were only taking off Ye Lang's cousin's veil.

After taking off the veil and parting her bangs, a long ghastly scar could be seen on Ye Lang's cousin's forehead, causing Ye Lang to feel a pang in his heart, and Ye Lanyu to feel pity.

After some more time had passed, Ye Lang took out an item similar to a ballpoint pen and fiddled around with the scar for a while with it.

At that time, Ye Lanyu and Ye Lang's cousin could see the ballpoint pen let out a beam of light. Furthermore, when this beam of light hit the ground, it was able to scorch the stone floor.

And listening to Ye Lang's explanation, it seemed he wanted to

use this “Ballpoint pen” to help heal his cousin...

“Brother are you sure this is okay? If you accidently mess up cousin’s face, you’re doomed.” Ye Lanyu asked from the side suspiciously.

“Don’t worry, I was making adjustments just then, it should be properly configured now!” Ye Lang paid no heed to her words.

“Oh... Isn’t this wrong? Didn’t you say you were going to rub the skin? Why are you taking out this kind of thing?” Ye Lanyu remembered what Ye Lang had said before about grinding skin, which should be done by using a tool to rub back and forth to grind away the scar.

“This is rubbing skin, you can rub away the skin with things other than those type of things. This kind of light stimulation should be better, not only can it remove the scar, it can also whiten the skin and cause it to become exquisitely white...” Ye Lang carelessly answered without realizing these words were greatly enticing to the 2 girls present.

“Really? Then can you work on my whole face as well, and my body...” Ye Lang’s cousin immediately said.

“And mine. Cousin, your skin is already good enough, mine Is a bit poor. Brother, shine some light on your sister as well!” Ye Lanyu opened her mouth to fight over this opportunity.

“Little Yu, can your skin really be called poor? You’re speaking like you’re blind with your eyes open. If your skin is considered poor, then there doesn’t exist anyone who can be considered to have fair skin. Your skin is sparkling and translucent with light shining through it, as if it’s made of ice. I can only wonder if everybody of the ice attribute is like that.” Ye Lang’s cousin immediately fought back, but what she said was the truth as well. Ye Lanyu’s skin was outstandingly good, practically no one could outdo her.

“No, in the past it wasn’t like this. It became better over time. Thinking about it, it might have been because of this brother of mine. He often tests weird things on me.” Ye Lanyu looked at Ye Lang. She couldn’t be certain of her guess, but it was about 80% likely.

“Really?” Ye Lang maintained a look of innocence. He wasn’t pretending, but rather he had used so many things that he himself could not ascertain if this effect was because of him.

Chapter 93 - Trip (1)

“It’s too early to worry about that. You haven’t even eaten what’s within your bowl and you’re already salivating over what’s left in the pan. I haven’t removed your scar yet and you’re already trying to whiten your skin.” Ye Lang said directly.

“This… Tee-hee, please take care of this first…” Ye Lang’s cousin said with an embarrassed smile.

“Ok, lie down and don’t move, it’s going to take a while. If you’re afraid that you’ll get tired, then I can put you to sleep.” Ye Lang explained.

“No, if you won’t get tired, how could I get tired…” Ye Lang’s cousin shook her head and smiled.

“Oh, then lie down and I’ll get started…”

And like this, Ye Lang began to carefully grind off his cousin’s skin while she laid there with her eyes closed, not moving a muscle. Ye Lanyu didn’t sleep either, she sat by the side and watched.

As time ticked by, the scar on the forehead of Ye Lang’s cousin grew more and more faint…

Late at night…

“It’s done, I’m tired, going to sleep…” Ye Lang immediately went off to the side to sleep after finishing. He didn’t even want to say another word.

“…” Ye Lanyu and her cousin were silent, they looked at each other and smiled. They reached a decision…

…

“Why are you so late tonight?” The girl within Ye Lang’s dreams asked aridly with a hint of dissatisfaction, but at the same time, she sounded pleasantly surprised.

“I was grinding off some skin for my cousin so that in the future she can wear whatever hairstyle she likes.”

“Oh…”

…

“Weird, why do I feel like my body is very heavy like something is crushing down on it?” Ye Lang suddenly spoke about his body’s sensations in the middle of their dream conversation.

“There’s nothing on your body.” The girl looked a bit at Ye Lang and spoke.

“Maybe it’s just an illusion…” Ye Lang placed the sensation at the

back of his head and proceeded to continue his conversation.

Morning came, and when Ye Lang woke up he discovered that the sensation he felt last night wasn't an illusion but was real. Right now he was definitely feeling very heavy!

Why was he heavy?

If you try having two girls lying on top of you while you sleep, you would definitely have this kind of feeling!

"Sister, cousin, what are you doing, you definitely know that you're heavy, yet you still laid on top of me while I was sleeping." Ye Lang very bluntly woke the two of them up. He completely failed to understand that he should treat them tenderly and let them sleep a little longer.

"Screw you, you're the heavy one!" Ye Lanyu immediately responded. She then calmly spoke, "Sister hasn't slept with you in a long time, you heartless little fellow, after you grew up you stopped liking sister."

"Obviously! Now that I'm grown up I want a wife, why would I want a sister!" Ye Lang was very obedient and replied without a hint of mercy.

Whack! What answered Ye Lang was naturally Ye Lanyu's small pink fist. Her eyes blazing with fury, she fiercly cried: "How dare you say you don't want me, if you want to be like this, don't you

even dare think about getting a wife!”

“If you say not to get a wife I won’t, I’m scared of you!” Ye Lang replied directly, but then he felt his reply was somewhat problematic.

If he didn’t get a wife, didn’t that symbolize he wants this sister of his? This wasn’t opposing but promising.

“You idiot! Alright be obedient and get out of bed, sister can’t bear for you to be alone and will help you find a wife later. However, you can’t abandon your sister!” Ye Lanyu said in a pampering tone.

“Oh, got it…” Ye Lang agreed.

At this time, someone started objecting, of course it was the cousin who everybody had forgotten…

“Hey hey, aren’t you guys being too cruel here? I’m leaving today, yet you guys aren’t remembering me!”

“Who said that! Right now, you’re lying on top of me, how could I forget you?” Ye Lang asked.

“This…”

“Everybody wake up and start preparing, otherwise you won’t

leave either." Ye Lang said "It's like this every time, you always find an excuse to stay another day..."

The previous times Ye Lang's cousin had visited, she had delayed leaving several times. After arranging to leave today, she would stubbornly delay until tomorrow, the day after that, once even delaying for ten days straight.

"…. Little brat, you dare to touch your mother's weak point!" Ye Lang's cousin borrowed a trick and whacked him while referring to herself as his mother.

"Leaving..." Ye Lang ducked and then dashed out the door, disappearing from the fields of view of the 2 girls.

"..."

Noon, a large number of people had congregated in front of the Ye family's front door, including Ye Chengtian and his wife. Of course, Ye Lang and his sister were also present. They were all there to send Ye Lang's cousin off as she left.

"Aunt, Uncle, Little Yu, I'm leaving! Little Lang, remember to come to Vermillion Bird to look for me, you promised." As she was leaving, Ye Lang's cousin didn't forget to give him a special reminder.

This was because earlier, Ye Lang had said he might go travel the world and might go to the Vermillion Bird Empire. She had

immediately told Ye Lang to come visit her, of course she had completely ignored the fact that his words had a “might” within them.

“Got it, you talk too much, hurry up and leave!” Ye Lang shooed his cousin away like he was shooing away a fly, his face looking “fed up”.

“You brat, I give up, just don’t forget.” Ye Lang’s cousin impatiently shook her head. She turned around and prepared to get in the carriage, but she suddenly stopped as she was about to go in.

She turned her head and looked at Ye Lang before speaking: “Little Lang, I hear your singing is pretty good, can you sing a song for me to send me off.”

Ye Lang looked at her cousin and fell into a stupor. Under the watchful gazes of the spectators, two words came from his mouth –

“STOP TALKING!”

Sway.....

Ye Lang’s cousin fell off her carriage, and everybody else almost fell over as well. The guy was too worthless. Others had only asked you to sing a song, yet you rejected in this manner.

“Hmph! Remember this!” Ye Lang’s cousin clenched her teeth

and angrily left behind those parting words before immediately entering the carriage.

“Uh huh, I will.” Ye Lang nodded.

“Go die…” An angry roar came out of the carriage, immediately after, an object was thrown out of the carriage towards Ye Lang. It seemed that this was the embodiment of Ye Lang’s cousin’s rage.

“What’s this?” Ye Lang softly caught that object and looked at it. It looked like a jade tablet. To the veteran prodigal son, Ye Lang, it only took one glance to discern that it wasn’t cheap either.

Logically speaking, this shouldn’t be something people go throwing around randomly!

Moreover the two words “Ye Lang” were carved on the jade tablet, making it even more certain that this wasn’t something she threw simply to vent her anger.

“Cousin…”

“What!”

“Can I sell this?”

“… GO DIE!!”

“Haha, I’m just joking, let me give you something too. Catch!” Ye Lang threw over a small bottle, good things bring good returns.

“What’s this?” Ye Lang’s cousin suspiciously asked after catching it.

“Those are cosmetic maintenance pills, take one a day, make sure not to overdose.” Ye Lang replied, as for what the effect of those pills were, I’m sure no further explanation was needed.

“Little brat, big sis didn’t spoil you for nothing.” Ye Lang’s cousin smiled, but very quickly her smile disappeared because Ye Lang wasn’t done speaking –

“You’re old now, you have to take care of yourself, otherwise you won’t be able to get married.”

“GET OUT!”

“.....”

And like this, Ye Lang chased his cousin away, but before he could celebrate, he was pulled aside by his parents for a lecture. Of course, this wasn’t over his conduct towards his cousin, even his cousin wouldn’t take offense over that, how could they use that as an excuse to lecture their beloved son?

“Son, are you really not going to the exam?” Ye Chengtian asked.

He was still asking about whether Ye Lang would attend the competition. Because Ye Lang had refused to attend the examination, he had caused his parents to be very worried.

All parents hope for their children to become dragons. In the past, Ye Lang's circumstances made them think that it would be enough if he could be an ordinary person. However, the abilities Ye Lang had recently showed made them feel that this phrase "Parents hope for their children to become dragons." needed to be paraded and waved about.

And this time's competition was a good opportunity; they felt that Ye Lang had to participate!

"Not going, I've told you guys that many times already, stop asking, and stop talking about it, I won't change my mind. That's right, next year I might go watch the competition, starting from next year, I'm going to go travel and have fun!" After Ye Lang finished rejecting, he conveniently slipped in a few more words.

"If you're going to go travel, why can't you just stop by the competition on the way. All you need to do is just walk around in the stadium anyways, with your alchemy it won't be hard to get a good result." Ye Chengtian said.

Ye Lang shook his head and said: "I only said if, if at that time I'm somewhere else, then I won't have the time so it won't be convenient anymore. Besides, even if it was convenient, I still wouldn't want to go!"

“Where can you go… Wait, are you saying you’re not just going there, but you’re going to travel to many places?” Ye Chengtian came to a realization and immediately asked.

“Yep, I plan on starting this year. After my coming of age ceremony, I’m going to travel the world, I’ve already planned it all out.” Ye Lang nodded.

“Denied!” The thee people present all immediately vehemently objected.

“Stop treating me like a child, after passing through the coming age of ceremony I will already be an adult, it’s necessary for me to go out and travel!” Ye Lang lightly replied.

“If it was someone else, we would be relaxed, but as for you, how can we not be worried, you will often do stupid things!” Ye Chengtian very straightforwardly said.

“That’s all stuff from when I was a kid, how could I do stupid things now!” Ye Lang immediately retorted.

“You don’t? Don’t forget, back then, who was it that almost blew up the Princess Qi’s resting palace, as well as the one that rushed out to pet the dragon knight’s wyvern and almost got eaten? Furthermore, who was it…”

“Stop stop, those were all exceptional circumstances, besides, not

even a hair on my head was touched right?" Ye Lang refused to soften his stance and maintained his position.

"That's because your other mother spoils you..." Ye Chengtian had trouble speaking. The other mother he spoke of was the goddess of fortune. Right now, the Emperor and everybody else spoke of the relationship between Ye Lang and the goddess of fortune that way, as mother and son, otherwise... How could she favor him so much.

Chapter 94 - Trip (2)

“It doesn’t matter what you say anyway, I want to go out to travel, and I wil go alone. No one can follow me!” Said Ye Lang, opposing vehemently against the three people.

“Alone? Never! Absolutely not! Don’t even think about it!”

“No matter. At that time, I will just slip away alone. None of you can stop me!” Ye Lang straightforwardly said.

“……”

This sentence made those suddenly speechless. As long as Ye Lang wanted to go, no one believed that they could stop him. Ye Lang’s many disappearences were a good proof of this.

“Fine, I’ll allow it. But you need to contact us all the time!”

They could only helplessly agree. They would at least know, otherwise they wouldn’t even know if he had gone on the journey or otherwise...

“This is no problem, as long as I remember to..” Ye Lang promised to it, but his was promise was not much different from him not having done so.

“……”

……

“Son, where will you be going first?” Long An Qi suddenly asked Ye Lang, but she already had an idea where she believed Ye Lang would go to first.

“The Tiger tribe!” Ye Lang replied.

“…..I knew you would go there, you want to look for you Tigress…” Really as expected. Tai Ya was still kid’s most favorite.

……

“Ye Lang, at the trials… ” A wonderful voice rang.

“Trials your sister, do not bother me! Whoever mentions the trials in front of me, will have me to deal with!!” Ye Lang very angrily shouts back that sentence. These days he had been annoyed to death with that word. So when mentioned it to him this time, he didn’t think but just shouted angrily.

After he was finished with his tirade, Zhen Xiaoyan pulled him aside.

“Why?” Ye Lang looked helplessly at Zhen Xiaoyan and asked.

Zhen Xiaoyan pointed in front, indicating Ye Lang to look clearly.

“Uh……” Ye Lang saw the beautiful teacher at the front, her face now covered in a black cloud. The whole classroom was also staring at Ye Lang.

Some people showed admiration in their eyes: You fool, you even dare to go against her!

While some people showed glee, their eyes saying: Haha, you’re finished now.

……

This was the classroom, and the one who asked Ye Lang was no one else, but their beautiful teacher. That is to say, in front of so many students, Ye Lang directly cursed at their “beloved” beautiful teacher.

“You! Get out!!” The beautiful teacher angrily shouted.

“I am sorry, these past days I have become tired hearing of this thing. In any case, I will not participate in the trials!” Ye Lang apologized to the beautiful teacher, and after once again announcing his stance on the subject, he went out.

The beautiful teacher did not speak. Zhen Xiaoyan had wanted to go out with him, but then thinking about, she stopped. Ye Lang would often be confused, and would be called out by the teacher to the desk.

Other people may give Ye Lang face, but the beautiful teacher had never been extra reserved with him. She was impartial to the students, and didn't give a different treatment based on their status.

When Ye Lang left, the beautiful teacher continued the lecture. But her heart was suffocating, she was doing it for his own good, letting him succeed, but as a result, she was scolded at by him....

Hmph! Who cares about him!

As for the Ye Lang, after he went out, he stood at the door for a while, thinking of a place to go, and then immediately left for that place:

The library!

Learning was as boundless as the sea, even if Ye Lang never forgets and remembers all the books, looking through them again is always a new experience. Reading was not just memorizing it.

On the other hand, Ye Lang naturally only picked the books that appealed to him. He was lazy, and would never read those that were not within his sphere of interest, or that were not useful to him.

Right now, he needs to look at some reference books to plan for his journey!

In fact, if this matter was not mentioned, Ye Lang would have prepared next year. His plan was to go after next year, but he might as well do it now.

He wants to complete his adulthood ceremony first, and then after he is finished this year, it will then be the time to set out!

And he is just walking around, just regular travel only, not the so-called adventuring. He will not do such a boring and dangerous thing, he just wants to spend money here and there. Those dangerous things can be left for those professional people to do.

What he wants to know now is which are the most fun places, the famous and touristic places. In the past he had just ignored those, of course, that was because there was no time to see them.

“Young master Thirteen, you have been driven out by the teacher again?”

Coming to the library, Ye Lang met an acquaintance. He often encountered him in the library, a youth the same age as Ye Lang.

“Yeah, you too?” Ye Lang nodded, and then casually asked.

“No, I requested to come on my own initiative.” The young man said proudly.

“I can’t help but say this. You’re so cheap, even have to ask.” Ye Lang said very politely.

“Each their own, each their own...” The boy didn’t take it to heart, but just calmly answered.

“Let me see your book, oh right, do you know where the book on the mainland’s civilization geography is?” Ye Lang did not want to go on with the youth, and then he suddenly remembered, this youth was the authority in this library, even the administrator did not understand of the books here as much as him.

This boy was almost every day in the library, even during holidays. What is the goal he was aiming for in the future? You will see!

“Civilization geography? What do you want to do? You don’t want to go out for experience, adventure and battles?” The boy immediately guessed Ye Lang’s intent.

“You only guessed half. I want to go out to be prodigal and come back, not to take risks.” Ye Lang said with a smile.

The boy looked at Ye Lang, and then asked in doubt: “Are you saying that you can’t do it here in our empire, so you have to do it in the whole continent?

“Yes, indeed the brightest mind of this library. You guessed it.” Ye Lang said.

“How many times do I have to tell you, not the library, but the empire, no, the continent’s brightest mind in the future!” The youth very proudly said. Speaking of the ultimate goal of his life.

“You also said ‘in the future’, right now you are only the library’s. Do not say any more nonsense, tell me, where are those books?” Ye Lang ignored the boy’s words.

“…You wait and see! I definitely will!”

“Where?”

“There…”

“Thanks!”

“……”

Ye Lang soon found the books he wanted, then sat down, reading quietly. The library with two or three people became silent again.

All this time, Ye Lang did not seem to notice the person in front of him. It should be said that he was used to sitting there with people while reading books. They would not interfere with each other, so he wouldn’t pay attention to the person in front.

As he was looking at the book, he suddenly felt a very cold gaze,

even a hint of bloodlust. So he raised his head...

"...." Ye Lang was silent for a while and then continued on reading.

Pah! The book in the hand of the person in front fell down, it seems her hands were unstable from the shaking!

"...." Ye Lang ignored it and continued to read

"Ye Lang, I will make you regret it..." The person did not say anything but her heart secretly whispered this, and then she sat down.

If someone now saw this picture, then they would find it to be very strange. Why would the two people sit together to read, even though their grievances were very deep!

Of the two people, one didn't care, while the other didn't want to be outdone.

This person is no one else but the one single-handedly destroyed by Ye Lang, Sha Lan.

Nowadays she rarely appeared in the classroom and just wholeheartedly studied alchemy. She seems to have abandoned everything, there was only alchemy now in her life.

She also had a terrifying talent in alchemy. Before, her mind was never completely 100% on alchemy, only about 34%. Now that she was wholeheartedly studying alchemy, her talent also became visible.

Perhaps becuase of her studying crazily, her talent bloomed. In short, her future was limitless. If not for a certain person, she would likely have become the top in alchemy.

For this, even after Ye Lang knew the situation, he still did not care, so now he would not care either.

Since that day, every day, if Ye Lang appeared in the library, Sha Lan would also appear in front of him, and he would alway meet her with friendly eyes.

“Are you crazy? If you hate me so much, then why do you sit together with me everyday.” At the third time, Ye Lang directly asked her.

The first time could be a coincidence, the second time could also barely be considered a coincidence, but the third time was definitely not a coincidence!

“I want to defeat you!” Sha Lan answered.

“What?” Ye Land didn’t understand.

“I want to defeat you in alchemy!” Sha Land said while grinding

her teeth.

“Oh really. I will have you know that I am very powerful. If you can not become the empire’s first alchemist, then do not waste my time!” Ye Lang very objectively and honestly said. But to others this was just a display of arrogance.

“I will, and not just the empire’s. I will become the continent’s first!” Sha Lan said without cowering, she did not admit defeat.

“Another one… how come no one in this library is normal except me.” Ye Lang looked at the boy and then said sighingly.

“Ye Lang, I WILL do it!” The two said at almost the same time.

“We will see at that time, but stop arguing now…” Ye Lang scratched in his ears and said lazily.

“Good!” They said in unison.

Chapter 95 - On Behalf Of The Emperor (1)

“Done. It’s finished! Next year Tigress will be able to accompany me.” After several days of research, Ye Lang finally determined his route. According to his route map, he would travel to all places worth visiting on the whole continent. It was certain that he would spend an unbelievably long period of time on this journey, ggoing beyond everyone’s imagination.

According to his plan, it would take him five to six years to finish the journey, excluding the time spent in visiting.

Was this duration not a bit too long?

Absolutely. If anyone in the Ye Family knew his plan, he or she would straight-up cancel it or make him stop inbetween to go back home before continuing on to travel.

But if that is the case, his route map would be meaningless. In that case, he would have to travel with the Soaring Sky Empire as the center.

Can only say at that time. But in regards to this, Ye Lang still had various way to deal with it.

In order to avoid a change of his route, he thought he should keep his plan a secret from his family. He had better carry out his plan before telling them about it.

“Little brother!” Ye Lanyu suddenly appeared behind him.

“Hmm? What’s up?” Ye Lang hurriedly put his route map into his ring. Afraid that his plan would be discovered.

“What are you hiding?” Ye Lanyu asked.

“Nothing…” Ye Lang whistled, pretending to be calm, but this betrayed him.

“You dare lie to me?! When you stick up your behind, I know you are lying.” Ye Lanyu said with a little anger.

“Really?” Ye Lang looked at her with puzzlement and then pulled up… his behind!

“…” Is he…

“Do you know what I am going to do?” Ye Lang asked.

“Are you looking for a beating?!” Ye Lanyu gave him a hard slap on his ass.

“You are really lying. I want to run away, not receive a beating.” Ye Lang laughed and said. He was pleased because he knew his sister didn’t discover his plan.

“…” Ye Lanyu was a little worried about her silly brother.

Even if I don’t know what you are thinking about or if I misunderstood you, but now you’re telling me your intent.

Are you really trying to run away?

Right after telling her his intent, he ran away at once, so by now, he had already reached the gate of the library.

“Bastard, stop!” Ye Lanyu chased him while shouting.

“No, if I am caught, you will ask me about my travel.” Ye Lang shouted to reply. His reply told her that he was planning his journey.

“… I got it, so you don’t need to run away anymore.” Ye Lanyu kept silent for a while. She stopped chasing him, and said this while smiling calmly.

“Oh, how do you know I will leave home for several years?” Ye Lang also stopped running and asked her in a daze.

“…”

“I didn’t know. But now I do! You dare to have a mind to leave home for several years! ” Ye Lanyu clutched his collar and scolded him angrily.

“I want an enjoyable journey. I will write to you, I promise. Is that okay, my dear sister?” Ye Lang begged her and looked pitiful, which made her anger dissipate.

“No way. It’s no good unless you agree to bring me along.” Ye Lanyu made up her mind not to compromise. This was her principle.

“No. Bringing you along will cause me many troubles, since you always do something strange.” Ye Lang refused and this was his principle. He seldom went out with her since childhood, let alone travel with her.

“You still remember… I no longer do what I have done in our childhood. Moreover, you are no longer a little boy.” She pulled his hand, and said with a smile.

“I don’t believe you!” Ye Lang said directly.

“…”

“If you don’t agree, I won’t let you go. If you run away, I will let everyone in the continent look for you and you won’t enjoy your travel.” Ye Lanyu rolled her eyes, and threatened him.

“… Fine, if you are free, you can come with me for some time.” Ye Lang was afraid his sister would really do what she said.

“Yes, I hadn’t even thought about it. If you don’t return home, I can spend some time with you whenever I want. Okay, deal!” Ye Lanyu said with a smile.

“You are so stupid!” Ye Lang said.

“Bang!” Ye Lanyu punched him on the head.

“Ah…”

“You dare say that?! I’m telling you, you can’t bad mouth me. ” She pinched his face and warned him.

“Why not?” He asked.

“That’s because I am your elder sister!”

“…”

A good reason!

“Why did you come here? You seldom come looking for me at the library at this time.” He suddenly noticed that her arrival was unusual.

“Well, I almost forgot about it. Princess Qi and I were looking for you because the Emperor needs your help.” She patted her head

and said.

“...I don’t want to go!” He knew that the problem that the Emperor couldn’t solve must be very tricky, so if he went there it would become his big headache.

What’s worse, if he solved the problem, would they turn to him again next time? It was possible.

“Don't worry. They said that the problem should be solved only by you. It is not a difficult one to deal with. If it turns out to be a tricky one, we can leave directly.” Ye Lanyu said. She knew a lot about him, so she was clear on what he was worried about.

Ye Lang nodded his head and said, “If that’s the case, then let's go there. Will Little Qi go with us?”

“Leave her alone. She will go there by herself.” Ye Lanyu replied directly and left with him.

They didn't get along well with each other, so whoever found Ye Lang first, they would not wait for the other. In other words, if Princess Qi had found him, she would have brought him to the palace immediately instead of waiting for Ye Lanyu to join them.

“Okay...” Ye Lang was pulled away by her.

“Shit! Ye Lanyu, I will teach you a lesson!” When Princess Qi arrived at the library, she found that Ye Lang had left. She then

stamped her foot and strode in order to catch up with them.

....

In the Imperial Study of the palace, the Emperor told Ye Lang the problem that needed to be solved. There were only several people present. All of them were trustworthy, and also included Ye Cheng Tian, Ye Lang's father.

“... So that's your problem?” After hearing what the Emperor said, Ye Lang frowned and asked.

“Yes, that's all. But we can’t do that on our own. I think you are the most suitable for it!” The Emperor nodded and said seriously.

“So inconvenient. Since you already know the answer, why don’t you just do that on your own?” Ye Lang said.

“You don't know how many things and people are involved in it. Even if they know you did it, they won't blame you. But it’s different for us, that's why we can’t do that.” Said the Emperor, not explaining the reason.

For them, it was not easy to explain to Ye Lang and it was also irrelevant and he didn’t really need to know the reason.

“So you can ask someone else to do this, why did you turn to me?” Ye Lang didn't care about anything else but the reason why he was asked to do that.

“We chose you because in your cause, there can be a reasonable explanation. You can also inadvertently come into contact with this matter. You can get involved and no one will blame you.” The Emperor said with a smile.

“You people in the positions of great power always have a lot of tricks!” Ye Lang told his feeling frankly, which embarrassed them a lot.

“…”

"Cough cough. You can go and do what you need to do in the way you like, as long as it is done." The Emperor coughed and waved his hand to let Ye Lang leave.

“Got it! I will do that this time. But don't ask me to do so next time.” He said with arrogance and never regarded the Emperor with reverence.

“…” Whatever, I’m this brat’s uncle right now, can only let him go.

“What did they ask you to do?” When Ye Lang walked out of the study, Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi came up to ask him. They were waiting for him outside the study because the Emperor had said they could do it together, but only Ye Lang could listen to what needed to be done.

“They asked me to set some people free, kill some, and put some in prison. It‘s easy. ” Ye Lang shrugged and said.

“Kill some people? No! How can you do that? Why does father ask you to do so?" Both replied in almost the same words. The “Father” they mentioned referred to the Emperor and Ye Chengtian respectively in the room now.

“That is not my idea but theirs. They will kill them and I will be just involved in it more or less. So I will feel unrest in the following days and they are not good men.” Ye Lang said calmly.

“Don't do that. Let someone else do that.” Ye Lanyu said.

“Since they turned to me, it means that no one is more suitable.” Ye Lang shook his head and said. He hadn't refused to do that because he knew he was the most suitable.

"But you don't have to do that! Don't worry. I will take the responsibility.” Ye Lanyu always protected Ye Lang and she was willing to take any responsibility for him.

That was her love for him and her love would never change!

Chapter 96 - On Behalf Of The Emperor (2)

“No, since father also agreed, it means that he is also in a dilemma. As his son, I should do something to help him.” Ye Lang shook his head and told them another important reason.

“You’re right, it’s easy to kill several people.” Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi had the same idea. In a world with the law of the jungle, killing and being killed happened almost every moment. Everyone became numb to it.

And at this moment, it seemed that they found that Ye Lang was not as vulnerable as they had thought, because he dared to agree to do this and looked calm.

Maybe he knew the rule behind it. Maybe he failed to make an immediate response.

“In spite of this, don't join me. After all, this is not a good thing.”Ye Lang waved his hand and walked towards a direction.

“No, I want to go with you!” Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi said. When they intended to chase him, they were pulled back by the people following them.

And those who pulled them back were no one else but their fathers!

“Dad. Hmph, you guys are not good people, asking him to kill...”

Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi complained to their fathers.

“He isn’t going to kill anyone, he just needs to pretends to do so, but actually, it will be done by us. After all, he is a member of the Ye family, so sooner or later, he will have such kinds of experiences. If you always protect him, he will be even more helpless. How can he survive in the future!” Ye Chengtian looked away, and said seriously.

“…”

Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi finally understood why they asked Ye Lang to do this. It was because they thought Ye Lang was the most suitable. What's more, they wanted to temper Ye Lang because they cared about him!

However, did Ye Lang even need the training to improve his ability to survive?

Maybe…

“So in the end, what did you ask him to do?” Princess Qi asked since they still didn't know what on earth the task was.

“You know, the three empires look very peaceful now, as if there is no war or conflict, but in fact, we have had military conflicts. Some battles often break out on the borders, and the spies of different countries are always active!” The Emperor tried to explain and told them the situation briefly.

“Yes!” Both Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi nodded.

“The existence of the spies has always been an open secret among countries, and some even know that some of the spies are scouting, but allow it secretly.” The Emperor added.

“The aim is to let them get the wrong message!” Princess Qi guessed.

“Well, yes! Under the proper situation, something bad can bring benefits!” The Emperor nodded, feeling satisfied with Princess Qi’s words.

“The situation is the same all the time, but recently, something wrong has happened. There are more and more spies and it seems that something is being carried out.” The Emperor said and frowned.

Princess Qi did not ask what it was, because she did not want to know about it. She never participated in these struggles from beginning to end!

“We are still not clear about what their purpose is right now, because these spies only know what they need to do, but do not know the purpose! However, it is certain that they have an agreement!” The Emperor added: “Though we do not know what their purpose is or what makes them unite to fight against us, we can seize this chance to end their cooperation!”

“Maybe… let the cat out of the bag!”

They planned to kill some of the spies, put some in prison, and let others go. Even those who sent the spies knew that it was a trick, but this would still lead to conflicts and mutual suspicion among them.

This was the purpose that the Emperor and the others had. Moreover, they did not tell Ye Lang who should be killed, imprisoned or set free. It was random!

“Got it. And now, we do nothing but wait?” Princess Qi was a little worried and asked. She was afraid that Ye Lang would get into trouble.

“Of course not, we will follow him to find out what Ye Lang would do in the end.” The Emperor shook his head and said. Although they thought Ye Lang was the prime candidate, it didn't mean they would be assured that he would make it.

That was because Ye Lang often did something unimaginable to bring unexpected changes! And some of these changes brought benefits, but most of them caused harm!

They came to a palace which looked very luxurious, but was actually very horrifying. This was the place where the prisoners were given a sentence secretly. There were all kinds of tools used for torture.

When Ye Lang went into it, he found that the hall looked as clean and tidy as the other palaces.

In the hall, there was only a table with a chair and it looked like a judgment hall!

[TL: the government office in feudal China]

Ye Lang directly rushed to the only chair, and sat down comfortably, then he heavily knocked on the desk with a square-

“Snap!”

“Bring the prisoners!”

“…”

He really imagined that he was in a judgement hall, but in this world, no one knew what he meant by doing this. They were staring at him, and were thinking that he became silly again.

But even so, they still understood that Ye Lang asked them to bring the prisoners to…

That’s wrong!

“Thirteenth young master, what? Why did you come here today?” The staff member on duty asked and soon found that Thirteenth young master was not their boss, so he wasn't in charge.

The staff naturally didn't know the arrangement that the Emperor made. If they did, all that planning would’ve been done in vain.

And at this moment, people in a dark room were fixing their eyes on the hall, praying that Ye Lang wouldn't forget the things that had been said to him.

Puzzled by what Ye Lang said before, they forgot to tell him how to start!

“No, don't I look serious? I am busy, and I am not kidding you. Hurry up and bring the prisoners here! This is the Emperor’s handwritten order. I am in charge of this!” He opened the handwritten order.

“Hey, when did I give that to him?” The Emperor felt a bit strange, because he just gave him a token. What happened next shocked everyone.

“Thirteenth young master, nothing is written here... ” The staff member on duty said helplessly. He saw such a blank written order for the first time, but the seal there told him it was real.

Whether a handwritten order was real or not depended on the seal!

But such a blank order document carrying the imperial seal, it should be impossible!

Is it really true that the Emperor absolutely trusted that he would not betray him?

It seems that Thirteenth young master really won the Emperor's heart. I should avoid offending him from now on.

That was not the case, no one knew how he got that! If the Emperor heard their conversation, he would've loudly said so...

"Oh, nothing? Please wait a minute, I will write something on it!" Ye Lang was going to write on it, but could not remember what to write. "How to write this?"

He had never written such a handwritten order!

Forget it, write it like this -

Ye Lang's words were the imperial edict! On behalf of the Emperor!

Fuck, he was such a rascal, he even dared to write such an order document! The Emperor was speechless, and he was curious about

how Ye Lang got such a handwritten order.

But this made it better, since it proved that what he did, had nothing to do with us!

“Well, bring the prisoners here and serve a pot of tea and some pastries.” Ye Lang put his legs on the table, leaned on the chair, and slightly tilted backwards. He looked really relaxed.

“This…”

“Why aren't you taking action? Guards! Come take him away!” Ye Lang directly shouted. The guards outside the palace swarmed in to take away the man on duty that had hesitated.

These guards were different from those inside the hall. Ye Lang had a written order in his hands and they knew of his personal circumstances. They naturally believed Ye Lang and chose to believe him unconditionally.

“How to punish him? Ask him to sing outside, he is not allowed to stop unless I say he can!” When the guards asked how to punish the man, Ye Lang proposed a strange idea.

“…”

Then, after some twists and turns, Ye Lang finally began to do what he should do…

“You thirteen people do not know one another?” Ye Lang looked at the anguished looks on their faces and guessed that they must have been tortured.

“We are all good people. We are innocent Thirteenth young master!” Seeing Ye Lang, those people became very excited, as if they saw the hope.

“You all know me?”

Nonsense. In the imperial city, everyone knows you, including the common folk, let alone the spies!

Perhaps because of this, they thought that Ye Lang may set them free, because he was stupid and always caused chaos. Anyway, they thought they had gotten an opportunity to leave the prison.

“We all know you. We all like you, Thirteenth young master. And we all know that you are a good and kind man.” Those people kept speaking highly of him.

Can I be fooled by your words? Do you think I am so stupid!

Ye Lang looked at them with disdain, and then said -

“Well, go on. Praise me… ”

“…”

After keeping silent for a while, those people immediately began and strove to praise Ye Lang. They even described his shortcomings as advantages making Ye Lang doubt if they were talking about him…

Chapter 97 - The Interrogation (1)

“Don't you feel ashamed...” The group of people hiding in the dark room were looking at him and felt ashamed of his behavior. However, Ye Lang still looked like he was enjoying it and felt that he was cool!

“Well, you are all good people, so... Do you know each other?” Ye Lang asked.

“No, we have never met!” The thirteen people there immediately shook their heads and denied.

Slap! Ye Lang picked up a wood block and slammed it on the table, shocking everyone.

“Don't lie. If you don't know each other, why did you get sent into the prison together and flatter me as one? It is clear that you are a group!” Ye Lang claimed that these people knew each other, and now he treated them unjustly. “You all commited the crime of conspiracy and rebelling. You deserve the death penalty!”

“No, we didn't do so. How can we dare to do so!” The thirteen people were shocked and replied. It seems that Thirteenth young master wasn’t our savior, but has come here to end our lives. We are done.

And at this time, if you were careful enough, you could find that several people among them looked different...

“Look at you. Your faces tell me that you dare to do so. Your face screams ‘We betrayed the country!’ Well... This case has been solved, pull them out and cut their heads off!” Ye Lang said casually.

“...” This brat, what does he intend to do by doing this?

The Emperor and others intended to stop him, but having arrived to the current situation, they couldn't show themselves!

“Thirteenth young master, don’t just kill us like that. None of us are from Soaring Sky Empire, so even if we planned to rebel, we wouldn't do that here!” One of them said with anxiety.

“Oh, so you just planned to rebel in your own country. That’s none of our business. But you just said that you don't know each other. How do you know that they are not from Soaring Sky Empire? "Ye Lang smilingly looked at the man.

“That’s because...”

“We got to know each other after being sent here.” The other person lied.

“So you do know each other. You dare lie to me when I am here on behalf of the Emperor, which means you also lied to the Emperor, so you deserve the death penalty. You will have to die!” Ye Lang said with a smile.

“…”

“If you don't want to die, tell me the truth. I do not have much time!” Ye Lang flicked his fingers, showing how relaxed he was.

“What do you want to know?”

“Tell me why you came here. You all came here from different countries and even stayed together. Don't tell me you came here just for a visit!” Ye Lang said.

“I don't understand. In this imperial city, there are many travelers like us. You can find one thousand and eight hundred travelers easily.z” said the man.

“Yes. I can find many foreigners, but it is unusual to catch so many strong-minded people like you. You don't need to tell me your identities. However, you need to know that if ordinary people were caught and tortured, they would even betray their countries in exchange for survival and wealth!” Ye Lang said while looking at them.

“There may be a coincidence if only one man is so strong-minded, but all thirteen of you are so tough, so it is absolutely not a coincidence!”

“…”

“Well, we know that you are spies, but your lives can be spared. I want to know... in the end, how many of our secrets do you know? If you know too many, then I am sorry, but you have to stay here!” Ye Lang said very calmly.

“We know nothing. Even if you question us again, the answer is the same!” One man said.

“Oh, really? Then I ask you a question. What does one plus one equal?” Ye Lang smiled and asked.

“...” At this moment, everyone was in a daze for a while, and they didn't understand why Ye Lang asked such a question. Did he do so in order to test them, or to loosen their vigilance?

“You don't know this?” Ye Lang’s face looked serious.

“I have no idea...” The man was very cautiously, a bit too cautiously. But at this moment, he thought that even if Ye Lang asked him whether he was male or not, he shouldn't answer him.

Otherwise, who knows what Ye Lang will do!

Ye Lang looked at the man, and then very directly said: “You don't know this? Are you kidding me! Come on, take him out and cut his head off!”

“...” All of them were in a daze again..

At this moment, the Emperor and the others understood that Ye Lang found an excuse to kill him. Although this reason was not really good, they could achieve the goal and they accepted it.

But those people didn't understand it. If that man died due to such a reason, wasn’t it arbitrary murder ?

“Go on, take him away and cut his head off. Bring his head back to let them have a look. I am not joking!” Ye Lang flicked his fingers and said indifferently.

“Yes!” The guards followed the order and took the man away who was crying for help, and then...

His crying stopped suddenly, and then the guards brought the man’s head back. Ye Lang did not look at it, perhaps because he couldn't stand it. Perhaps he didn't need to do so!

The person was really dead. The twelve people began to fear him... They thought that Ye Lang was joking with them. They had never heard that Ye Lang didn't value the lives of people.

“Now, I ask you again, why did you come here? This is the last chance, and I will not ask you again!” Ye Lang said.

“We... ” Among those people, some were hesitant.

“We won't tell you. Give it up!” Some were not afraid of death, because they had been trained well.

“Oh, the same question. You answer it. What does one plus one equal?” Ye Lang smiled and said to the man.

“Two, don't ask such a silly question again.” Said the man with arrogance.

“You know too much! Come and cut his head off!” Ye Lang waved his hand and said.

“...” Everyone was in silence...

Fuck, know too much? Everyone knows the answer...

“Whatever... ” That man said coldly, and showed his indifference.

“Don't bring his head back, and take this one away. It's too disgusting.” Ye Lang added..

“You... Do you know what one plus one equal?” Ye Lang smiled and asked.

“Ah... ” Some people began to clutch their heads and became mad. It seemed that the simple question Ye Lang asked them with a smile made them crazy.

Not to mention these people, even those in the dark room also didn't want to hear Ye Lang ask this question!

“I’ll tell you. I was ordered to come here, but I was just asked to make some observations and the leader said someone would tell me what to do next, that person would be the one that can say the secret signal.” One man began to tell the truth, but his information was not so important.

“And you?” Ye Lang continued to ask.

“We have the same answer!” Some people said.

“Hmph, you are all chickens. Are you really spies?” A few people said with pride.

“Well, I admire your integrity, you can leave now!” Ye Lang said to those lofty men. To their surprise, they were allowed to leave.

“You’re letting us go?” They blankly said.

“Yeah. Go, before I change my mind!” Ye Lang frowned and said. It seemed to be a difficult decision.

They left without saying anything else, and everyone knew that Thirteenth young master was an unusual man. But so long they could survive, they did not have any need to find out the reason.

Otherwise, they would break down.

“What about us?” Asked those who had compromised.

“Since you admitted that you are spies, I naturally cannot let you go. You will be treated well in our imperial prison and you can feel at ease there until the end of your life!” Ye Lang said, and then put these people into the prison.

“Ah… ” No one knew why Ye Lang did so, he seldom followed the routine.

He let those who deserved imprisonment leave but put those who should be set free into the prison!

“Well, take them away!” Ye Lang knocked on the table to order the guards to take away those poor spies. He stayed in the hall alone.

At this moment, he did not leave, but sat down and leaned against the chair.

“What is he doing? Why is he staying here?” The Emperor and the others had intended to leave since the matter was done, but now they found that Ye Lang behaved in a very strange way.

As far as they know, Ye Lang would usually be the first to leave as soon as the matter was over. He wouldn't stay there, unless there was something unresolved!

Something was unresolved?

Yes. Soon, the guards outside brought two men over, making everyone understand that it wasn't over!

Moreover, the two men were not those who showed arrogance, but were those who should have died, because theoretically, their heads had been cut off. In fact, the man standing in the middle should have been dead, since everyone had seen his head.

The two men were exactly those who had just been pulled out to to have their heads severed based on Ye Lang’s order!

“How can this be? I saw his head very clearly, why doesn't he have any injury?” The Emperor and others were curious. The head was not covered by anything and was clearly showed to everyone.

“Take them to the single cells, and don't let anyone contact them!” Ye Lang said. “Aiyo, I am not cruel enough to kill you. Let others do that!”

Ye Lang thought that in the end, even if he just pretended to kill them, this made him feel bad. That's why he did things in a smart way to make people believe that he killed them. In the end, he still achieved his goal.

Of course, he had secretly communicated with some royal guards in advance, so that they took action according to his plan.

“He must have taken advantage of alchemy to make a fake head which looks like a real one!” Ye Chengtian said with a smile, full of pride.

“Yes, it must be that!” Everyone followed up.

At this moment, everyone believed it was the end, but they found that Ye Lang gave a another more exciting performance.

A while after the two were taken away, the guards brought one of them back again. This man had been the first to oppose Ye Lang, and was the second to be taken away.

Chapter 98 - The Interrogation (2)

“Why did you order them to bring me back?” The man looked at Ye Lang and asked arrogantly.

“Tell me the truth. Since nobody else is here now, tell me.” Ye Lang tapped the table with his fingers, and said slowly.

“What are you talking about? I don't understand!” The man was confused.

“From your eyes, I see your desire to survive. And I see even more greed. I really don't understand why you are chosen as a spy by your country! Well, as long as you tell me what you know, I will let you go and give you a new identity, along with plenty of wealth!” Ye Lang slowly said. Upon hearing what he said, sentence by sentence, that man showed different facial expressions.

“I’m not... ” The man wanted to refute, but when he saw Ye Lang’s eyes, he finally lowered his head. “Well, I admit that I am such a person, but I didn't expect that you would see through me. I mean... It seems that you are not silly like the rumors say!”

“Of course I’m not silly, I just keep a low profile.” Ye Lang did not feel embarrassed and agreed with his praise for him.

“...”

I didn't realize that this brat wasn't modest at all. I didn't know

about his wisdom either. Perhaps... Did he just pretend to be silly?

Anyway, it was right to give him this task. Unexpectedly, he achieved more than what was asked!

“What do you want to know?” The man asked.

“An easy question. Tell me, why did the spies from many countries come here together?” Ye Lang asked.

"I am not very clear about it, but I have heard my boss say that we work as bystanders, enjoying the situation. If possible, we can take the opportunity to get some benefits!” The man spilled what he knew, but what he said still could not explain everything clearly.

“What situation?” Ye Lang asked.

“I have no idea. I only know that one of your groups, and your people invited us to come here to enjoy the situation.” The man replied.

“What?!” The people in the dark room were shocked, because they had not thought that this turmoil was actually caused by one of their own.

And they were now wondering who in the end did so and for what?

“Alright, take him away!” Ye Lang felt that he could no longer get more information from him. So he let others take him away.

“Didn't you promise to set me free and give me plenty of wealth?” The man said while struggling.

“I did promise you, but it didn't mean that I would do that right now. That's not my business! Today is done. I want to go!” Ye Lang stood up.

“You... You’re too shameless...” [For the next paragraph you need to know that he said: You’re toothless/have no tooth, meaning he is shameless.]

"Who says I am toothless, I have a mouth full of good teeth!" Ye Lang opened his mouth, showing his perfect white teeth.

“...”

...

After finishing the task, Ye Lang went back to the study to tell them what he knew briefly, and then got ready to leave. Of course, the Emperor and the others wouldn't let him go unless they figured everything out.

“Ye Lang, how did you know that? Why did the man tell you?”

This was the Emperor’s first question.

“That's easy. After the head of the first man was cut, he made a positive response with another eleven present, which showed that he was either loyal or wanted a talk with me alone... So I just tried.” Ye Lang said casually.

“So you just tried... I thought you were certain of it. That man was also strange, if you really killed him, that would’ve been really bad luck, right?” Princess Qi asked, standing on one side.

“Who knows what he thought. Though it seems that he thought money was more important than life!” Ye Lang was not clear about this, and only that man himself knows what he was thinking.

However, it didn't matter. Whatever!

“Then I wonder, why did you set those who should be put into prison free, but kept the others here?" This was the Emperor’s second question.

“What do you mean by saying those who should not be set free? You just asked me to do that at random. I thought those people were quite lofty, so I let them go. There are few lofty people!” This was the answer Ye Lang gave.

“...” The Emperor and the others became silent, thinking that they should have known that this brat didn't know who should be set free. He just did what he liked.

This question, in fact, was meaningless!

But later, everything became very different. Those who had been set free were killed one by one in spite of their integrity and loyalty to their countries. So there was mutual suspicion among them.

The reason was very simple. Although they told the truth, it was too ridiculous. That was why it was believed that they were lying to help Soaring Sky Empire spread false news, thereby betraying their own countries.

If they had stayed inside, perhaps after a period of time, their country would have made some offers to exchange for them, because they were rare talents.

But Ye Lang let them go back casually, so they were no longer trustworthy. Moreover, they were suspected of betraying their countries!

As for those who were put into the prison, they got the attention of their countries and were considered good spies!

Loyal people were executed, but those who were not faithful may come to power. This could also result in the decline of strength of their countries indirectly. To some degree, it was a way to reduce the strength of the other countries.

At that time, many people guessed this was the purpose Ye Lang

had from the beginning.

“Did you take advantage of your alchemy to make the head that you showed to everyone?”

“Yes, I can copy a thing in a moment, a head or anything else.” Ye Lang nodded.

They were not surprised that he had all kinds of strange things, even the handwritten order… Yes, the handwritten order…

“One more question. How did you get the handwritten order, and a blank one at that?” This was a serious problem so he had to get a clear answer.

“I bought it.” Ye Lang gave a very surprising answer, but it was very reasonable. That was because he bought some strange things.

“…Where did you buy it?” The Emperor and the others were speechless.

“I bought it in Baker Street, where there are a lot of interesting things. I saw this blank handwritten order by accident and I bought it to fool others, and I made use of it this time.” Ye Lang replied. He spoke calmly and it seemed that he didn't know it was a serious problem.

“Is it a real one?” The Emperor asked seriously.

“No!” Ye Lang directly replied.

“...A counterfeit?” The Emperor and the others looked at it, and found something wrong. But they couldn't tell what was wrong.

“Don't you see it? Its imperial jade seal is complete!” Ye Lang said.

“Yes, it is. There is a small gap in the lower left corner of the real seal, but this one is complete.” They finally realized it, they had forgotten this detail.

Since they saw the seal every day, that became the reason why sometimes, they ignored some details.

No one dared to make a counterfeit of the seal, so no one paid attention to this!

“Who even dares to make an imperial jade seal!” The Emperor said in a deep voice. He would let the guilty man be held accountable for it.

“I don't know. It was the only one at that time. Even if you know who makes it, there is no way to find the guilty man.” Ye Lang waved his hand.

“Why?" The Emperor asked.

“Although it looks new, it was made two hundred years ago. It was made with a kind of special paper, which had disappeared as early as two hundred years ago.” Ye Lang said. He intended to add more, but someone cut in:

“It might have been made by the people in previous dynasties who used this kind of special paper.”

“Well, maybe, but on the paper the man who made this order left a signature and a date. I know you cannot see them, they were hidden in patterns. No one could do so except him...”

“The world’s best craftsman, Hong Ye. Year... Month... Day... ”

“...”

“The order Hong Ye made looks like a real one. He deserved the name! It is valuable. What Ye Lang wrote on it certainly ruined it!" Some people felt it a pity.

“Shit, my handwriting is more precious than his. It will be more valuable because of my handwriting!” Ye Lang shook his head, ignored the crowd, and left!

“...”

Ye Lang left, with the two girls following right after, but the

Emperor and the others had to stay here to find out who invited the spies behind the scenes, and what his purpose was...

Although they were not sure of these points, it was certain that something would happen, so they planned to take action to defend their countries, but they had to do that secretly to avoid alerting the enemy.

However, now they were thinking about who should be put in charge of the defense. The man in charge must be faithful enough because it was likely that it was caused by someone among them.

How about putting Ye Lang in charge?!

They first mentioned Ye Lang, but they soon believed he was not appropriate for the job, since he wouldn’t be able to complete such a task.

And then, they thought about their children. In any time, their children were the most faithful. The Emperor also thought so.

Of course, the Emperor also excluded some and chose those children who would never betray him and would be able to complete the task...

Ye Lang was excluded. Ye Lanyu was also excluded, and so was Princess Qi!

Theese three were trustworthy, but they were unsuitable. They

were too pure to fight against the evil. Perhaps the people together with Ye Lang would be purified gradually.

No matter what others said, the three had a good and close relationship since childhood, since the three had always been together. Although they quarreled very frequently, the three got closer and closer...

Chapter 99 - Escort

“Little Qi, I’ve discovered something fun recently.” Ye Lang saw Princess Qi and spoke to her with a smile.

“What did you discover?” Princess Qi warily looked at Ye Lang. This was because looking at the smile on Ye Lang’s face right now, she could tell that he was once again about to do something weird.

“I don't’ know what to call it yet, I just completed it now. Either way, it’s really fun… ” Ye Lang continued smiling.

“Really fun? Then go play by yourself, I don’t want to be your guinea pig. Haven’t you hurt me enough already?” Princess Qi replied somewhat helplessly.

All these years, Ye Lang had intentionally or accidentally messed with Princess Qi countless times. One time, Princess Qi refused to leave her room for an entire month because of him, as for what he had done, nobody knew even now, they only knew that Ye lang had been the cause.

According to the rumors, at that time, all of the hair on Princess Qi’s body had changed color, which was why she had been too scared to leave her room.

And even with things like this, Princess Qi had never gotten mad at Ye Lang. On the contrary, she still spoiled him every way she could. This made everybody feel that the doting love she had for Ye Lang did not lose to anybody.

“Don’t worry, I’ve already found people to test this on and it was very successful… ” Ye Lang said.

“What were the results?” Princess Qi asked.

“She tried to kill me for 3 days, she wouldn’t even cook for me.” Ye Lang replied.

“…So it was Xiaoyan, she was so mad she wouldn’t even cook for you. There must be some serious problems with your thing, I refuse!” Princess Qi refused.

“What problems, it just turned her into a rabbit, don’t all of you girls love them?” Ye Lang said innocently.

“Turned her into a rabbit?” Princess Qi and Ye Lanyu asked, baffled.

“Yeah, my earlier experiment failed and produced a weird alchemy spell that could turn all organisms into rabbits. The duration is unknown however, the longest was 3 days, the shortest was less than 5 minutes.” Ye Lang said.

“Oh… ”

“One day you guys were looking for me, remember? You couldn’t find me and you picked up a rabbit to embrace and called it cute.

That rabbit you were hugging and cuddling was me!”

“…So it was you, I was wondering where that rabbit disappeared off to, and at the same time you suddenly appeared. Wait that’s wrong, at that time, I carried the rabbit with me to the bath and I also said that… YE LANG!!!” Princess Qi suddenly yelled at Ye lang as she realized the problems within her words.

“It’s not like we haven’t bathed together before, what’s wrong with it?” Ye Lang shrugged his shoulders.

Thump Princess Qi whacked Ye Lang “That was when we were kids, we’ve grown up now, it’s not the same!”

“Isn’t it all the same? You’re you, I’m me… ” Ye Lang innocently said.

“Hmph! I can’t be bothered with you!”

“Hey hey, stop fighting. Little brother, this rabbit transformation alchemy spell of yours, does it affect all living things?” Ye Lanyu asked.

“In theory yes, I’ve done lots of testing, it’s all the same!” Ye Lang nodded.

“Then aren’t you undefeatable like this, if we turn all of those opponents into rabbits, aren't we invincible?” Ye Lanyu excitedly spoke.

“Won’t work, this kind of shapeshifting alchemy can only affect outside appearances, wisdom and strength are not changed. An expert transformed into something as small as a rabbit is even harder to defeat than their original form! Moreover, as long as something hurts the rabbit, it will immediately turn back. That is to say, you can’t fight them! Besides, there might be other things that could remove the transformation, so this train of thought is incorrect… ” Ye Lang shook his head, denying the possibility of becoming invincible in this abnormal way.

“Oh, that’s a pity, then this can only be used to play around.” Ye Lanyu was a little crestfallen but she quickly recovered. To her, this had never been that big of a deal.

“Being turned into a rabbit isn’t much, why did Xiaoyan get mad, did you do something else to her?” Princess Qi thought something was off. Considering Zhen Xiaoyan’s attitude towards Ye Lang, she shouldn’t get so mad over something this small that she wouldn’t cook for him.

“It’s nothing much, after she turned into a rabbit, her clothes didn’t transform with her, so when she reverted back to normal, she wasn’t wearing clothes…” Ye Lang gestured with his hands as he spoke.

“…”

“At that time were there people present?” Princess Qi believed that if no one was present and there was only Zhen Xiaoyan and Ye

Lang, she wouldn't get mad.

“There were, at that time mother, father, seventh brother, and seventh sister-in-law just happened to come by. They said they needed me for something, but they didn’t see, when she turned back I shielded her with my body!”

“Idiot. What use does you blocking have, to lose face like that in front of mother and father, she might even be suicidal... ” Ye Lanyu hit Ye Lang’s head and unhappily spoke.

“Is it like that?”

“Ai...” Ye Lanyu and Princess Qi shook their heads at the same time.

...

“Fatty...” Ye Lang called out to Zhen Xiaoyan.

“Hmph!” Zhen Xiaoyan turned her head and ignored him.

“I want to eat a thousand layer cake!” Ye Lang acted like he hadn’t seen her ignore him and got straight to the point.

“Here take it, I hope you choke to death!” Zhen Xiaoyan took out the best thousand layer cake and shoved it straight into Ye lang’s mouth.

.....

Recently the Imperial palace had been filled with waves beneath the surface. Of course, because it was beneath the surface, not many people knew, even people who considered themselves to be well-informed didn't know.

Yet, even among these hidden waves, even in the face of this formless menace, power struggles still occurred. Within the Emperor's group of progeny and trusted advisors, each and every one was engaged in a struggle for authority on the field of power.

And on the Imperial academy's side, another struggle was occurring today. However, unlike the struggle of the people above them, this struggle was not as hidden. The academy gave a majority of people an uplifting feeling, this was the competition of hot-blooded youth.

This was the examination of the academy, a full-school examination conducted for the sake of next year's big competition!

Just as Ye Lang had mentioned earlier, he did not attend this grand examination that mobilized the entire academy. No matter what method others used, carrot or stick, they were all unable to cause him to change his mind.

However, he kept on appearing at the examination grounds, and not even just at the alchemy academy, he also appeared at the magic academy...

The reason?

“Sis, it’s your turn.” Ye Lang sat on the sidelines of the competition grounds while eating the snacks prepared by Zhen Xiaoyan. After eagerly watching the conclusion of one competition, he spoke to Ye Lanyu.

“I know! Little brother, is there anything you want to say to me?” Ye Lanyu looked at Ye Lang as she spoke.

“Go easy this match, don’t kill anyone!” Ye Lang replied.

“What are you saying? What do you mean don’t kill anyone? You talk like I’m very violent!” Ye Lanyu somewhat unhappily said.

“You’re not very violent, you’re extremely violent. Out of the people who have competed with you, which of them didn’t get injured? The worst was that one guy, who knows how long he had to stay in bed!” Ye Lang retorted without exaggerating or mincing his words.

“It’s not to that extent…” Ye Lanyu had been scolded about that to the point her face started turning red.

Ye Lang thought for a bit and then continued: “But you don’t need to especially hold back, swords and sabers have no eyes, a contest between two people is full of sudden twists and turns, accidents can happen if one is careless for an instant, safety first!”

“In the end are you saying to prioritize not killing or safety first?” Ye Lanyu stared at Ye Lang and asked. Ye Lang’s words contradicted themselves, achieving one policy while giving up on the other.

“Safety first!” Ye Lang didn’t need to think and immediately replied.

“Good boy, I know you love your sister.” Ye Lanyu pleasedly said. She then wore a smile as she walked down to compete.

“Ye Lang, how come you never say that to me, so unfair!” On the side, Princess Qi jealously spoke.

Ye Lang watched the field and didn’t turn his head to reply: “You don't need it, you do things properly unlike my sister.”

“Sometimes, I really want to do things like Ye Lanyu, at least that way, you’ll care about me a bit more.” Said Princess Qi.

“Isn’t it all the same? There’s not much difference at all.” Ye Lang said in a tone that showed he didn’t really care.

“As if, you clearly favor your sister, it’s not the same at all!” Princess Qi said.

“Of course, she’s my sister, you are two different people, of

course there will be differences.” Ye Lang countered.

“Then why did you say it’s the same just now!” Princess Qi shouted, looking very unhappy.

“What’s the same is that I won’t treat the two of you differently, not that the two of you are the same.” Ye Lang stupidly replied. Isn’t this also the same?

“……”

Princess Qi no longer tried to bring up this problem for discussion, after all, Ye Lang wasn’t that biased. He had also attended her competition and had also said words that could be counted as encouragement from the sidelines.

Just like this, to her, it could be considered satisfactory……..

This was the reason why Ye Lang had appeared at the magic academy’s competition grounds. As for the alchemy academy?

Was that to accompany Zhen Xiaoyan in the same manner?

Wrong, it wasn’t just to accompany Zhen Xiaoyan, he also had an important objective-

“You… You can go down now, come again next time!” Ye Lang pointed to a student and spoke. That student’ face immediately

changed, the flames of hope burning in his heart were thus extinguished.

This was an act playing out on the alchemy academy's examination grounds. The Ye Lang of now possessed immense powers of life and death. He was the god of hope for all students of the alchemy academy but at the same time, he was also the god of despair.

Correct. Right now, Ye Lang was serving as a judge of the examination. He was also the first student judge in history.

Since it wasn't' possible to persuade Ye Lang to participate in the competition, it was decided to let him choose the students with the most potential instead. Conveniently, this could also be used as an excuse to get him to lead the group.

Perhaps Ye Lang still didn't know, becoming a judge of this competition and at the same time leading one's chosen students to attend the grand competition were privileges that teachers exhausted themselves thinking of ways to obtain.

Regardless of which aspect was considered, the student's achievements by themselves or the ability to promote yourself, either one could allow your career to soar...

No one knew what Ye Lang was thinking, perhaps he had been in a good mood that day, since he had mysteriously agreed. And with regards to alchemy, his knowledge did not disappoint, he completed his job as a judge very beautifully.

Chapter 100 - Escort (2)

At the start, there might have been some people who still refused to give up. After all, Ye Lang was still only a student just like them. But when faced with the facts and the negative effects it brought to them, people had no choice but to admire and respect Ye Lang's judgements without reservation.

However, Ye Lang's judging was unlike everybody else's, which used schedules. He would only attend whenever he felt like it, there were no set times.

If there were any special times, it would be Zhen Xiaoyan's examinations. He attended them all and would escort Zhen Xiaoyan to ensure that she would advance smoothly. Of course there were people who said he was biased, but Zhen Xiaoyan did have some ability. Up until now, she hadn't left any openings for people to exploit.

Today, Zhen Xiaoyan was being tested again. Right now, the tests had already progressed from basic alchemy knowledge, techniques etc. to competitions between two people.

This was the same as the magic examination, use basic knowledge to start off and eliminate some people before moving onto a 1 v 1 elimination format. Of course, under normal circumstances, the academy would seed the brackets fairly and separate the experts to ensure that the experts would not immediately kill each other off.

Of course, those who considered themselves to have the strength to reach the highest leaderboard had opportunities as well, but the prerequisite was to not lose to somebody who would place above them first.

Of course, this was not the big competition, but a method to select the strongest members of the academy!

After many trials, today's trial would be the deciding point of whether Zhen Xiaoyan would be able to enter the team for the big competition. Naturally, her opponent today wouldn't be weak.

But relatively speaking, her opponent was on the weaker side compared to the rest of the remaining students. This was Ye Lang's bias shining through, he had specially picked her opponent since he had the power!

Of course, many people objected, but there was still nothing they could do...

"Hmph, you treat her as a treasure, sooner or later you'll regret it!" Within the alchemy academy, a person ground out those words through clenched teeth.

Perhaps, nobody imagined that with the events to come, this little bias would end up amounting to almost nothing.

"Begin!" Ye Lang shouted, indicating the start of the match between the two.

The two of them picked up the items laid out in front of them and started --

Cough cough This wasn't a battle but only a contest to build an alchemy item!

The alchemy trials were not as intense as the magic trials. They tested technique, imagination, life and death situations would not happen during the trials.

What the two people were competing in right now was a contest to assemble a prototype of an assigned alchemy item out of the alchemy materials in front of them in a designated period of time. All of the assigned items had a lot of thought put into them. They all required broad knowledge, as well as the aforementioned imagination and ingenuity.

For this reason, if you created an interesting avant-garde item that demonstrated great imagination, they might receive special treatment and not be eliminated for losing. However, you still had to make the assigned item.

Ye Lang had entered the competition area at the start. Apparently, he had come to supervise the competition between the two. This was a scene that had often appeared in the previous competitions. However, those had always been other people's competitions, Ye Lang had yet to come down to the competition area for Zhen Xiaoyan.

Consequently, what he was doing now was a bit unusual, it's just that nobody noticed.

"Fatty... Look, look..." Ye Lang kicked Zhen Xiaoyan and curled his mouth as he tried to guide Zhen Xiaoyan.

"....."

F**k, this brat was too obvious with his help, did a referee like this exist?

Even though Ye Lang's movements appeared small, as if he thought nobody would notice, he was in the middle of the field and there were only 3 people. With so many eyes on them, even the smallest movement would be noticed!

What's more, Ye Lang's movements weren't small. Moreover, they didn't contain intentions of being hidden. They clearly showed he was helping Zhen Xiaoyan!

Thus, after Ye Lang's actions, it seemed that everybody had confirmed the rumors. This brat was siding with Zhen Xiaoyan and constantly escorting her through the competitions.

"??" Zhen Xiaoyan seemed to not understand what Ye Lang was saying and became confused for a second. She didn't expect that Ye Lang would do this, moreover, do it so overtly.

"Stupid, hurry up and pick that up..." Ye Lang said.

“Oh…” Zhen Xiaoyan agreed on reflex, it seemed she hadn’t come back to her senses yet and was blindly listening to Ye Lang and doing whatever he told her.

“Ye Lang, he already took it, what do I do?” Zhen Xiaoyan foolishly asked. Her opponent had grabbed that item before she could.

While she was dazed, her opponent wasn’t sitting still. Since Ye Lang was directing Zhen Xiaoyan, couldn’t he also be directed as well? Moreover he was intelligently grabbing the items first, worrying about what to do with them later!

“Forget it, grab those, they’re all the same anyways.” Ye Lang pointed at some items and said.

“Oh… Wait, that’s wrong, Ye Lang, you’re a judge, I’m a participant, you can’t tell me these! This isn’t the time to act normally!” Zhen Xiaoyan finally came to her senses.

“Who said judges couldn’t help, I like to help, who dares stop me!” Ye Lang said as if he didn’t care.

“… “ Zhen Xiaoyan was quiet, this caused her progress to slow as well. Ye Lang ended up slowing her down instead, so much so that her opponent seized the initiative.

In the end, Ye Lang ended up doing more harm than good!

“I’m not talking with you anymore! I’m about to lose, stop worrying about me. I can do it!” Zhen Xiaoyan suddenly realized she couldn’t sit around. She had already fallen behind the other person, therefore she yelled at Ye Lang and hurriedly lowered her head down to search for parts.

“What can you do, hurry up and start doing what I say, otherwise you’ll lose!” Ye Lang directly crouched down and picked up an item and threw it to Zhen Xiaoyan.

“… No, go away!” Zhen Xiaoyan seemed to have a headache as she said, “I will rely on myself!”

“What rely on myself, your whole body from head to toe is the result of my help, it’s not like there’s anything shameful about relying on my help, other people want my help but can’t get it!” Ye Lang directly began pulling on Zhen Xiaoyan’s hair and very rudely lectured her.

“I know, but… I still… It’s all your fault, look at him, he’s almost done! It’s all your fault…” Out of the corner of her eye, Zhen Xiaoyan saw that her opponent had almost finished and started freaking out on Ye Lang.

“…” at this time her opponent was almost finished while Zhen Xiaoyan had not made much progress. It looked like even if Ye Lang were to personally take over, he still wouldn’t be able to win.

To add insult to injury, if Ye Lang was to take over, he would

violate the most basic rule of the competition – Use your own hands. Even Ye Lang would still take note of this point.

At this crucial point, Ye Lang suddenly did something that caused everybody's jaws to drop...

They could only watch as Ye Lang ran to Zhen Xiaoyan's opponent and kicked apart what he was building and then proceed to stomp on it several times before chasing him off...

"That settles it, fatty, you can continue on!" Ye Lang clapped his hands and said.

"....."

The area completely fell silent.

Even though Ye Lang had already shown he was biased, and in a very obvious manner, nobody could've expected that he would go this far and directly destroy the opponent's work!

This had already sunk to the lowest one could go. This completely ignored the rules of the contest and his own identity. He was using his position as a judge for his own benefit to escort Zhen Xiaoyan like royalty!

This would definitely cause a public outcry!!!

“Ye Lang!! What the hell are you doing? I let you favor Zhen Xiaoyan, but you’re going too far this time!” The contestant who had the victory in his grasp became angry!

“Sorry, I was careless and accidentally knocked it over.” Ye Lang very politely apologized.

“……”

You were careless? Is that possible? Did you view the other person as a 3 year old child, or did you assume they were as stupid as you!

“Who do you think you’re fooling!!” That contestant angrily roared.

“Ah, you saw through me, truth is, I did it on purpose!” Ye Lang very obediently said what everybody already knew.

“……”

“If you admit it, then you ought to declare my victory!” That contest said.

“No, I refuse!” Ye Lang very bluntly refused.

“Why?”

“As a judge, I have principles…” Ye Lang very solemnly spoke. Those words earned the disdain of many people, but he didn’t care and continued: “No matter what the cause, you haven’t completed the trial. Therefore, you can’t be considered to have won!”

“Isn’t the cause you!”

“Let me say it again, no matter what the cause!” Ye Lang once again stressed his words and then continued in a deep, yet, a faked voice, to continue speaking:

“Child, remember this lesson, no matter who, even if it’s your close friend, even if it’s a person who appears upright and honest on the surface, they can still trick you and destroy your future. Never trust anyone!”

“……..”

Everybody fell silent, everybody agreed that those words were correct, but they still had a weird feeling. Ye Lang’s actions did have an educational component within them, but it still felt like he was just using this noble sounding excuse to hide his evil intentions.

“Ye Lang, are you saying that you are an upright and honest person on the outside?” Zhen Xiaoyan’s voice traveled over.

“Yep!” Ye Lang nodded.

“That is to say, you’re only a good person on the surface!” Zhen Xiaoyan continued.

“No, I appear to be an upright and honest person on the outside. That refers to me appearing to be honest on the outside, but in truth I’m not that honest and it doesn’t refer to me being an honest person on the surface. In truth I’m still a good person!” Ye Lang started explaining himself. Everybody became confused and were unable to understand what he was saying. [TL note: Yeah, I don’t quite get what he’s saying, I don’t think it’s supposed to make sense tbh.]

What and what?

But regardless of what particular details one understood, eventually everybody understood one thing, Ye Lang called himself a good person!

You count as a good person? You actually did something so shameless!

Who said that good people can’t be shameless? This definitely wasn’t a good character!

“You… You aren’t a good person, you broke the rules of the competition!” That person pointed at Ye Lang, barely able to speak.

Ye Lang waved his hand and said: “When did I break the rules? Is

it written in the rules that judges can't be biased? Does it say that judges can't interfere with the results of the competitions? It doesn't!"

"....."

It definitely didn't say that, because everybody felt that the judges were fair. Even if they were biased, they wouldn't be as excessive as Ye Lang!

Consequently, there were no special rules regarding the judges. These were all treated as unwritten rules!